

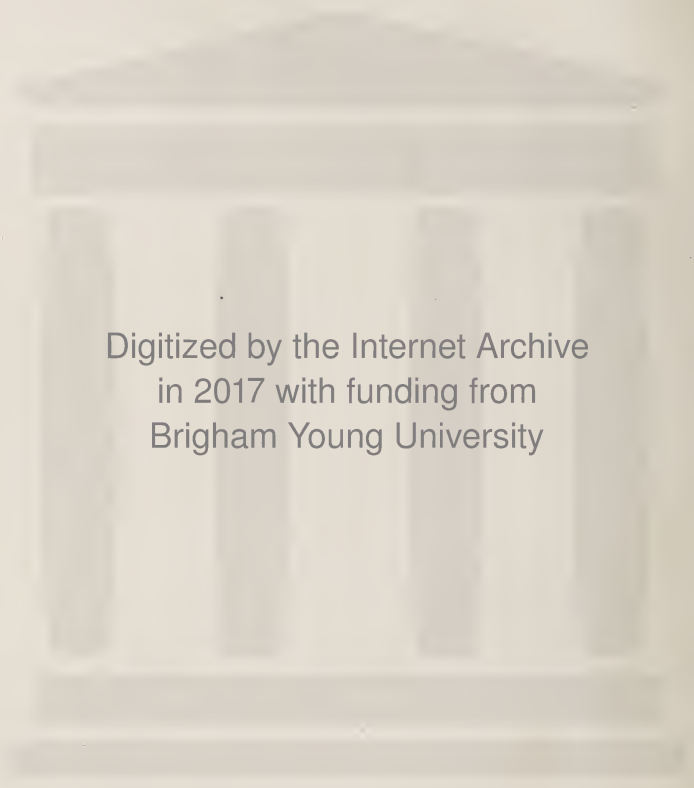
9/18

3 mls

9 de

500

21



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Brigham Young University

NEW-YORK HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

PUBLICATION FUND.

IV.

COMMITTEE ON PUBLICATIONS.

AUGUSTUS SCHELL,
EVERT A. DUYCKINCK,
GEORGE H. MOORE.

97A.538
A48C
V. 4

COLLECTIONS

OF THE

NEW-YORK HISTORICAL SOCIETY

FOR THE YEAR

1871.

PUBLICATION FUND SERIES.

NEW YORK:
PRINTED FOR THE SOCIETY.

MDCCCLXXII.

OFFICERS OF THE SOCIETY, 1872.

PRESIDENT,

AUGUSTUS SCHELL.

FIRST VICE-PRESIDENT,

ERASTUS C. BENEDICT, LL.D.

SECOND VICE-PRESIDENT,

JAMES W. BEEKMAN.

FOREIGN CORRESPONDING SECRETARY,

WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT, LL.D.

DOMESTIC CORRESPONDING SECRETARY,

WILLIAM J. HOPPIN.

RECORDING SECRETARY,

ANDREW WARNER.

TREASURER,

BENJAMIN H. FIELD.

LIBRARIAN,

GEORGE HENRY MOORE, LL.D.

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.

FIRST CLASS—FOR ONE YEAR, ENDING 1873.

SAMUEL OSGOOD, D.D., WILLIAM R. MARTIN,
CHARLES P. KIRKLAND, LL.D.

SECOND CLASS—FOR TWO YEARS, ENDING 1874.

EDWARD F. DE LANCEY, WILLIAM T. BLODGETT,
JOHN ADRIANCE.

THIRD CLASS—FOR THREE YEARS, ENDING 1875.

J. TAYLOR JOHNSTON, ERASTUS C. BENEDICT, LL.D.,
ROBERT LENOX KENNEDY.

FOURTH CLASS—FOR FOUR YEARS, ENDING 1876.

J. ROMEYN BRODHEAD, LL.D., EVERT A. DUYCKINCK,
JAMES WILLIAM BEEKMAN.

CHARLES P. KIRKLAND, LL.D., *Chairman.*
GEORGE H. MOORE, LL.D., *Secretary.*

[The President, Recording Secretary, Treasurer, and Librarian,
are members, *ex officio*, of the Executive Committee.]

COMMITTEE ON THE FINE ARTS.

JONATHAN STURGES, WILLIAM J. HOPPIN,
A. B. DURAND, JOHN A. WEEKS,
ANDREW WARNER, EDWARD SATTERLEE.

JONATHAN STURGES, *Chairman.*
ANDREW WARNER, *Secretary.*

[The President, Librarian, and Chairman of the Executive Com-
mittee, are members, *ex officio*, of the Committee on the Fine Arts.]

INTRODUCTION.

THIS and the following volumes will contain the Papers of CHARLES LEE, Major-General, second in command in the American Army of the Revolution. They furnish materials for an accurate estimate of his character, services and career, and a correct judgment of his merits as a man and a soldier, as well as a considerable contribution to the general history of the period.

The collection embraces General Lee's political and military writings, and his correspondence with many distinguished characters, both in Europe and America; and no pains have been spared to make it as complete as possible.

The Indexes will be given at the end of the collection, which will occupy two or more volumes of the present series; and such illustrative notes and comments as are deemed advisable or necessary may be added as an Appendix in the concluding volume.

The Committee also reserve for that volume the acknowledgments which are due to the contributors, and especially to the possessors of many original documents now first printed and brought within reach of the student of American History.

NEW YORK: January, 1872.

THE LEE PAPERS.

VOL. I.

1754-1776.

THE LEE PAPERS.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Bath, October y^e 8th [1754.]

MY DEAR SISTER,

I fancy you have hear'd before this time that our Regiment is order'd to Virginia. I hope you won't attribute it to any want of affection towards you, if I leave Europe without seeing (you) if it is in my power you may be convinc'd I will. But I am afraid that the hurry and confusion of my affairs will deprive me of that pleasure, tho' I don't know that a Melancholy parting and a long farewell ought to be styl'd a pleasure. I hope to settle all my affairs in a short time, and I shall send a paper inclos'd to you, which I conjure you not to open unless you hear that some accident has happen'd to me. If you should live to see that day, you will perhaps find me not a less affectionate Brother than those who wou'd have made more professions and been more observant of little officious duties. You will doubtless be surpris'd how I came into this part of the world, after I had wrote you word that you might expect me with you a recruiting. Shall I tell you honestly my reason? My Mother seems by her frivolous objections to be so little desirous to see me, and Mr. Mather is so very (I may say immodestly) unreasonable in regard to my Uncle Hanmer's five hundred pounds (you imagin'd good naturdly that He had propos'd an Equal division of the sum, but you little

know how incapable any man whose life or Education has been the least amongst Lawyers is of what is just, honorable, or modest. In short after a long Preamble in what he styles (Mr. Mather's proposals, concerning Sir Thomas Hanmer's Legacy. He modestly claims the whole, and is surpris'd that Mr. Lee shou'd think of defeating the will. I wrote to my Uncle Bunbury lately upon this head and proposed to him, an equal division of it; I dare say he is well inclin'd, but his indolence gets the better of all other considerations. In short these are the lowest terms I will enter into in regard to this disputed Sum, an equal Division. If they refuse agreeing to these Conditions, which are more than compatible with Equity, I cannot think of living on a tolerable footing with 'em. I can now say no more, but beg you will be convinced that I am with the most utmost Sincerity your

most affectionate Brother

CHARLES LEE.

My Compliments to all my acquaintances at Chester, and to my Relations remember me most kindly.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Schenectada, June y^e 18th [1756.]

MY DEAR SISTER,

I suppose that you won't believe me when I tell you that I have wrote several Letters to you from Philadelphia, New York, and this place, as you imagine that this disorder (indolence) has taken too deep root in me, ever to be eradicated, therefore I shall not go about to convince you of anything, but only endeavour to persuade you that (indolent or not indolent) there can be no brother more Sincerely affectionate than myself. The clear frosts of this place have entirely recover'd me; and I believe that I have now a sufficient

quantity of health and strength to answer the fatigues of this Campaign, which I assure you does not require a little; the severest work in Flanders is allow'd by those that have serv'd there to be a party of pleasure compar'd to this. There is one horrid circumstance attending this sort of service which is, that if you, happen to be left disabled in the Field, the highest blessing that you can wish for is, that some friends will immediately Knock you on the head, for it is great odds that you suffer some terrible lingering death from these savages; such I'm afraid was the fate of our poor wounded friends at the Monongahela; but the Indians may indeed be excus'd more than the French, for they are bred up in these bloody notions. Such is the nature of their wars one with the other; but the latter, what treatment can be equal to their monstrous cruelties; for it is certain that these patterns of generosity and humanity (as They are pleas'd to style themselves) commit more murders and butcheries upon men, women and children with their own hands than do their savage Allies. It is an uncomfortable situation enough we are in here; we cannot stir out to take a walk unless we are twenty together in number well arm'd, for the French Indians are continually skulking about us, and carry off every day a great many scalps—the place itself is very pleasant (not from any Society) but from the finess of the Situation and the delightful sky, which must put ev'ry thing animate into spirits, indeed there is a magnificence and greatness through the immense extent (which we have seen of this Continent) not equal'd in any part of Europe; our Rivers and Lakes (even the greatest) are to these little rivulets and brooks; indeed Nature in every Article seems to be in great here what on your side the Waters, she is in small. Some of their Towns are very good; Philadelphia is charming, and really very sociable people; the women there are extremely pretty and most passionately fond of red coats, which is for us a most fortunate piece of absurdity. As for accounts of the Indians I would refer you to

Goldens history of the Five Nations, which I advise you to purchase and read, for you will find it prodigiously entertaining, and literally true by what little I can judge from my own experience. I have liv'd a great deal among the Mohocks, and have pick'd up a little of their language. I can assure you that they are a much better sort of people than commonly represented; They are hospitable, friendly, and civil to an immense degree; in good breeding I think they infinitely surpass the French or any other people that ever I saw, if you will allow good breeding to consist in a constant desire to do ev'rything that will please you, and a strict carefulness to not say or do anything that may offend you. Their parts are most astonishingly quick; in their persons they are generally tall, slender, and delicate shapes; but I assure you that if you were to see the young Warriors dress'd out and arm'd you would never allow that there was such a thing as gentility amongst our finest gentlemen at St. James's! You may perhaps think that I am joking, but I give you my word and honour that I am serious; for whether it is from their dress which has no ligatures, or from their continual exercise in hunting I cannot tell, but they acquire something of an ease and gracefulness in their walk and air which is not to be met with elsewhere, their Dress I like most wonderfully, but don't know how to describe it, they wear a sort of mantle thrown over their left shoulder, their right is bare; this mantle is lac'd and generally red or blue mixed, or black and yellow. They have only one lock of hair upon their heads which they truss up with feathers and paint it, as they do likewise their faces and necks, their Complexion is deep olive, their eyes and teeth very fine, but their skins are most inexpressibly soft and silky. Their men are in general handsomer than their women, but I have seen some of them very pretty. I have the honour to be adopted by the Mohocks into the Tribe of the bear under the name of Ounewaterika, which signifies boiling water, or one whose spirits are never asleep, by which I am entitled to a Seat and the

privilege of Smoking a pipe in their Councils; but I do not flatter myself that I am so much indebted to my own merit for these dignities as to my alliance with one of the most illustrious families of the Six Nations. My Wife is daughter to the famous White Thunder who is Belt of Wampum to the Senakas which is in fact their Lord Treasurer. She is a very great beauty and is more like your friend Mrs. Griffith than anybody I know. I shall say nothing of her accomplishments for you must be certain that a Woman of her fashion cannot be without many. I must mention to you an instance of gratitude which a young Indian shew'd me lately. He is called Joseph and has liv'd with me a great deal. About a month ago, he says to me, Ounewaterika, you are my best Brother and I will make you a handsome present that you may remember me. I cou'd not conceive what he meant; but he immediately set out for Tikenderoga (the French fort) where he lay sculking for two or three days until he had an opportunity of knocking on the head a French Sergeant, and taking off his scalp, with which he hurried away to me and presented it to me elegantly dress'd up with ribbons. You may think that I am endeavouring to make my Letter Romantic but I give you my word and honour that it is every syllable facts. Lord Loudun is not yet landed but every minute expected. I hope that his hands may not be tyed up like Braddock's, for to this he owed all his misfortunes. There will come a day (I hope) when justice will be done to this man's memory, who has left few behind him that are his Equals, in Courage, honesty and Zeal for the Publick, his death was a cruel stroke to us in particular, and a very unhappy stroke for the Nation in general. I have at length purchas'd a Company in this Regiment for nine hundred pounds difference. You surprise me very much concerning Wilbraham, not so much for his Marriage as for his reasons for his gentle treatment of Mr. Eanach who has not the reputation of being a very terrible fighter. If I can find an oppor-

tunity I will send you some curiosities; such as blue and yellow Nightingales, Mockingbirds and spotted squirrels, these are the most beautiful creatures in the world. They are not much larger than a common mouse, their shape and tails the same with the squirrels in England, but their body's are streak'd over with colours as beautiful as those of a peacock. I am angry with my Aunt Townshend for not sending George over, his Youth ought to be an encouragement, and as to his learning I believe there is as much to be acquir'd in the Woods of America as at Chester School. We expect very soon to attack Tikenderoga. Our body will consist of about twelve thousand men besides the Mohocks and River Indians, but I believe we shall meet with very strong Opposition, it being so easy for the French to draw down all the force of Canada to that place, so that in a very little time you must expect to hear of our either striking or receiving a great blow. Capt. Hobson from whom I have purchas'd will pass thro' Chester and visit you. I desire my sincere respects to my Mother, all my Aunts, Mr. Mather, to Miss Dicas, and tell her if I cou'd afford it, I wou'd bring her over a young Warrior for a husband infinitely superior both in beauty and sense to any Irish horse Officer she ever saw—remember me to poor old Margaret,

and believe me, D^r Sister

to be most affectionately

Your CHA: LEE.

/

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Albany Sept^r the 16th 1758.

MY D^r. SISTER.

You shou'd have hear'd from me long before this, but I really had it not in my power, as our illustrious Chief thinks it necessary to conceal from the officers of his Army the time when each packet is to sail dreading

very justly that some truth might be sent over not altogether to his honour, advantage and glory. We therefore are oblig'd to seize the opportunities of private hands when they present themselves. This is the first which I have met with and I shall not neglect it. Capt. Hervey immediately after the affair of Tienderoga wrote to his Brother, with a note enclos'd for my Uncle Bunbury, to inform him of my being wounded, which account he undoubtedly communicated either to you or my Mother. I was very uneasy in not being able to write myself, as I was sensible that people are apt to paint things [which] they receive from a second hand in a worse light than they really are; my wound had at first a very bad appearance; it was a muskett shot which pass'd thro' my body and broke two of my ribs. I lay senseless for some time and with great difficulty was carried out of the field by my servant; we have lost sev'ral officers, amongst 'em a young man whom I fancy you knew at Chester. He was a natural son of Tom Hervey's, his name, Bartman. He had not long had a company in our Regiment. We all regrett him much. He had all the good qualities which cou'd be desir'd either in an officer or a companion. As to a detail of our affairs, or rather the blunders of this damn'd beastly poltroon (who to the scourge and dishonour of the Nation, is unhappily at the head of our Army, as an instrument of divine vengeance to bring about national losses and national dishonour) I refer you to the Narrative here inclos'd, a copy of which I desire you will transmit to Col^l Armiger. I shall not be asham'd should it be communicated to others, as I think silence or even patience is some disgrace to a man who is not an absolute dependent and mercenary, and who has been an eye witness to such superlative blundering, pusillanimity, and infamy. We are at present a good deal elated with the success of Mr. Bradstreet who has taken and destroy'd the Fort of Cadadaugui (it was a very important place to the French, as a magazine for their Indian stores) there were found in it a 100 pieces

of cannon, 10,000 barrels of provisions, and an immense treasure of skins, furs, vermillion, and all sorts of Indian finery. It is situated on the North end of Lake Ontario at the head of the River St. Lawrence, (the loss of this place, with that of Louisbourg may probably be the occasion of a famine in Canada) if our Booby in Chief had only acted with the spirit and prudence of an old Woman, their whole Country must inevitably have this year been reduc'd.

We are now waiting for six Regiments from Louisbourg in order to cross Lake George a second time and make another attempt on Tienderoga, but I'm afraid we shall make a scurvy figure. The Indians will not go with us. They told the General that the English Army had very fine limbs but no head. That he was an old Squah that he shou'd wear a petticoat, go home and make sugar, and not by pretending to a task which he was not equal to, blunder so many braver men than himself into distruction. We who are wounded, are still at Albany, waiting for the convoy of these Regiments in order to march up to the Lake. My wounds are almost heal'd. Dick Mather's head makes a great noise upon this Continent; it is looked upon as the greatest prodigy. A musket ball was absolute'ly flatten'd against his forehead, just in the manner that you may have seen a bullet of clay when it has been thrown against a stone wall. I have advis'd him to bequeath both his head and ball to the Royal Society as a much greater curiosity than they were ever before presented with. This letter will come to your hands, by means of a poor unhappy creature who was once an officer in our Regiment. He was obliged to leave it for being a little backward in action, but this I beg you will keep a secret, his Father and Mother are very respectable people in N. York, who insist on his leaving this Continent. I have been very much obliged to 'em and have a very great esteem for 'em. I must therefore intreat, and desire that if you can by any means assist this lad, you will do it. He intends to settle at Liverpool. He

writes very well and understands accounts. I shou'd think you have interest with some of the Gentlemen there to make him Clerk to some Merch^t or procure him some place in an office. If you can accomplish it, I shall be very much oblig'd to you. Dick Mather has promised to write to Mr. Cumins. I fancy he is a very proper person to apply to. I am sorry I have not the spotted squirrels ready to send you.

My duty to my Mother, Compliments to Mr. Mather and my Aunts. I hope you rec^d a letter which I sent from Fort Edward.

I am My D^r Sister,

Yours with the most sincere

Affection—Adieu !

CHARLES LEE.

“NARRATIVE”—ENCLOSED IN LETTER OF SEPTEMBER 16TH
1758.

On the 5th of July we embark'd on Lake George with an Army of Fifteen thousand men, consisting of 9 thousand Provincials, 5000 Regulars & 1000 Rangers, all in perfect health & spirits. Early the next morning we made the North end of the Lake, when we discovered a Camp and expected to meet with the principal opposition, being a very strong post. But to our great surprise upon our first motions to land, the French deserted their Camp in the most precipitate manner, leaving their tents standing, their letters, Commissions, Swords, &c.; in short everything had the appearance of the utmost panick & confusion amongst 'em; We here took one Prisoner, who informed us that the Enemy had near four thousand Regulars at Tikenderoga, very few Canadians & no Indians. The same morning we moved on in Columns thro' the wood towards the Fort. When we had proceeded half way our light infantry & Marks Men were attack'd by a body of 6 or 700 French Scouts,

who after an engagement of an hour or little more, were entirely routed, very near the whole being drown'd, kill'd or taken; on our side very few men were lost, but amongst these few, the most estimable Lord Howe, whose only fault was that of not knowing his own value; the loss of him was so great, that it wou'd not be rant to exclaim—

Oh, what a fall was there, my Countrymen !
Then you, & I, *and all* of us fell down.

It was entirely owing to his activity and industry that everything was in readiness at so much an earlier season of the year than usual; it was owing to his vigilance and caution that the Indians with all their ingenuity, finesses & perseverance had not been able for the space of several months to steal off a single sentinel, by which means (for the first time) the French were totally debarr'd from intelligence; it was owing to his weight, consequence, and spirit that the General was prevented from following the dictates of his weak and despicable managers so blindly & implicitly as he afterwards did, & it is most certain that had he liv'd the Public wou'd not have suffer'd this loss, nor our arms been disgrac'd in this manner. But shou'd I enter into a detail of his good qualities my digression wou'd be so long, I shou'd entirely lose sight of my intended subject, I shall therefore, wishing all honor to his memory, proceed to my Story. When our wounded were dress'd and the Prisoners sent away we again mov'd on, but having loss'd our Guides, and the night approaching, a mistake happen'd which might turned out very fatal; it was occasion'd by the Indian war cry, which was heard on our flanks, the consequence of it was that some Provincials & Rangers fir'd on each other & at length the fire became almost general. The darkness and thickness of the woods must have made this a very dismal tragedy, had not the officers exerted themselves to the utmost to rectify the error, by which means in a short time the

confusion subsided & very little mischief was done. That night we lay upon our arms in the woods & the next morning return'd to the landing place in order to assemble together our Troops who were a good deal scattered & divided thro' ignorance of the woods.

That same day the 44th Reg^t six Companies of Royal Americans, with 4,000 Provincials and two pieces of Cannon were detach'd to take possession of the Saw Mill which is within a mile of the Fort, a place excessively strong by nature & where there were two Battalions posted; but before we cou'd approach, to our great astonishment the French abandon'd this post as they did the former, suffer'd us peaceably to pass the river and take possession of the Eminence. We now concluded the whole affair decided in our favor, as it was ever our opinion, that to be before the Fort was to conquer, & indeed as far as there can be any certainty in human affairs we might flatter ourselves that our Success was, every thing conspir'd to it; our troops were numerous & in vast spirits, both men and officers; the French by all appearances in the extreamest confusion and panick. They without a single Indian, We with a most formidable body, for at this place we were join'd by four hundred of the choicest Warriors of the six nations (a greater number than ever we cou'd assemble together before) we had likewise one hundred choice Stockbridge Indians. With these our Rangers & L. Infantry we cou'd immediately in great measure have cut off the communication between the Fort Tien-deroga & Crown Point, & rendred Lake Champlain useless to them. What a glorious Situation was this! in short everything had so charming an aspect, that without being much elated I shou'd have look'd upon any man as a desponding dastard who could entertain a doubt of our success; little did we dream that it was still in the power of one blunderer to render all these favorable promising circumstances abortive, but our noble Leader soon convinc'd us that there can be no situation so disadvantageous, no success & victory so

certain, altho' it is absolutely in your hands & only waits until you grasp it, but that a miscarriage may be brought about by the incapacity of a single person. I really did not think that so great a share of stupidity and absurdity could be in the possession of any man. Fortune and the pusillanimity of the French had cram'd victory into his mouth, but he contrived to spit it out again. He sends his favourite Engineer (but I shou'd here inform you that this favourite Engineer was quite a stripling, who had never seen the least service, & of scarcely any rank on the establishment) thro' partiality to whom, he had remov'd all the other Engineers who were his superiors, on the most trifling errands, in order to give him the chief command. This Gentleman with one of his Aid de Camps he sends to reconnoitre; what their Report was I cannot tell, but the Regulars were immediately order'd to march thro' the intervals of the Provincials & with Bayonets fix'd against the Enemy's lines which were thrown up before the Fort, & under their Cannon; the attack was accordingly made, with most perfect regularity coolness & resolution; had the attempt been only hazardous & rash to the last degree, with a bare possibility in our favour, we might have succeeded by the excessive gallantry of the Troops, but on our next approach we found that it was not in the power of Courage or even of Chance to bestow success unless we alter'd our method, the unevenness and ruggedness of the ground (which was almost made impassable by great fallen trees, & the height of the breastworks which was at least eight feet, render'd it an absolute impossibility: this was perceiv'd very soon, & had we profited of our early discovery, & beat the retreat in proper time, there was no loss sustain'd which was by any means irreparable, but so far from any order of this kind being taken, that no General was heard of, no Aid de Camps seen, no instructions receiv'd; but every officer left at the head of his division, Company, or squad, to fall a sacrifice to his own good behaviour and the stupidity of his Com-

mander. The fire was prodigiously hot, the slaughter of officers very great, almost all wounded, the men still furiously rushing forwards without any Leaders. Five hours they persisted in this diabolical attempt, and at length were oblig'd to retire, which they did in pretty good order notwithstanding they were their own Generals. These proceedings must undoubtedly appear most astonishingly absurd to people who were at a distance, but they are still more glaringly so to us who were upon the spot & saw the disposition of the ground. There was one hill in particular which seem'd to offer itself as an ally to us, it immediately commanded the lines from hence two small pieces of cannon well planted must have drove the French in a very short time from their breast work, the consequence of which wou'd have been that the greatest part of 'em must have either surrendered or drown'd themselves in the Lake, for the Fort was not large enough to have contain'd half of 'em; but notwithstanding some of our Cannon was brought up & in readiness, this never was thought of, which (one wou'd imagine must have occur'd to any blockhead who was not absolutely so far sunk in Idiotism as to be oblig'd to wear a bib and bells. So far, his behaviour cou'd only be call'd stupid, ridiculous & absurd; but the subsequent part was dishonorable and infamous, & had some strong symptoms of cowardice. There still remain'd in our Camp thirteen thousand men fit for duty (for the kill'd and wounded at the attack of the lines amounted to not more than two thousand) all the Eminences which commanded the Fort were still in our possession, the communication by Lake George was open behind us, and cou'd not be interrupted. The troops were not in the least dispirited, but rather seem'd desirous and eager to be again employed; no man dream'd of retiring; nothing was easier than to have erected batteries that same night, for the Fort was in reality invested. But what did our General do? Instead of attempting by vigorous efforts to retrieve the loss and disgrace which

he had brought upon us by his blunders, he most shamefully abandon'd these advantageous posts, and retreat'd to his battoes with so much hurry, precipitation and confusion as to give it entirely the air of a flight; He burn'd and destroy'd a great quantity of provision and ammunition, and without waiting for the detached Party's to come in, or making the least regulation for the security of his Troops in their reimbarcation, He threw himself into one of the first boats, row'd off, and was almost the earliest Messenger of the Public loss and his own infamy. In this manner did thirteen thousand men, who were not in the least fright, run away from three thousand, who were in the greatest.

I have now given a faithful narrative of the proceedings and conduct of this glorious Chief, in which I solemnly declare there is not the least exaggeration, nor has any expression drop'd from me thro' personal pique against the man, but from an indignation to see the Public so grossly abus'd, in having a person appointed to the head of its Army who is so utterly destitute of all accomplishments necessary for that high station, that he does not seem to have one ingredient which cou'd render him passable for a subaltern Officer. He is now at the Lake, but what he is employed in, Heaven alone can guess; but this I will venture to pronounce that shou'd it please God all on a sudden to endow him with new faculties, and give him sufficient reason to form any sensible schemes for the service of the Publick, it wou'd be all in vain, as the Troops have too mean an opinion of his qualifications as General (both in point of courage and capacity) to act with any sort of spirit under his auspices. Cap^t. Cunningham one of his Aid de Camps and his favourite Oracle was immediately despatch'd with an Acc^t. of this affair, it must be a curious piece, I'd give the World to see it; but I'm afraid it wou'd require more genius than ever he was master of, to trump up a story which can palliate and soften blunders so glaring and conduct so infamous; and I most sincerely wish that if he endeavours to im-

pose on the Ministry (which we here imagine he will) that they will give him the reception he deserves.

To LORD ———, [IMPERFECT.]

MY D^R. LORD,

As I am so very well acquainted with your punctuality and kindness in answering all letters, I must conclude that one (which I wrote to you from on board ship in the harbour of N. York, sometime before we sailed for Nova Scotia) has miscarried, nor indeed is this a singular complaint, especially in regard to those letters which are sent to the publick packett for it is imagined (and with reason) that there are a certain set of Critick appointed (by our noble Commander) whose busyness it is to open all letters, and not (as was the busyness of Ancient Criticks) to expunge disagreeable passages from writings, but to condemn universally those to the Flames which may contain any, in which class Truth of every kind is most undoubtedly included, but I can assure you that this is the only article of Generalship in which He coppies Alexander, for (if I remember right) that Monarch did once practice something of this nature. However the miscarriage of this letter is no great loss to your Lordship, altho' it is to me, as from such a seeming negligence I must have a little suffered in your good opinion. It contained some account of our situation and expectations at that time, which at present (even to call to mind) wou'd be impertinent—as you must undoubtedly long before this be acquainted with all the consequences of that formidable apparatus intended against Cape Breton, with our boldness in sailing out (convoy'd by three or four small Frigates) almost in the face of Beaufremont's Fleet, with our miraculous escape under the conduct of General Providence, for to his management alone it was owing; your Lordship is likewise certainly acquainted with our glorious return to N. York, after

having perform'd the most surprising feats that ever were heard or read of—as to the loss of Fort William Henry, I believe it would puzzle much wiser persons than myself to give any reasons why it was lost, or even to guess how: concerning this affair I fancy you Gentlemen, on the other side of the Atlantic, must remain some time in the dark, at least it is very probable, as We, who are almost on the spot, have very imperfect Ideas of the causes of this misfortune—thus far I will venture to tell you—General who left to command on this important Frontier was stripped of every Soldier, every Officer, every Ranger, every Gunner, of whom at that time a good opinion was entertained—whether justly or no, I cannot pretend to say, this, He complained of himself, and it was obvious to every person who knew any thing of the Country, and did not look upon it as mutiny or sedition to see with their own eyes, that the Country was left in every respect in so defenceless a State, that some misfortune of this kind must necessarily happen—this was said (long before it did happen) by almost all People, and in all Companies; But the particular defence of the Fort was (if possible) still more extraordinary than the general disposition for the Protection of the Frontier—Coll. Monroe the Commanding Officer was a very worthy old Gentlewoman—but terribly afflicted with a paraletic disorder of which She is since dead—but the Second in command who was chief Manager, is esteem'd one of the most experienc'd Captains of the age, and so undoubtedly he is, otherwise he cou'd never be chosen by so judicious and penetrating a Commander as the E—— of L——d——n for his chief and sole Counsellor he consulted as his Oracle—nay ador'd by him—his God Almighty—but notwithstanding his infallibility there have some circumstances appear'd which are not altogether to his honor and glory—such as his having reported to General Webb, that the French Batteries (which were scarcely begun) were at the distance of 130 yards—but they have since unfortunately turn'd out to be at more than 650 yards—

for L'd Howe has had the malicious curiosity to take a tramp to the place—measure the ground, and most inhumanly to report the truth—which was in effect little less than to give the lie to this illustrious Coll Young—for that is the gentleman's name—He came out of the Dutch Service, where I suppose he learnt that method of capitulating, which he has since put in practice—there are likewise some reports which are not advantageous to him in regard to his integrity concerning a few little private agreements of his own with Montcalm, but I cannot pretend to say whether they are true or not—they are talk'd of publicly by the Army—perhaps it is only the general tenor of his conduct which gives birth to such stories, and renders the blackest circumstances concerning him credible—this is certain, the place was either lost thro' treachery, most wretch'd management, or infamous cowardice—and if the publick rests satisfied without a thorough examination into the causes of it, they must be overcome with so profound a lethargy, that I should think it wou'd be much better to make a present at once of all our possessions in America to the French, than to make any struggles about the matter, without the least chance of keeping what we have, or recovering what we have lost, when such proceedings are passed over in silence; nay, it will certainly be for interest, as every vain struggle we can make, must become additional expense to us, both in blood and money—it seems to us a little curious that the people in England should be so furious and vociferous against their Admirals and Generals for any unsuccess in Europe, and at the same time remain utterly insensible and stupid in regard to our American blunders—As to our not attacking Cape Breton, I don't see how either the Admiral or the General can be blam'd; the French were certainly too strong for us, according to all intelligence

we * * * *

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

D^R SISTER,

You must not take it ill that I only write to you a very few lines, the packet is to sail early tomorrow of which I have this instant receiv'd notice. My wound which I rec^d at the lines of Ticonderoga has at length heal'd up, but I have had since an Escape infinitely more surprising; a little cowardly Surgeon had treated me very ill; compos'd a stupid libel on me, which he read to the General and whole Camp, I thrash'd him as he deserved; the scoundrel had not spirit to resent it properly, but waited for me on a road which he knew I was to pass, seiz'd my horse by the bridle, presented a pistol at my heart, (so close that the muzzle almost touc'd me) and fir'd. My horse fortunately at that instant started to the right, which sav'd me; but the shock was very violent, and the contusion very great, exactly under my heart; He wou'd have dispatch'd me with a second pistol, but Capt. Dunbar (who was with me) struck it out of his hand. He is to be try'd by a Court Martial, and will undoubtedly be broke. We have no news stirring here, but a rumour that General Forbes has taken Fort Duquesne. I wish to God it may be true, for nothing can possibly be more important to our nation than this place. We are much pleas'd with our new General Amhurst, the Indians seem well inclin'd towards us. The Oneydas (who were our most violent Enemys) have declared for us. I hope we shall have no peace 'till N. America is ours. I never received an answer to the letter I wrote from Fort Edward to you, nor to one from Albany. One came to my hands a few days ago dated in January. Adieu, My D^R Sister, expect to receive soon a long letter from me. My duty to my Mother; and love to all friends,

I am most affectionately

Yours

Long Island.

CHARLES LEE.

Dec^r y^e 7th [1758.]

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

MY D^R SISTER,

The present hurry and confusion of our situation will only permit me to send you these few lines, which I hope you will consider as a proof that I am not quite so negligent as you frequently accuse me of. You must be satisfy'd that in few words I tell you we have after a siege of nineteen days reduc'd the most important post of Niagara, a place of great strength and prodigious consequence to our nation. It cuts off all communication between Canada and all other Settlements in America belonging to the French; it entirely commands the numerous back nations of Indians, and consequently engrosses the whole fur trade to us, a more solid and real advantage to the Publick than the whole Commerce with the E. Indies. This happy event was brought about by only two thousand men of which our Regiment compos'd one half. The French Garrison consisted of 600 men, a reinforcement of 1500 were behind us, waiting an opportunity to throw themselves in. This they attempted on the 26th of this month, and were totally defeated under the Cannon of the Fort with the entire loss of officers and men, their Indians excepted, who escap'd as usual by their inimitable swiftness. The Garrison surrendered in consequence of this the same night. On our side in this siege our General Priddeaux, and our second in command kill'd, some few officers wounded, and about two hundred soldiers kill'd and wounded, with some few of our Indians. I myself escap'd unhurt, but two musket balls at the same instant graz'd my hair. Your friend Dunbar, for such I find he is, altho' you never saw him, is safe. He behav'd as usual much to his reputation. This place is quite a paradise situated on the West end of Lake Ontario, and wash'd by Niagara River 18 miles from the great falls, the most stupendous Cataract of the World. I believe I shall settle, marry and trade

here. Our plunder has been considerable, amongst which there are some fine skins, which I intend to send to you by the first opportunity to dispose of as you please. You must present some of 'em to my Mother. You may perhaps think opportunities frequent and expect 'em too soon, but I would have you reflect that we are at least 700 miles from the first seaport. Adieu, my Dr Sister. My duty to my Mother, and respects to M^r Mather, and all my acquaintance, but to my Aunts I beg you will be particular.

I am most Sincerely

Your affectionate Brother

CHA: LEE.

Niagara

July y^e 30th [1759.]

TO SIR WILLIAM BUNBURY.

Niagara, August y^e 9th 1759.

DEAR S^r

I do'nt know whether this Letter may be time enough for the Pacquet, but I am determin'd at least not to lose an opportunity which offers itself from this place, to assure you of my respects, & to acquaint you with our happy reduction of this important Fort of Niagara, which is to the English Nation a most glorious and solidly advantageous acquisition, by its strength most formidable, & by its situation absolute Empress of the Inland parts of North America, commanding the two great Lakes, Erie, Ontario; the River Ohio, all the upper nations of Indians, and consequently engrossing the whole Fur trade, cutting off the communication between Canada & Missasipi, & thus defeating their favourite and long projected scheme of forming a chain round our Colonies, so as in time to have justled us into the Sea. This event was brought about by a mere handful of men, 2000 only from the body of the Army,

with 1000 Indians of the Six Nations, Our Artillery was trifling & bad; our Engineers (as usual) execrably ignorant. The Senekas, the most numerous & powerful tribe of our Indians, wavering and irresolute, ready to desert us on the first prospect of unsuccess. Our first & second in Command Priddeaux and Johnstone (both worthy and brave men) kill'd on the same day in the Trenches, by which means the command devolved on Sir W^m Johnston, a very good and valuable man, but utterly a stranger to military affairs. On the part of the Enemy, they had a Garrison of 620 men in the Fort Commanded by an able and experienced Engineer, were absolute masters of the Lake by means of their arm'd sloops (add to this a reinforcement of French & Utawawa Indians, to the amount of 1500 men—a number equal to our army, now reduc'd by fatigue, death or wounds) behind us, ready to throw themselves in the first opportunity. These circumstances gave but a dull aspect to the face of our affairs; but the courage and perseverance of our Troops surmounted all difficulties. On the 24th the Enemy attempted to force a passage into the Fort, & were opposed by about 900 men only, the rest were employ'd to defend our Camp & the Trenches. Our men received their fire with great intrepidity, and immediately rush'd in with their Bayonets, the victory was quick & decisive in our favour, almost their entire party cut off, except the Indians who escap'd as usual by their inimitable speed of foot. The action happen'd under the Cannon of the Fort, which surrendered the same night. It was with difficulty we restrain'd our Mohocks & Oneidas from sacrificing all their officers, & indeed it would have been but justice for they had a few hours before surpris'd a party of our Light Infantry, cut off their heads & arms, and fix'd them upon Poles. I suppose in terrorem to us. Thus was Niagara reduc'd on the 19th day from our first opening the Trenches. The loss on our side is 190 kill'd & wounded with some few Indians. The situation of this place and the country round it are certainly most magnificent.

It stands on Lake Ontario at the mouth of Niagara River 18 miles from the great falls, the most stupendous Cataract in the known World. Had I a throat of Brass & a thousand tongues I might attempt to describe it, but without them it certainly beggars all description. The country resembles Ickworth Park, if not surpasses it. For an immense space around it, it is fill'd with Deer, Bears, Turkeys, Raccoons, in short all sort of game. The Lake affords Salmon & other excellent fish, But I am afraid you will think I am growing Romantick, therefore shall only say it is such a Paradise & such an acquisition to our Nation, that I wou'd not sacrifice it to redeem the dominions of any one Electoral Prince in Germany from the hands of the Enemy. I hope my aunt & Cousins are well, I long to see 'em but God knows when I shall have that satisfaction. In the meantime I beg you will assure them that I am most sincerely theirs, and believe me Dr Sir to be

your affectionate nephew

C. LEE.

FROM THE EARL OF PEMBROKE.

London, Nov. 26th, 1759.

Your American posts, my Dear Lee, are damn'd hard upon me, and *mal reglees* you and Montgomery are so good, as to write to me often from thence I have been upon honor very exact in my answers, without having been lucky enough that either of you should have heard from me, this time I hope to be more fortunate, having recommended my letter to the best hand. I envy you all the service you have seen, whilst I have been in the most sluggish inactivity—I have indeed got a son, but *cela ne conte gueres*—our good fortune, and that of our friends has been indefatigable this year. To-day I have the news of the Surrender of Munster, and the French in Germany retiring, probably into winter quarters.

Daun is doing the same, and is likely to leave the amazing K. of Prussia once more in possession of Saxony. The Russians we flatter ourselves will move no more. The Brest fleet is out, Hawke after them, and a good account of them hoped for, and expected every moment—Next year, I hope to have something to do in Germany, where they talk of sending us—I believe you already know my trade—Lt. Col. to Gen. Elliott's Light Dragoons. Being as horse mad as ever, and having the rank of Colonel before, by being the King's Aid de Camp, I prefer'd that to a young reg^t. of foot—so many children have of late been made Generals, that we children Colonels are already very high on the list, the Riding &c. of this new Corps has kept me fully employed all summer, and I am now come up to town for winter quarters, which the season makes now much more pleasant than the Country ones. We are all here in grief for the loss of poor Wolfe. No body of that age can be more publicly and privately admir'd and regretted—The war in America we are in hopes will be over very soon; if so, I shall hope to have the pleasure of seeing you very soon—The French's fighting days seem to be over or at least suspended—Every day produces a change amongst them of generals, Admirals, and Ministry, and everything speaks them to be in the greatest poverty and disunion. It don't often happen here, or any where else, I believe, but there is certainly at present amongst all here the greatest spirit and unanimity imaginable, and no appearances of want, much debauch and good living, so pray come amongst us soon, you have the good fortune not only to have seen service enough most of it successful—All your friends are well—Adieu, my Dr Lee, let me hear from you when you can, and be assur'd, that no one can interest themselves more sincerely about you, than

Y^r. most aff^e. friend

& humble Servant

PEMBROKE.

To Capt. CHARLES LEE in the
44th Regt. Albany.

FROM SIR WILLIAM BUNBURY.

London, Nov. 28th, 1759.

DEAR CHARLES,

You have obliged me very much by a second letter, come lately to my Hands, and dated from Niagara: We had before had accounts of the Reduction of it and your being in possession of the glorious Country around, which by your description must be a Paradise indeed, and it is much to be wished it may never again go out of our hands: our acquisitions this year have been so great and important, that it has been thought proper to appoint tomorrow, a public thanksgiving day; & tho' Amherst has not gott so forward as was expected, yet he sends Word He is Master of Lake Champlain; which as we are possessed on the other side of Quebeck must bound the Enemy between the two in such a manner, as we conclude here will distress them extremely, if not oblige them to make submission & surrender—in Europe you will have heard Boscawen fell in with the Toulon Fleet and took four of them; and we are now in hourly expectation of Hawke's overtaking the Brest fleet, which has stolen out of the harbour t'other day in order, as it is supposed to cover a descent either upon Ireland or this Country which they have long threatened us with: but it must be a very desperate game they are playing, since, if our ships have the luck to come up with them, all have little Fear here of their giving them such a blow, as will put an end to the Naval force of France for some time to come—but I will talk no more of Publick affairs; it will probably be of greater satisfaction to you to hear of the welfare of your friends and relations, which I am happily enabled at present to assure you off; for I know not of any exception amongst them all: my son is gone to Turin, and I hope we may presume upon his health, tho we have not lately heard from him He is to stay there five or six months and afterwards to ramble about Italy

another twelve months—Your sister Sydy complains you do not write so often as she wishes; I gave her the satisfaction of knowing you had favored me lately with a letter, and that you were well and happy as I am willing to suppose by the strain of your style, which is very lively and interesting the books and chocolate you desired have been sent to M^r Callroff near a month agoe, who has taken the charge of them, and I hope they will get safe to your hands: but sure you are not to stay on that Continent for ever: We wish you to come again amongst your friends, and surely some change might be procured as well as advance on this side of the water, if you desired it: Lord Granby commands in Germany at present, and is likely to be at the head of the Army on this side of the water too, if Ligonier drops; and it is supposed he cannot last a great while longer: the taking of Munster which we had advice of t'other day will be of great Importance to our allied army and secure them good winter quarters.

A great many matches are talked of here in Town, so that if you do not come soon, all our fine young ladies will be disposed of: the Duke of Beaufort's Sister, Lady Anne Somerset, to Lord Northampton, Lady Julian Colyear to Mr. Dawkins; Lady Mary Douglas to Lord Roubary, as it is said, & God knows how many more which would tire me to write & you to read, but I know of none of your particular acquaintance, that have or are about changing their state. Pray, go on writing to us, for I know no body better qualified to entertain by their letters. I wish I had as good a knack on my side for the sake of your amusement: your aunt & Cousins beg to live constantly in yr. memory and good wishes; they desire I will assure you you have theirs most heartily; and I hope I need not add that you will invariably have those of your affectionate and obliged uncle.

W^m BUNBURY.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Philadelphia, March y^e 1st [1760.]MY D^r Sister,

As an excellent opportunity offers itself at present to write to you, I shall not neglect it, which in reallity I have seldom been guilty of, notwithstanding your heavy accusations; since the siege of Niagara (from which place I wrote to you, Sir Will^m & Ld. Pembroke) I have received only one letter from you, which came to my hands a few days ago, dated Nov. y^e 3rd, nor indeed was it possible that I should have receiv'd any, from the whimsical situation I have been in, or more properly from my having been in no situation at all; on the 19th of Sept^r I was order'd out on a scout with one other officer and fourteen men to discover (if possible) what was become of the remains of the French Army which escap'd from the Battle; we had the satisfaction of being the first English who ever cross'd the vast Lake of Erie; we pass'd through the French Forts of Presq' Isle and Vinango descended down the Rivers of Buffalo and Ohio and in 14 days arrived safe (tho' naked & almost starv'd) at Fort Duquesne; if you have an inclination to be acquainted with all these places you must consult the maps, as an history of 'em from me wou'd not only be very imperfect but extreamly tedious At this place, I saw your Friend Mallier, who was in good health, but a little in liquor, as indeed were most of the officers I saw there, from Fort Duquesne, I took a little jaunt of 700 miles to Gen. Amherst at Crown Point, from thence another of five hundred and fifty to Oswego, and from Oswego another trifling of 600 to this place where I am now recruiting. These pretty trips altogether have employ'd me three months, so that it was almost impossible any of your letters shou'd have reach'd me unless you were to do, as Swift says They us'd to contrive with L^a Peterborough direct at him, not to him, and so some-

times catch him flying. It is now the beginning of March, but we are entirely strangers to the plan of operations for the insuing campaign so extremely close and reserv'd is our General. He is indeed in every respect the reverse of his two predecessors, and consequently a man of great abilities & worth: altho' I ought to do that noble pair of chiefs the justice to declare, I do'nt believe the most sagacious person cou'd ever penetrate into any of their schemes. Now that I am speaking of Generals, what an irreparable loss was that glorious Hero, Wolf! & such frankness, such unbounded generosity to particulars, such zeal for the publick, with such amazing talents for war, that not to be in raptures with this divine character, is I think an impiety to our country which gave him birth. Our uncle Bunbury's Friend G. Townshend seems to have been sparing of his eulogiums upon the fallen Conqueror on whom (as the whole glory of this mighty acquisition was confer'd by the unanimous voice of the Army) He seems to have look'd with an invidious eye; such is the fate of superior, unrivall'd merit in our Cotemporaries. I have this instant received a large packet of letters across the country from Niagara, in which there are two inclos'd from you dated April y^e 29th and June the 3rd. They have made me extreamly happy, not only in giving me fresh proofs of your affectionate punctuality, but in convincing me that I am not yet worn out from the memory of several persons whose friendship and good opinion I esteem an honour and felicity. I must therefore insist that you return immediately my warmest thanks to M^{rs} Gordon, her daughter, and particularly my Aunts, for their kind sentiments towards one who in this long banishment looks upon nothing dreadful but the being absented from them & some other such generous friends. I am a little incens'd at my Uncle Bunbury for not informing you of my letter from Niagara, tho I do assure you I wrote another at the same time to you, and am much surpris'd how it cou'd miscarry. You seem anxious to know how the

little surgeon escap'd without being try'd. I must tell you, it was the fault of myself and the other two gentlemen, Dunbar and Baillie, for the little Villain, after having some time stiffly denied every circumstance thought proper to retract on the approach of the C. Martial, throwing himself on the mercy of the General, beg'd him to intercede so far with us as to permit him after a publick acknowledgment of his crime to sell out, and not deprive him of the only means he had of supporting himself in the world; we foolishly consent'd, of which we often heartily repented, not upon his account so much as that it prevented us bringing to light the villainy of another man no less a person than the Major of our own Regiment, one Beckwith, a Yorkshire man; the detestable tyranny of this petty Caligula, Myself and some other Captains had oppos'd as much as lay in our power, for which he bore us the most inveterate hatred, but to me in particular. He try'd every method underhand to hurt (like all offended Cowards) which I return'd by open affronts, these he so ill-digested that in the course of this affair We had discover'd that it was with his pistols the Surgeon made this attempt: that he was privy in some measure to the design; some even suspect he urg'd him to it, for Capt. Dunbar declares that when he return'd the pistols to this worthy Major and acquainted him with the attempt and miscarriage, he exclaim'd, Is he not dead? with the seeming disappointment of Othello when he cries out, Not Cassio dead? then murder's out of time. These were the means by which he avoid'd a Court Martial, and not by any factious and national cabal; and I do assure you, this whole Corps of Officers are most unexceptionable young men; you will perhaps be astonish'd how such a scoundrel as this Maj^r shou'd be suffer'd to remain in the Army; many whimsical circumstances too tedious to enumerate have concur'd to it; but as soon as this Campaign is finish'd (and this from the situation of the French must undoubtedly be the last) I shall take care to rout him or myself out of

the Reg^t for in a Reg^t with such an abandon'd miscreant I will not serve, but to leave this odious topic, the person who will deliver this letter to you is one Capt. Grant. He was in our Halifax Expedition master of one of our Regimental Transports. He is an honest, blunt, well meaning Tar, and tolerably well dress'd, for he has a black velvet waistcoat lac'd with silver; any civilities you can shew him will much oblige me. His ship is to sail immediately for Liverpool which wou'd have been a glorious opportunity of sending some Indian curiosities I had collected for you & some others. Those for you consist only of a pair of fine shoes and a child's cradle, in case of marriage. It is a most ingenious contrivance, for the child is swaddled in such a manner as to keep his limbs always strait which is the cause perhaps of that inimitable elegance of shape in Indians not to be met with in Europeans. I have likewise a few furs for you, but these things are at Niagara, with which place there can be no communication before May; the spotted Squirrells I mentioned to you are not to be had at this time of year, as the ground is too hard with frost to come at their nests; but you may depend upon having 'em the first opportunity; I wou'd send you some mocking birds which imitate the sounds not only of all other birds, but likewise of many beasts; but these they say will not live in the Climate of England. What you tell me of Capt. Townshend does not much surprise me, for I knew he had always too great a propensity to be important and exceedingly wise, unless some Friend would have kindness enough to be constantly laughing at him, which Miss Price us'd to accuse me of as a piece of cruelty; but I wish to God that Boy George had been sent over when I wrote for him, he had been now one of our oldest Lieutenants. I wish in your next letter you wou'd send me a minute description of that light Infantry Regiment. I must now finish as Capt. Grant hails me and tells me he must weigh. My compliments or rather love to L^d Malpa's his wife and her mother—Miss Price, I really

have a perfect esteem for, as likewise for Miss Hambletons.

Adieu, my D^r Sister
I am most sincerely
Yours—CHAS. LEE.

My mother you must assure of my Most dutifull respects and M^r Mather—send me Thucidides.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

MY DEAR SISTER,

I receiv'd yours of y^e 20th of January which has a good deal confounded me; it is impossible for me to come over before the Campaign is over, when it shall be finish'd I will fly to you; in the meantime jointly with M^r Mana endeavour to prevent any prejudice Wilson may do me.

Adieu, my D^r Sister
Yours most affectionately
CHARLES LEE.

New York, May y^e 16th [1760.]

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

MY D^r SISTER,

I rec'd your letter and shall accept of my uncle's invitation the moment I have settled my busyness, when I say busyness, I don't mean anything relating to Wilson (your apprehensions on that head seems to have been entirely groundless) but an introduction to Mr. Pitt, which some of my friends here have promis'd to procure me; I am inclin'd to flatter myself that it may be of service to me as I can inform him of many circumstances in regard to some parts of N. America

which he may perhaps be glad to hear and which he can alone have from me. When I have done this, I shall fly to you—My love to all where you are, and believe me to be

Yours most Sincerely

C. LEE.

London, Fryday [1760–61.]

To Miss Lee, at S^r W^m Bunbury's
at Barton, Suffolk.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

D^R SISTER,

I re'd your letter, and wou'd by no means advise you to come to town before the 23rd and God knows whether I shall then be able to set out. I have had an unlucky illness which has confin'd me at home for some time and consequently prevented me from doing my necessary busyness; I have such a propensity to quackery, that I shall some time or other make my exit in this wise manner, I had a very hard struggle for my life this time, which has given me enough of experiments for one while; Harry's colours will be down in a few days. Adieu, and believe me to be

Most affectionately

Yours—C. LEE.

Feb. y^e 10th [1761.]

If you can, stay at Barton, 'till I write.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

D^R SISTER,

I rec'd your letter, but am so far from pretending to dictate to you what you shou'd or shou'd not do, that I wou'd scarcely venture to give you my opinion; I

can inform you of my situation, and from thence you may settle your plan, a fresh cold which I caught had put it out of my power to stir about any busyness, before yesterday; when I presented a petition to the King; L^d Bute has promis'd to speak in my favor and give an answer very soon; before I receive this answer, it will be impossible for me to say when I can go to Chester; I shou'd therefore think, if it will not be absolutely inconvenient, that you had better remain at Barton, untill I can give you a positive answer, unless you have an inclination to stay sometime in London, and enjoy its pleasures; if this is the case, Chester need not be thought of; I have so pressing an invitation from L^d Thanet with so warm professions of Friendship that I wou'd willingly pay him a visit if my affairs will permit. Harry's colours will be down with Davers. Adieu, my D^r Sister, and believe me to be with the greatest affection yours

CHARLES LEE.

London, Feb y^e 19th [1761]

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

D^r SISTER,

I don't doubt but I appear'd very obstinate in resisting all your solicitations in regard to Bob: my reasons will perhaps appear not less whimsical: but they were founded upon a rule which I had laid down to myself, and which I am determin'd never to violate, viz: to adhere to my oath, tho' ever so rash or absurd. I will not answer for the propriety of such a Resolution but I have bigotry enough, religiously to observe it. If you remember Miss Dicas, one evening at Mrs. Williams's in her teasing manner, wou'd not let me rest, but insisted upon my not taking Bob from Chester. I

was provok'd by her impertinent importunity to swear solemnly that I wou'd. I accordingly determin'd to carry him with me, and have satisfy'd my conscience. But now like an orthodox Catholic as it were, perhaps quibbling with myself, am determin'd to satisfy you by consigning Mr. Robert into your hands, and accordingly shall send him by the first opportunity; as I wou'd anything else, My D^r Sister which may contribute to your pleasure, I only desire in return that you wou'd excuse (as Cassius says) this rash humour which my mother gave me. Now to myself. L^d Thanet who is firmness itself, prescribed to Mr. Townshend a certain day on which he must expect a positive answer in regard to my preferment; otherwise he was resolv'd to apply personally to the King. This was so urgent that he cou'd not resist. He did speak to the King, who has promis'd to promote me the first vacancy. Is not this friendship? By my soul I think so; and in the reflection of the Friendship of such men consists the greatest happiness of my life. L^d Pembroke too, he reconciles me to Mankind in some measure. I yesterday saw a letter from him to L^d Ligonier wherein he says, I cou'd wish to be well with you, but your usage of Lee, in whose interest you know I am so deeply concern'd shocks me: you can have no real objection to him, unless he is too honest. This, from such a man, might I think puff up a man the most remote from vanity, which, I confess, is not my case. I think of going into Suffolk tomorrow, for I have no busyness here. I wish I had not been so hasty in quitting Chester there was no necessity—Adieu,

D^r Sister, yours

C. LEE

London, July y^e 4th [1761.]

[To SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON.]

London July 25th 1764.

DEAR SIR

The liberty which I take in so abruptly writing to you will probably surprise you particularly upon a subject of so extraordinary a nature—but the confidence I have in your good nature & universal desire to oblige encourages me to the undertaking. You must know Sir that Lady Susan Strangway a daughter of Lord Ilchester has to the great mortification of her family & friends taken it into her head to marry a Mr. O'Brien a Player. Her father & uncle (Lord Holland) are desirous of providing for them, but not at home. They turned their eyes to America where they have thoughts of procuring or purchasing for the husband some employment of sufficient salary for their immediate support, & obtaining a grant of lands as an establishment for their family. As I had been some time in America they consulted me on this subject. I replied that New York was undoubtedly the most eligible province for residence—but upon inquiry we find very little or no land in this province remains ungranted unless what is the immediate property of the Indians. We therefore applied to our friend George Croghan who is of opinion that the Mohawks would easily be prevailed upon to part with a small tract of theirs & points out that part lying betwixt Canada & Canajoharie Creeks as the most desirable purchase. If Sir you think that this can be effected consistently with the interests of the country in a manner satisfactory to the Indians & upon easy terms to us you will lay us under an eternal obligation in bringing it about. I say us because Patterson of Gage's Light Infantry (whom you must have known) & myself are to be joined in the patent. An order is already dispatched to the Governor of New York to survey & grant sixty thousand acres in any part of the province which is not yet

granted or claimed by the Indians, or to purchase this quantity from the Indians in the King's name according to the regulations made by the Lords of trade. If through your means they consent to the sale these sixty thousand acres are intended for Lady Susan her husband & a Mr. Upton (an intimate friend of mine) & both Dr. Hillsborough & Lord Holland have solemnly engaged that forty thousand more shall be added, for Patterson & myself the instant the Council assembles. As the case stands thus we think it will be the most sensible method to agree with the Indians for the whole hundred thousand together rather than sixty thousand & forty at another—that if the purchase of sixty is practicable that of a hundred is equally so. You, Sir are the best judge of the practicability of the one & the other—perhaps they are neither. To you we refer it & entreat your interest to affect it if you think it unexceptionable. I flatter myself you will at all events give us your opinion by the first opportunity, directed to me at Clotworthy Upton's Esq. in Lower Grosvenor st. London. Croghan who I understand sets out for America in a few weeks can more fully explain our intentions than anything I can write—In the interim we would request that if any other persons have intentions of making purchases of this nature from the Indians you would if possible contrive that a tract of this quantity may be reserved for us on or near the river. I shall at present make no apologies for this extraordinary liberty as I have thoughts of writing to you by Croghan, who has I fancy given you the outlines of our people at the head of affairs. He has undoubtedly hinted to you their vigor, decision & amazing depth in American affairs. By all that is sacred their absurdity is intolerable. Unless they are roused by your remonstrances our acquisitions in that hemisphere will be fruitless. Sir Jeffrey Amherst does I am persuaded contribute all in his power to continue them in their errors by his most wicked misrepresentations. I have used my utmost efforts to weaken their force but I am

afraid with little success. In my next I shall speak more at large—in the mean time believe dear Sir that I am with the unmost sincerity

Your humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

TO SIR CHARLES BUNBURY.

Dec^r 7 1764

[*Extract:*]

Some business has unfortunately fallen out which prevents my having the happiness of visiting you as I purposed before I left England. I intended to have been down with you to-morrow, but my business cannot be finished before Monday, and it is absolutely necessary that I should be ready for the packet at Harwich on Wednesday morning. You must therefore, in the vulgar language, take the will for the deed. My present scheme is this, to go into the Polish service, to which I am so strongly recommended that I can scarcely fail. What can I do better? I see no chance of being provided for at home; my income is miserably scanty; my inclinations greater than those who are ignorant of my circumstances suppose. It is wretchedness itself not to be able to herd with the class of men we have been accustomed to from our infancy; it is dishonest to strain above our faculties, and it is mortifying to avail ourselves of shifts which I have found necessary. My resolutions are therefore to live in any part of the world where I can find respectable employment, at least 'till my mother's death.

To Miss SIDNEY LEE.

Warsaw, April y^e 3^d [1765.]MY D^R SISTER,

My reasons for being long silent will I hope for once in my life appear good ones; I really thought that any letter which cou'd not ascertain you of my success or miscarriage wou'd have been little satisfactory to you, and as my stay at any particular place was short I cou'd entertain you little with my account of 'em. I shall now give you a slight sketch of each. My reception at Brunswick, was if possible better than I cou'd have expect'd even from Count La Lippe's recommendation. The Hereditary Prince did not treat me like a stranger well recommended but like an old deserving Client and Friend. He gave me the strongest letters for the Court of Berlin & Warsaw (but in parenthesis I ought to tell you that I adore the Lady Augusta, Her person, Her manner, but above all her excellent temper—in two days we were so good friends that I talked politicks as freely to her as I shou'd to you) but to return to the Prince (who I believe adores his wife too) his letters procur'd me a reception at Berlin both from the King and Princes which strangers of the highest rank do not meet with at that Court; each time I was at Court the King talk'd to me more than half an hour, and what was fortunate upon the topick I am best acquainted with American affairs. He is a very different man from what I expect'd, both in Person & address. In person I think he resembles Lord Middlesex; in his address he is totally unceremonious and familiar; his words are the commonest and not the least 'recherchés' as I was taught to expect; in short his manner is such as to banish that constraint and awe which his high character naturally raises. The Hereditary Prince of Prussia, his Nephew, is really an uncommon fine figure, and unaffectedly civil in his behaviour. He is likewise extreamly curious on the subject of America

—in July, he is to be married to the sister of my God, the Hereditary Prince, and sister likewise of her who was intended for our king. She is extremely handsome, but inferior still as I am told to our intended Queen. What a snare has our gracious bless'd Monarch escaped—had he fallen into it the consequences might have been horrible—a handsome, witty, and in every respect accomplish'd wife, might possibly have gain'd so pernicious an ascendancy over him as to have depriv'd us of the salutary and pious counsels of the Earls of Bute and Sandwich—I have been six weeks at Warsaw, and was persuaded that my expedition wou'd turn out fruitless, when the King (contrary I believe to the inclination of many whom the Constitution of this Country renders it necessary to manage) declared me his Aid de Camp with what appointment I am ignorant as yet; small ones will suffice as I have no great necessary expenses; having an appartment at Prince Czartorinsky, & the Kings table, you may believe that the life of a Courtier is not the best adapted to my disposition; indeed I shou'd not have accepted it, did I not like the King's character, as a Man. He is indeed as far as I can be allow'd to judge upon so short an acquaintance fraught with good qualities—not the least elevated with his good fortune, and the bearing well a sudden vast accession of power, wealth, and grandeur, is perhaps the strongest test of a good heart. He knows the English language perfectly, altho' for want of practice, he does not speak it fluently—He is intimately conversant with all our best writers, and swears by Shakspeare, upon which subject you will readily imagine I shall not quarrel with him Prince Czartorinsky with whom I live, speaks and writes English fluently and critically. He has almost every book in our language at his fingers ends. Shou'd Europe be again involved in war, my present situation may be of great use to me; 'till then it is better than Idleing at Home. Next summer I hope to have the pleasure of being with you in England, as I shall easily procure

leave. . I have not heard from Manwairing a syllable in regard to what we flatter'd ourselves of the money due to my Father. Send your letter to Upton in Grosvenor street, and likewise the sword which was esteem'd to be Cromwell's from Chester must be directed to him ; it is for the King of Poland, who altho' a king is a great admirer of that extraordinary Man. This I beg you will do with haste—I desire you will tell M^r Manwairing to pay Three pounds ten to the stocking man at the Corner of Bond street, likewise for a pair of boots to Mr. Rhimer at Charing Cross—I beg y^r pardon my d^r sister for giving you such dirty commissions, but I know you think nothing a trouble—I have now only to beg my love to my mother, Aunts, and the Bunbury's, and to assure you I am and ever shall be

Yours most affectionately

CHARLES LEE.

Miss Lee, at Gen : Armiger's
in Upper Brook street Grosvenor Square London.

TO THE EARL OF CHARLEMONT.

Warsaw, June 1st, 1765.

MY DEAR LORD,

A Letter which I some time ago wrote to Lord Thanet, I hope you considered as in part intended for you, otherwise I must appear a prodigy of ingratitude ; I desired him to communicate it to you, and as it contained the whole history of my peregrination and success, I thought it would be rather troublesome, than an instance of my duty and affection, to scrawl out another to you at the same time ; I therefore waited, in hopes that something might turn up here, which might probably amuse you, but as I might wait untill doomsday, and this never happen, (for Warsaw, if the wine and climate were better, is absolutely the court of Alcinous, nothing to do with the affairs of this bustling world,

nor do I think whatever passes, good or bad, gives her the least concern) I say, my Lord, therefore, as I despair of anything stirring worth your hearing, I can no longer delay paying my tribute, so long due, of duty and affection; but I should begin with asking a thousand pardons, for having so long kept in my hands the inclosed, from Prince Czartoryski to your Lordship; but, as I knew it included no business, I put it off from day to day for the aforesaid reasons. The longer I am acquainted with this man, the more I like him, the more I admire his talents; a retentive memory, solid judgment, and quickness, are seldom united in the same person, yet they are so superlatively in him. To be master of several languages, and possess likewise an extensive knowledge of things, is miraculous, yet he is possessed of one and the other. It is a pity that he has not a better theatre to act on; but really this country is a wretched one; nor do I think there is the least chance of bettering her situation, for, any attempt, either on the part of the King, of the leading men, or the common gentry, to mend the Constitution, are protested against by her kind neighbors, through a tenderness for her interests;—though, it must be confessed that, were her neighbours not to interfere, there would be no great probability of a reform, for the general run of their gentry, who have such an insurmountable negative power (as a single veto dissolves the diet) are, if possible, more ignorant, obstinate, and bigotted, than the *Hidalgos* of Portugal; and those few who are better informed than the herd, whether it is from despair, or their natural disposition, pass their hours in such consummate idleness and dissipation, that our *Macaroni* club, or *Betty's* loungers, are, comparatively speaking, men of business and application.—Were I to call the common people brutes, I should injure the quadruped creation, they are such mere moving clods of stinking earth. This certainly must be the effect of slavery; there cannot be so monstrous a physical difference betwixt man and man. I would to God that our Tory

writers, with David Hume at their head, and the favorers of our damnable administration, were to join this noble community, that they might reap the fruits which their blessed labors entitle them to, and that the effects might not fall on harmless posterity. I have, if possible, since my passage through Germany, and my residence here, a greater horror of slavery than ever. For God's sake, you patriot few at home, *principiis obstate*; for absolute power is a serpent of that wriggling, penetrating kind, that, if it can but introduce its head, it is in vain to pull at the tail. It is curious to hear me converse on these subjects with the King; to hear me advance my doctrines, not the most favourable to monarchy, to defend even the beheading the martyr Charles; but it still more curious to hear his opinions, which are singular for a crowned head; in short, he is as warm an advocate for the natural rights of mankind, as was Algernon Sydney himself. It is not to give you a specimen of my proficiency in the trade of a courtier, when I assure you, that this King is really an accomplished person, he is competently conversant with books, his notions are just, his intentions honest, and his temper not to be ruffled. What he is most faulty in is, that he passes too much time with the women; but that is the vice of the place. Italy is nothing to this country in *cicisbeism*; the men and women are ever together, taking snuff, yawning, groaning with ennui, without a syllable to utter, but cannot separate. You may be assured, therefore, my dear Lord, that I, who think that dangling should be punished with the pillory, pass, if possible, for a more odd fellow than I have done in other countries; but I am not satisfied with appearing absurd myself, I have broke into their parties by prevailing upon Wroughton, our resident here, who was as determined a yawner as the rest, sometimes to mount a horse, and look into a book. In a few weeks I set out for Breslau, to be present at an *anti-yawning* party, a review of the King of Prussia's, where I may possibly collect materials for a letter to you, somewhat less dull

than the present. In the meantime, my dear Lord, if you have a spare half-hour, dispose of it charitably in preparing me the smallest dish of politics ; but chiefly inform me of your health and welfare, which cannot be more devoutly wished for by any man, than by your most obliged, and

Humble servant,

CHARLES LEE.

P.S. Prince Czartoryski is much, and I believe warmly yours ; it is to his house you must have the kindness to direct me, that is, "*Chez Le Prince General de Podolia, Varsovie.*"

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Constantinople, March y^e 1st 1766.

MY DEAR SISTER,

The uncertainty of my destiny for many months before I left Warsaw was the occasion of my long silence ; one while the King had thought of sending me on some busyness to England ; another to Berlin on some busyness ; at length he propos'd a jaunt to Constantinople with his Ambassador, which I embrac'd with great eagerness, as to see these countries, the Theatre of so great actions, which we are so well acquainted with from School had been long the object of my wishes and curiosity—the day this proposal was made to me, I set out and join'd the Ambassador upon the Frontiers, but I found his motions so slow, that my patience was worn out, and I avail'd myself of an Escort upon the Grand Signor's treasure, which is annually sent from Moldavia to precede him, which I often repented, for from the indolence awkwardness, and brutality of the Guard, I suffer'd many inconveniences—the cold in the mountains of Bulgaria was excessive ; we pass'd some nights in 'em without fire or provision for ourselves or horses from the stupid improvidence of

our conductors, several men and Horses dyed of cold, and had not my frame been something harden'd by my American Expedition, I shou'd perhaps have accompany'd 'em—However I have not come off free, for a Rheumatism has confin'd me to my room for some days—whence I have seen so little of this place that you will not be troubled with a description of it. My next letter will be something in detail, perhaps impertinently so, as so many voyage-writers have exhausted the subject. On my journey I cou'd not help reflecting upon the vast obligations our Country has to Mr. David Hume and other Monarchical Writers who wou'd entail upon us their favourite absolute Government; at least we must imagine these to be their intentions when they wou'd weaken our jealousy which is the preservative of liberty, and lessen the horrors of despotism. Here they wou'd see their beloved scheme come to perfection; the finest provinces of Europe upon which Nature has pour'd a profusion of her gifts, one continued desert; the few Inhabitants who survive the oppression of Their Tyrants presenting famine and apprehensions of still greater misery on their countenances, to each trifling village burying places of so prodigious extent, as to denote the once existence of a considerable Town, in short every species of wretchedness I most sincerely wish that Mr. Hume and his fellow Laborers were to join this happy community that they might enjoy the just fruits of their labors and not entail 'em on innocent posterity.

May God prosper the Americans in their resolutions, that there may be one Asylum at least on the earth for men, who prefer their natural rights to the fantastical prerogative of a foolish perverted head because it wears a Crown—My Dr Sister I cannot write to you more at present for the paquet is making up. I unfortunately did not know yesterday that a Courier was to depart, otherwise my Letter should have been longer—an English ship will soon sail when you shall receive one of greater bulk—Direct to me, as usual, to Tho^s

Wroughton, Esq. Resident de sa Majeste Britanique a Varsovie—My love to my mother and aunts, and believe me, My D^r Sister, to be

Yours most affectionately.

CHARLES LEE.

My servant is still with me—well. He is a very clever lad, but excessive troublesome, from excess of spirits which run out into all sorts of mischief.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Constantinople May y^e 28th 1766.

MY D^r SISTER,

I have this instant rec'd yours with the melancholy account of my Mothers death; had it happen'd some years before, I shou'd not have been so shocked as I really find myself; for I confess in the latter part of her life that my affection for her was much stronger than in the former: I cannot say that I take kindly your upbraidings. In what instance have I given you reason to think my love and esteem for you abated? Is it because I have not been exact in answering your letters? If I had ever been exact in any article of my life, if I had ever been attentive to busyness of the nearest concern to myself, if in short my own interest cou'd ever prevail over the negligence and carelessness with which Nature has cursed me, you might have had some colour for your accusations; and I am sorry to find that a deviation from the dull ceremonial of Letter writing shou'd make an impression in your mind so much to the disadvantage of one, who has ever and ever will sincerely love you. You ask as a mighty favor the use of my trifling plate: is this kind? You know that you are Mistress of it, and everything els which is in my power to contribute to your conveniency: the books pictures (and I wish there were more

essential articles) are undoubtedly yours, and nothing but absolute necessity, of which (from my circumstances at present and experience I can see little danger) shall ever oblige me to redemand 'em. I wish indeed my circumstances were such as to enable me to render yours more easy; if our affairs in America go on as well, as Upton writes me they promise, this may soon be possible. I think you push your œconomy too far, there is no great expence in conveying yourself by the Machines to Barton. You may expect to see me in England this winter. I intend to set out for Warsaw in three weeks, where I shall entreat the King (for I think being attach'd to a Prince of his excellent character the highest ornament) to continue me in the capacity of Aid de Camp, which will not interfere with any provision made for me at home; and L^d. Thanet flatters me that this may soon take place. Assure my Aunt Williams of my warmest affection love and respect; my aunt Molly likewise that I am sincerely hers — We must love and cherish, My D^r. Sister, these two remains of our family, of which Death within so short a period has made so dreadfull a havock. I beg you will assure Mr. Mather in the strongest terms of my esteem and gratitude for his tender treatment of our mother. I shall write to him by the first opportunity. I am much concern'd at your account of Miss Dica, as I have really a friendship for her—My love to her and M^{rs}. Hink's. I need use no words to convince my Cousin Townshend of my affection: that lad George is I am afraid going fast down the hill; five nights ago happen'd here a most dreadfull Earthquake, it has thrown down the greatest part of the stone buildings, demolish'd their most magnificent Mosques, and bury'd an infinite number of People under the ruins; The house I am in is of wood, has therefore receiv'd no damage. I suppose you will have a detail of this calamity in the papers.

Adieu My D^r Sister, and think more justly of
your affectionate Brother

CHARLES LEE.

GRANT OF LANDS IN EAST FLORIDA.

[SEAL]

*At the Court of S^t James's
the 3rd Day of December 1766.*

Present

The Kings most Excellent Majesty	
His Royal Highness,	} Earl of Ashburnham,
the Duke of Cumberland	
Lord President,	Earl of Harcourt,
Lord Privy Seal,	Earl of Bessborough,
Duke of Grafton,	Earl of Hillsborough,
Duke of Queensberry,	Earl of Shelburne,
Duke of Ancaster,	Viscount Falmouth,
Marquis of Granby,	Viscount Villiers,
Lord Chamberlain,	Lord Le Despencer,
Earl of Huntingdon,	Lord Bathurst,
Earl of Litchfield	Lord Landys,
Earl of Cholmondeley,	Mr. Treasurer of }
Earl of Bristol,	the Household }
	Robert Nugent, Esq.

WHEREAS application hath been made to His Majesty at this Board by Major Charles Lee praying for a Grant of Lands in his Majesty's province of East Florida in order to make a settlement thereupon—His Majesty this day took the same into consideration and having received the opinion of the Lords Commissioners for Trade and Plantations, and also of a Committee of the Lords of his Majesty's most honorable Privy Council thereupon is hereby pleased with the advice of his Privy Council to order that the Governor or Commander in chief of his Majesty's Province of East Florida for the time being do cause twenty thousand acres of land to be surveyed in one contiguous tract in such part of the said Province as the said Charles Lee or his Attorney shall choose not already granted or surveyed to others, and that upon a return of such survey conformable to his Majesty's directions in his general instructions he do pass a grant for the

same to the said Charles Lee under the seal of the said Province upon the following terms conditions and reservations (viz) :

That the grantee do settle the lands with protestant white inhabitants within ten years from the date of the Grant in the proportion of one person for every hundred acres.

That if one-third of the Land is not settled with protestant white Inhabitants in the above mentioned proportion, within three years from the date of the Grant the whole be forfeited to his Majesty, his heirs and successors.

That such part of the whole tract as is not settled with protestant white Inhabitants at the expiration of ten years from the date of the Grant do revert to his Majesty, his heirs and successors.

That an annual Quit rent of one half penny sterling per acre be reserved to his Majesty his heirs and successors payable on the feast of S^t Michael in every year, to commence and become payable upon one half of the said land on the feast of Saint Michael which shall first happen after the expiration of five years from the date of the Grant, and to be payable on every ensuing feast of S^t Michael or within fourteen days after, and the whole quantity to be subject in like manner to the like quit rent at the expiration of ten years.

That there be a reservation in the said Grant to his Majesty his heirs and successors of all those parts of the land which the surveyor shall upon the return of the survey report to be proper for erecting fortification's Publick Wharfs and naval yards or for other military purposes.

That there be a reservation to his Majesty his heirs and successors of all mines of gold silver copper lead and coals.

That if any part of the said land shall appear by the surveyor's report to be well adapted to the growth of hemp or flax, it shall be a condition of the grant

that the Grantee shall sew and continue annually to cultivate a due proportion of the land not less than one acre in every thousand with that beneficial article of produce.

And the grantee
Province of East Florida for the time being, and
all others, whom it may concern, are required to carry
his Majesty's commands hereby signed into execution.

W. BLAIR.

Endorsed: 3^d Decem^r 1766. Order in Council for
a Grant of Lands to Major Charles Lee.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Dec^r y^e 23^d 1766.

MY D^r SISTER,

I am now five days in England, and write you only these two lines to apprize you of it. I am at present in a Tavern with several of my acquaintances with whom it is as yet the honeymoon. I steal this to you from the side-table. When this honeymoon and the hurry of my busyness is past you may expect to see me. I am at Lord Thanet's. Adieu, my D^r Sister

Your most affectionate Brother

CHARLES LEE.

TO CHARLES LEE.

New York, Jan'y 15th 1767.

DEAR SIR,

I have many thanks to return you for your favors from Calais & Lyons, which made me very happy, particularly those from Lord Holland in giving me the power to settle our affairs without more delay, and which I flatter myself is now done in a manner that

will be more satisfactory and in the end more profitable to all parties than any other left us to chuse. It would be needless to tell you minutely all that I did concerning Mr Patterson's location on Connecticut River but as that transaction illustrates what follow'd to the present time, I must beg your patience for a history that I will endeavour to make as concise as possible.

In my last letters to you I told you I should consult the L^t Governor—he advised entering a caveat against granting those lands, which I did immediately, before Sir Harry wrote his last letter to Lord Holland, where I don't find he takes any notice of it.

He was exceeding angry at it, and was hardly civil to me when we met afterwards, and being then just on the eve of his departure with Mr Carlton, to run the division line between this Province and Quebec, nothing cou'd be done in it 'till his return, having by chance heard that on his return he was to go Sir W^m Johnson's to make some considerable purchases from the Indians, I lost no time, but directly wrote to Sir W^m (fearing the location on the Connect. River might be given against us) begging him as a man, a gentleman & a *Countryman*, to stand my friend, and if there were any valuable purchases made to inform me where I might place a location should the other, as I fear'd it wou'd be taken from us. I am ashamed to tell you what a very supplicating kind of letter I wrote to him, but am much more, to tell you what kind of an answer I got, notwithstanding his warm professions to us on coming here, he wrote me a very cool civil assurance *of doing anything* in his power, but as he *knew nothing of the intended* purchases he cou'd not *say anything till Sir Harry* had been with him, which, *entre nous*, was false; for he had pointed out the location for Sir Harry, and he, S^r W^m & Gen^l Gage, a Mr Hassenclever who has embarked an immense capital in iron-works in this province, and the Gov^r were, with some others on his account, the purchasers of a tract supposed to contain 200,000 acres: partly on the Mohawk R: and running

behind a tract on the banks of the River, call'd Cosby's Manor and the German Flats, famous for the number of Germans settled there, and the quality of the land, which you may have heard to be on both sides the River much superior to any other part of this country, the day after Sir Hy arrived, I was summoned to shew cause before the Council to the Caveat I had entered 'gn'st passing any grants for such and such Townships on the Connecticut R, until I could be heard by myself or Council. As Mr P.'s arrival still disappointed me all I could do was to draw up a kind of petition to the Governor & Council begging a future day, when Mr Pattⁿ might be arrived who had taken all the steps relative to that location, and who I did not doubt would be able to prove the propriety of his proceedings, the misrepresentations of the pretenders under the N. H. Grants, & that his Majesty's Mandamus's ought to be prefer'd to all others. I was called in, & S^r H. with warmth endeavoured to prove to the Council & me, that the Surveyors return was false, to make the matter short, they called in a Lawyer against me, who spoke in the behalf of a man who with as many children and grandchildren as Priam, claimed the township of Fulham. I was very angry and told them I thought they did not use me genteely in calling in a lawyer, I was not prepared to plead a cause, that all I wanted was a future day that they were the judges of the affair, and if they wou'd so—if not I had no more to say—and withdrew—they did not and immediately the land was granted—To shew you the situation one's in with these people, who have not one liberal idea or benevolent principle, most of those towns were sold the next day among them, for little or nothing, just to pay the fees, that one in particular of Fulham, the man himself owned the next coming was, from 28,000 acres reduced to 1200 what with his lawyer, friends among the board, Governor & Secretary, and those very people who had professed themselves my friends, and who as Counselors I should have expected genteel treatment from, the

moment they had a glimpse of making a penny, they gave me up, but there is not one of them that the ghost of a farthing would not lead into the meanest action. the Governor then proposed a tract of vacant land upon the Connecticut R., but 150 miles higher than P.'s location, which was near 100 from Hertford the first market and principal town of Connecticut which is 80 miles from the mouth of the River. I told him (before the Council) that I was very sure L^d H. would not pay fees for such lands, and then produced the copies of those letters from L^d Hillsborough & board of trade concerning his proposal of Ticonderoga to us. This was sufficient to prove what I said, as the location offered now was considerably beyond that again. I then asked S^r H^y what land that was, lately taken up from the Indians—he told me it was a purchase he had made for himself & family, who they were that were concerned beside that the money was paid &c &c &c as much as to tell me, I need have no hopes there—all this kind of treatment made me very shy of going to the fort, and I complained of the Governor Wadly and many officers who have mandamus's likewise, and were foisted from place to place did the same which occasioned satirical verses lampoons, advertizem^{ts} and I don't know what myself. * *

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

London, Feby. ye 6th. 1767.

MY D^r SISTER,

The reason of my delaying so long to write was the expectation I have daily liv'd in of being ascertain'd whether I am to expect my promotion, or look upon myself as absolutely proscib'd. Five weeks ago I deliver'd my letter of recommendation from His Polish Majesty to his brother King, when I reminded him of his promise in my favor to L^d. Thanet three years ago.

To all this I have not received the least answer, but have been flatter'd by Mr. Conway that something would soon be done. I believe you know Patterson, He will deliver you this letter. I beg and entreat that you will show him all the civilities in your power. I shall be oblig'd to my Aunts if they do the same. He is a very sensible modest pretty young man, and I think is rather an acquisition to one who lives at Chester, which at present is not remarkable for shining men's society. I hope at the latter end of April to be down with you; before, it is impossible. As I place my principal hopes of success on the assistance of the Hereditary Prince, on whom I must therefore pay my Court the moment of his arrival.

I beg my love to my Aunts, and believe me
my d^r Sister to be

Yours affectionately

CHARLES LEE.

THOMAS WROUGHTON TO CHARLES LEE.

Warsaw, the 29th April, 1767.

MY DEAR COLONEL,

I admire very much the subtilty of your reasoning, & the arguments you run after to prove me in fault for the silence you have so long observed, which I confess has furnished me with subject for reflexions, that did no honour to mankind in general. But the receipt of your letter has given me so much pleasure, that I ought in gratitude to forget every uneasy thought that I have permitted to torment me whilst I was in expectation of it, & therefore shall proceed immediately to thank you for the intelligence it brings me, & the assurances it renews of your affection & friendship.

I should have been heartily glad to have heard, my dear Colonel, that His Majesty's recommendation had been more successful in procuring you an establishment equal to your merit and wishes, but am not at all

surprised that you find the door shut against you by the person who has such unbounded Credit, as you have ever too freely indulged a liberty of declaiming, which many infamous & invidious people have not failed to inform him of. The Principle on which you thus openly speak your mind is honest and patriotic, but not politic, & as it will not succeed in changing men or times, common prudence should teach us to hold our tongues rather than to risque our own fortunes without any prospect of advantage to ourselves or neighbors. Excuse this scrap of advice, my dear Colonel, & place it to the vent of a heart entirely devoted to your Interest.

I remember my promise to inform you of the transactions of this place, & had I received a line from you upon the road, should have endeavoured to find time during the Diet, to have given you a sketch of the critical & unexpected affairs that agitated us; it will be needless now, as the public papers, & your other Correspondents must have doubtless not failed to instruct you: the important affair of the Dissidents was rudely & insolently refused; and you cannot be ignorant that those gentlemen have formed two confederations in Poland & in Lithuania, supported by a Russian Army of 30, or 40,000 men, & that we expect a Diet extraordinary in the months of August or September for terminating their demands to the satisfaction of the powers who interest themselves in their behalf: and tho' it is impossible to say how it will end, yet the appearances at present are much in their favour, and we have all reason to think that it will be conducted without any interruption of the tranquility of the Republic.

You must not imagine that, however important this negotiation is, that our great men cannot find time for other amusements and engagements. The object that engrosses our attention at this moment is Love and the family of Clavereau (you remember the French Actor and his two daughters). Prince Gaspar Lubomirski marries the youngest daughter to day, and the eldest

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

London, May y^e 12th 1767.

D^R SISTER,

I was in hopes of answering your kind letter before this in propriá personá, but no sooner one speculation ceases but another arises. The Hereditary Prince, I believe, does not chuse to interfere any more in recommendations, as He has not always met with compliance. The day before yesterday I din'd at Conway's but c^a gather no information on my subject. What detains me at present is the settling my American affairs, which depends on the arrival of Lord Holland who is hourly expected. If they turn out as I hope, my circumstances will enable me to render your's more easy, which is one of my principal reasons for wishing some addition. I am extreemly concern'd at your complaints of want of health, but I hope to find you free of 'em when I come down which I hope will be soon. . . . *

TO THE KING OF POLAND.

London, October 20, 1767.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR, AND MOST DEAR MASTER,

Your Majesty will better imagine, than I can express the pleasure I have received from your kind and gracious letter : the assurances it gives me of your good opinion and regard, I shall ever consider as the happiest, the most honourable circumstance of my life. They make ample amends for the enmities I have drawn upon myself from certain powerful quarters in my own country, where, perhaps, from some just judgment of God, the same qualities which would recommend to your Majesty are highly obnoxious. I devoutly

* The remainder relates solely to private friends and their affairs. H. E. Bunbury.

wish, and proudly hope, for my own honour, that I may ever possess a place in the esteem of your Majesty, and remain the aversion of those who so widely, so totally, differ from you.

I am concerned I cannot more fully, and in a more satisfactory manner, answer the several questions of your Majesty on the state of our country, than what I am able to do. Of some of these articles, the cause, though generally treated of, appears not in the least understood; on others, opinions are so various that it is presumption to decide; but some are, I think obvious to every man of common understanding; and of this class may be reckoned Mr. Pitt's quitting the stage and the conduct of the American colonies towards the mother country. With respect to the first, it is manifest, from a thousand circumstances, that with the health and frame of this extraordinary man, the understanding is likewise worn out. Before I came to England, I did not lay much stress on those parts of his conduct which the newspapers have so worried; and I recollect your Majesty was of the same way of thinking, that there was nothing very monstrous in his acceptance of a peerage, but that it might be imprudent, and argued a senselessness of glory, to forfeit the name of Pitt for any title the king could bestow. But since I am a little more behind the scenes, and am made acquainted with several circumstances previous, concomitant, and subsequent to this event, I am apt to agree with the majority of the better sort, that this once noble mind is quite overthrown. Can it be reconciled to reason, that the same man who had rendered his name so illustrious and so tremendous to the greatest part of the globe, should split upon ribbons and titles; that when he had arrived at a higher pinnacle of glory than ever citizen did since the days of Epaminondas, he should be captivated by such a bauble, even though it should be attended with no ill consequences to the affairs of his country? but when such terrible ones were visible, it must be construed downright madness.

Mr. Pitt, say they, was the only man who had capacity, spirit, and power to assert the honour and interest of the nation with foreign states, correct the abuses, and stem the torrent of corruption at home. His power was not founded on vast property or cabinet favour, but on his popularity. By sinking into a peerage, his popularity would vanish of course, and with it all power of rendering, at a most critical time, any farther services to his country. If it is objected that it is possible to accept a title and retain the integrity of the citizen, they allow it; but that, unfortunately, the bulk of the people will not be persuaded of it; that a popular minister must, therefore, not only be strictly virtuous, but, like Cæsar's wife, his virtue must not be suspected; that this persuasion of the people, ridiculous as it may appear at first sight, is founded on too much justice; for they observe, that, from the time of Wentworth down to that of Pulteney, not one instance can be produced of a man's changing his seat from the lower to the upper house, without a thorough renunciation of all principles and public virtue; but whether this opinion is well or ill founded, as it is a prevalent one, this revolt, error, folly, or madness, of such a man has some direful effects; it taints with jealousy all public affiance, establishes a doubt, whether such a thing as public virtue can exist: in short, it makes the bulk of mankind indifferent who are in, who are out, as they are almost persuaded that all men are, or will prove, in the end, equally vain, apostates to the common cause, either through interestedness, vanity, or madness.

Such are the arguments not only made use of by the majority of Mr. Pitt's once admirers, but they were stated to him by those who were supposed to have the greatest weight with him. Lord Camden, in particular, concluding this resolution to be a short fit of compliance, and that his friend would soon see the danger of the measure, delayed the signing of the patent for two days. But his lordship was mistaken, the disorder had taken deeper root than he imagined; no

girl could shew more impatience for a new toy, than this first of men did, till the testimony of his folly was signed and sealed to the whole world. Your Majesty will probably object, that though Mr. Pitt played the child in one article, it is no proof of the general failure of his understanding; that no man was ever blessed with so entire faculties, as not, on some particular occasion, and in some unlucky moment, to betray weakness. But this is not the case with Pitt, the decay of his parts is not only indicated by the act itself, but confirmed by his conduct in public and private character: In public the doctrines he broaches are diametrically the reverse of what he has, through the whole course of his life, asserted: In private, he is totally metamorphosed; from the extreme of plainness and simplicity, he is all parade, magnificence and ostentation. But I might have spared your Majesty this prolix detail, when in few words, it would have sufficed to have said, that he has fits of crying, starting, and every effect of hysteric; it is affirmed, indeed, that ten years ago, he was in the very same condition, that therefore a possibility of his recovering once more his nerves, and with them all his functions; but from the age of the man, the generality consider the piece as finished; the honest and well-wishers of their country lament over him, the corrupt and profligate sing *Te Deum*, as the Devil probably did for the fall of man. Your Majesty asks who is to mount the stage in his room? I am so far from seeing any man so qualified in all points, as to fill his part in time of distraction and confusion, that I know no set of men who have a chance of being called to it, who will not by ignorance, obstinacy, or timidity, throw things into ten times greater confusion than they are at present. My Lord Rockingham is indeed an honest, worthy, and spirited man, and possesses the good opinion of the people in general, but these attributes will probably exclude him. The Thane who is still all-powerful, will never admit of a man so endowed. He requires a certain degree of subserviency

and complaisance; in short, he requires a minister of his own jobs and partialities, and not an administrator of the national affairs. As to the rest who form what is called the opposition, they are so odious, or contemptible, that the favourite himself is preferable to them; such as Grenville, Bedford, Newcastle, and their associates. Temple is one of the most ridiculous order of coxcombs I ever heard of, he is eternally appealing to the public, forgetting that the public never considered him farther than they would an old pair of boots, which Mr. Pitt might, through whim, have set a value upon, which when he chose to throw aside, it mattered not if they were thrown into a lumber room or the fire. Nothing could make the American colonists cast off their obedience, or even respect to their mother country, but some attempt on the essence of their liberty; such as undoubtedly the stamp act was, which, if it had remained unrepealed, and admitted as a precedent, they would have been slaves to all intents and purposes, as their whole property would lie at the mercy of the Crown's minister and the minister's ministers, the House of Commons, who would find no end to the necessity of taxing these people, as every additional tax would furnish the master with means of adding to their respective wages; but it would be impertinent in me to enter into a discussion of the propriety or impropriety, the justice or injustice, of this measure, when it is so fully and clearly treated in some tracts which are bound up together, and which I have ordered to be sent to your Majesty. If the humours which this accursed attempt has raised, are suffered to subside, the inherent affection which the colonies have for their mother country, and clashings of interests one amongst another, will throw every thing back into the old channel; which indeed is the case already: but if another attack of the same nature should be made upon them, by a wicked blundering minister, I will venture to prophecy, that this country will be shaken to its foundation in its wealth, credit, naval force, and interior population, even without the supposition of a civil war.

[To PRINCE CZARTORYSKI.]

London, Dec. 25th, 1767.

MY DEAR PRINCE,

You will do me great injustice if you attribute my silence for so many months to a want of sense of your excessive goodness and friendship, or even to carelessness, which, considering the obligations I lie under to your highness, would be one and the same thing. The truth is, that I was unwilling to trouble you with a fulsome letter of acknowledgements, as I hope you are no stranger to my sentiments on the subject; but I thought a few lines which would give you a sketch of the state of this country, of the parties, and of our prospect in relation to foreign and interior affairs, would be the only possible method of making your Highness some return for the thousand instances of friendship which I have received at your hands; but the most reasonable schemes are frequently defeated; so it fares with me; for although I have been in London eight days, which, in this political and communicative town is sufficient, one should think, to make a man master of every thing necessary to be known; but my evil stars have disappointed me, and your evil stars have dictated to me, that, notwithstanding the insignificance of all I have to say, it would be a petty treason to remain any longer silent. You must therefore accept the will for the deed; in a few posts I hope to be able to amuse you better. The king and his ministers are out of town, or more properly, I should have said the ministers and their king, for I do not find that the latter is any more a principal than when I left England. Lord Chatham is supposed to be absolute in all affairs which concern the state; Bute in his corner, retains influence to a sufficient degree, for the provision of his creatures and countrymen, in subordinate offices; he disclaims all concern with business; but this is like the rest of his conduct a most impudent and ineffectual hypocrisy; for he is as usual, not cred-

ited. A formidable opposition is expected, but the conjectures on its success are too vague to be attended to. Some men of weight and reputation are embarked in it; but the heads are too odious to the nation in general in my opinion, to carry their point. Such as Bedford, Sandwich, G. Grenville, and, with submission, your friend Mansfield. He lately drew upon himself the laugh of the House of Lords, making use of the word Liberty of the Subject; and expressing great regard to it, it was called Satan preaching up sanctity. Conway is still secretary of state, and much regarded as a man of ability and integrity. Lord Shelburne, the other secretary, has surpassed the opinion of the world; he speaks well, and is very distinct in office. The Duke of Grafton is an absolute orator, and has a fair character. An Irishman, one Mr. Burke, is sprung up in the House of Commons, who has astonished every body with the power of his eloquence, his comprehensive knowledge in all our exterior and internal politics and commercial interests. He wants nothing but that sort of dignity annexed to rank, and property in England, to make him the most considerable man in the Lower House.

A dispute with Portugal, on some commercial points, seems at present chiefly to occupy the thoughts of the ministry. It is thought, that an ambassador extraordinary, with an escort of ten ships of war, which is the best *ultima ratio*, will be sent to Lisbon. I have had some conversation with our ministry on the affairs of Poland; but as this letter goes by the common post, I cannot send you the particulars. The character of his Majesty is high in their esteem. I intreat your Highness to present my duty to him, to assure him of my zeal, veneration, and love; in a few days, I shall take the liberty of writing to him, or to Mr. Ogroudski. I wait till I have had a conversation with the King. Could your Highness procure me a copy of his Majesty's picture, either in miniature, or otherwise; I ask for a copy, as I would not presume to trouble him to

sit. You would likewise make me very happy with your own. I was much pleased with an acquaintance with Lavisa at the Hague. His warm attachment to our incomparable master has much endeared him to me. We have some books published here, which I fancy you would be glad to have, particularly, the whole letters of Swift. They are the best history of those times, and read with great avidity. When the Baltic is open, I shall send to his Majesty a considerable number, as he has done me the honour to trust to my judgment, and drawn on Mr. Tipper for the cost.

I have not heard from our friend Lind; I beg you will chide him for this abominable neglect. Wroughton too deserves abuse; I shall write to him in a few posts. The reason of Lord Thanet's delay in regard to the horse, was delicacy. He could not find any he thought good enough; but in the spring he will send a couple, which will, in all respects, suit his Majesty.

I entreat you, my dear prince, to pay my humble respects to your father, mother, the prince, chancellor, and all your house, to which I have so great obligations, and for which I have a sincere love and honour, and that you will steal a few moments to give me under your hand what I am already convinced of, that I possess some share of your love and friendship.

I am, with the most respectful sentiments,

My dear Prince, ever yours,

CHARLES LEE.

FROM THE KING OF POLAND.

Varsovie, 20th March, 1768.

MONSIEUR LE COLONEL LEE,

Pour repondre a votre Lettre du 20 Octobre dernier. J'ai attendu une voye sure. Ne vous excusez jamais de la longueur de vos lettres pourvu que vous les fassiez toujours aussi amusantes & aussi instructives que cette derniere.

S'il est vrai que le grand P—t soit devenu un exemple de la foiblesse humaine, cela me donne la meme espece de regret que me donneroit la destruction de l'eglise de St Pierre par un tremblement de terre, parceque ce seroit la destruction d'un exemple de perfection ou du moins d'excellence humaine.

Mais enfin si P—t n'existe plus on pour mieux dire s'il n'est plus que *Magni nominis umbra* qui est ce qui est ou va etre Ministre cheze vous.

Comme Je n'ai point reçu les papiers imprimés sur la matiere de vos Colonies, que vous me dite m'avoir envoyé, Je vous demande encore de me dire. Pour quoi n'accorde t'on point a vos Colonies le droit d'avoir des representans au Parlement Brittanique? Representation & Taxation iroient alors d'un pas egal, & la Connexion entre la mere & les filles indissolubles au lieu que sans cela Je ne vois que l'alternative de l'oppression ou de l'independance entiere. Car l'expedient des Parlemens Americains ou telle autre chose qui entienne lieu sous quelque nom que ce soit me paroît ne pouvoir produire que l'opposition des interets de vos Colonies a ceux de l'Angleterre, comme incompatibles & par consequent Ennemies du tout au plus les Anglais d'Amerique ne seront avec ceux d'Europe que comme sont ensemble les 7 Provinces Unies qui composent une Republique Fœderative, dont le Gouvernement est aussi defectueux que lent, a cause de l'egalite de pouvoir de chaque une des 7 petites Republiques respectives.

Le pire de tout servit si les volonteze du Parlement d'Angleterre pour etre executies un Amerique, avoient besoin de la sanction du Parlement Americain lequel deviendroit ainsi le suzerain de celui d'Europe. Ce seroit le meme abus qu'on voit en Pologne ou la Dietine de Prusse vent s'aroger le droit de confirmer ou rejettir ce que la Diette du Royaesme de Pologne a statuée.

Dites moi encor, si 'la cherté des vivres continue de diminuer cheze vous? Si la permission d'exporter des grains accordée par le Roi de France a ses sujets a im-

portie des grains Francois chez vous, & s'il y a esperance d'obtenir chez vous les lois desirées contre les grandes fermes pour la diminution des chevaux & pour la multiplication des betes a corne.

Je suis egalement obligé a Milord Thanet & pour son intention de me faire plaisir & pour le cheval meme qu'il m'a envoyé & que J'ai trouvé beau & bon. Si mylord desire de savoir mon gout en fait d'etalons J'aime mieux ceux dont la Figure approche le plus de la Turquie, laquelle est reconnoissable comme vous scavez non seulement dans toute sa tete maigre, dans les yeux grands & sachants & dans le col fin & degagé, mais jusque dans les narines fort ouvertes & les oreilles comme des fleches ouverte de belle poitrines, de belles croupes larges, l'apine a dos droite, des jambes seches mais fortes. La queue élevée naturellement, et si elle est anglisée qu'elle soit bien relevée. Je ne scai si Je ferai plaisir a Mi lord Thanet mais du moins c'est mon intention en lui envoyant six habits d'hyver pour un attelage de chevaux, tel que nous employons ici.

Puisque vous temoignez souhaitez mon portrait & que Je n'en ai point d'autre ressemblant, a present, Je vous envoie un que l'on dit etre ressemblant. Vous en jugerez. Ce qu'il y a de sur, c'est que l'original vous conserve toujours beaucoup d'estime & d'affection.

FROM THE KING OF POLAND.

Warsaw, March 20th 1768.

COLONEL LEE,

I have waited for a sure way of sending an answer to your letter of 20. Oct. last. Never excuse yourself for the length of your letters if you always make them as amusing and instructive as the last.

If it be true that the great Pitt has become an example of human weakness, this calamity gives me the same kind of regret that I should feel at the overthrow

of St. Peters church by an earthquake, because it would be the destruction of a model of perfection, or at least of human excellence.

But if Pitt no longer exists, or to speak more correctly if he is now but "*magni nominis umbra*," who is or who is to be minister with you?

As I have not received the printed papers relating to your colonies, which you say you have sent me, I ask you again to tell me, why they do not allow your colonies to have representatives in the British Parliament? Representation and Taxation would then go together, and the connexion between the mother and her daughters become indissoluble; otherwise I see no alternative but oppression or entire independence.

For the expedient of American Parliaments or anything else of the kind by whatsoever name it may be called, appears to me likely to produce nothing but an opposition of interests between the colonies and England, as incompatible as it would be injurious to all parties.

The English in America would then have the same relation to those of Europe, that exists in the seven United Provinces, which compose a federal republic, and whose government is so defective and slow in its operations, on account of the equality of power between the seven little republics respectively. The worst of all would be, that it should become necessary for the acts of the Parliament of England to be approved by an American Parliament before they can be executed in America, which would make the latter paramount to the former. This would be the same abuse that is now seen in Poland, where the Dietine of Prussia arrogates to itself the right of confirming or rejecting what the Diet of the Kingdom of Poland has decreed.

Tell me further if the dearness of provisions continues to diminish with you? and whether the permission to export grain granted by the King of France to his subjects has had the effect to increase the importa-

tion of French grain into your country, and whether there is hope with you of obtaining the desired laws against the great farms for diminishing the supply of horses and increasing that of horned cattle?

I am obliged to my Lord Thanet both for his wish to give me pleasure and for the horse he has sent me, which I have found very handsome and excellent.

If my Lord wishes to know my taste in the matter of stallions I like those best whose shape approaches nearest the Turkish, which is distinguished as you know not only by the lean head, large and knowing eyes, neck firm and slender, but also by the expanded nostrils and ears like open spearheads, fine chest, large full buttock, straight back, legs slender but strong, tail naturally elevated, and if it is nicked it should be well held up.

I do not know if I give pleasure to my Lord Thanet, but at least such is my intention in sending him six winter coats for a team of horses such as we use here.

Since you wish my portrait, as I have no other at present which resembles me, I send you one which is said to be a likeness. You will judge. It is certain however that the original entertains for you always a great deal of affection and esteem.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Barton, April y^e 21st 1768.

D^R SISTER,

I am still at Barton, the air of which place has near re-establish'd me. I really was extreemly ill, and intend as soon as the season will permit bathing in the sea either at Harwich or Bologn in France which last I prefer as the wine and rides are better, the society I believe equally good; after that you may probably see me at Chester. What you say is I think upon the whole just. When we are arriv'd at a certain time of life, a home is

absolutely necessary. I must think of it seriously. Yourself, my Aunts and Cousins without any compliments w'd make Chester very agreeable to me if I could have at the same time, two or three or even one good man acquaintance—but except that poor invalid the eldest Fawkner, perhaps thro' my own caprice and self-sufficiency, there is not one whose conversation is tolerable. I wish M^{rs} Manwarring wou'd fancy herself a man, and go to the Tavern, my objection wou'd be removed—in a few days I shall settle my plan when you shall hear from me—The books you mention I lent to Butler—The stake things you shall have down immediately—one is finish'd which I think is not quite large enough—I will send it; if you like 'em larger the others shall be made so.

I am D^r Sister, yours most affectionately

CHARLES LEE.

You are always to suppose my love to my Aunts, Cousins and M^{rs}. Manwarring. How does my dear Miss Podds? I have a Whelp for Mr. Crew another for Mr. Manwarring, but know not how to convey 'em—Lady Sarah's compliments to you, procur'd the prettiest Dog for you that can be imagin'd, but has lost him.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

London, Nov^r ye 29th 1768.

MY D^R SISTER.

Tho' I am persuaded that you think no letter insignificant which comes from one you love, I so far give way to my natural indolence, as to avoid the trouble of writing when I can send you nothing but assurances of health and how much I regard you. I cannot help esteeming these assurances rather impertinent and the effects of idleness than the genuine tests of affection. If I thought otherwise you shou'd hear from me at

every post. I entreat therefore you will not look upon the infrequency of my writing as any slackness in my affection, but the result of my opinion that it is not a duty, nor an indication of friendship to be scribbling every week. When I have anything worth your hearing you may depend upon my not being remiss. I have now near settled my money affairs, and much to my satisfaction and advantage—the mortgage with Mr. Rowley is off, another Gentleman has taken it, but I have laid it out in a West India Estate at six per cent—with Collateral Bankers security for the principal and the payment of the interest, which has better'd my income considerably. I have arrang'd my affairs so well, that I think I can have no trouble for at least four years. My Will will be sent to you, or left in the hands of Sir Charles Davers. All will be finish'd in a week. I have had a cursed deal of trouble with Bunbury and shall take care never to have further dealing with him, or any gentleman of the Turf. I must now inform you of my plan. In ten days I hope to set out for the South of France, if I can get to Corsica I will. But in the Spring I intend with the recommendation of the Polish King to join the Russian Army, and serve the ensuing Campaign against the Turks. I flatter myself a little more practice will make me a good soldier—if not, it will serve to talk over my kitchen fire in my old age, which will soon come upon us all—apropos, I must conjure you (now I am talking of the King of Poland) to send up his picture to Mrs. Naylor, in old Burlington street, who will take a copy of it, and return it to you immediately; you wou'd do well to write a letter with it; if you should by any chance fall in her way she will be a usefull acquaintance to you—the family is a most agreeable one. I could wish you had been with me at the play to night—you wou'd have been charmed with a young Actress in the character of Juliet—She promises to surpass by many degrees anything we have on the stage—Her voice is finer, more musical (if possible) than M^{rs} Cibbers—her person, enchanting, and her

countenance beyond description interestingly beautiful; her name is Morris. The whole world is in love with her, and you may be assur'd I am on this occasion one of the world. We have some hope of overturning this accursed Ministry—Wilkes is to be brought up to the House on Fryday—never did such a scoundrel as this Grafton disgrace the biped Creation, which is in itself a scoundrel creation, without the infamy of his being of their species. Have you rec'd your Port Wine? Write to me at the Smyrna Coffee House, Pall Mall—

Adieu, My D^r Sister,
Yours Affectionately
CHARLES LEE.

My respects to Miss Barrat.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

London, Dec. y^e 21st 1768.

MY D^R SISTER,

I agree with you that it is a duty to inform our friends of our situation, welfare and health; whenever we change the first, or there is any revolution happens in the latter, I shall carefully fulfill this duty; when there is neither I hope you will agree with me in not construing a vacation of scribbling, neglect. I set out on Saturday with Phips (a son of Lady Lassels) for Paris where he is to reside during the recess of Parliament, and I go on to Marseilles, from whence I shall attempt to get into Corsica, and put afterwards the plan I mentioned to you in execution. I have settled all my affairs more distinctly than you will think me capable of. My Will I have left in the hands of M^r Hoare the Banker, and a Duplicate with M^r Coleman—If anything shou'd happen you will know where to apply for it—You express a regret in my leaving England when there is a chance of Ld Rockingham's com-

ing into Power; my absence will never hurt my interest; on the contrary it will meliorate it—practice in war will enhance my pretensions. When I have serv'd this campaign I shall perhaps settle; if I had as good an opinion of my own temper and constancy as I have of some women's I shou'd certainly marry—without a thorough confidence in one's self it is a measure not only rash but dishonest; We have seen some dreadful examples but no matter: You inquire what is to become of Wilkes, unless we cou'd look into the book of Fate, it would be madness to guess; so far is certain, these scoundrels are cursedly frighten'd. He denounces an impeachment and it is thought he has some stubborn damning facts particularly against Weymouth. God send him success; if we can but see one of these State Rascals brought to the block, my soul shall rest satisfy'd—there is a brave spirit in the people, and the House of Commons has more the air of vigour and integrity than we expect'd. I am vain enough to think if I had a little weight and credit in Cheshire, I cou'd myself bring about a glorious Revolution in national affairs—as I have none, I shall keep it to myself. I am surpris'd you have not rec^d. the Port, it was not to come from a Merchant but from Lord Blaney—I beg you write a note to him in Sackville st. Dublin; if he is disappointed I will order you some from a Merchant. I beg my respects to Miss Barret, and assure her that I shou'd find great pleasure in conversing with her long and often, but cannot find what satisfaction there would have been in helping her off her horse and into a Post Chaise at Wrexham. I once more desire my respects to her. I shall send you before I set out my direction—

Adieu, my Dr Sister,
Yours affectionately

CHARLES LEE.

You have heard Lady Sarah has a girl—Bunbury is very happy with it. Miss Blake is going to be married. Don't forget to send the picture to Mrs. Naylor.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Vienna, Feb^{ry} y^e 12th 1769.

D^R SISTER,

The post will just give me time to inform you of my situation and my plan. I met Prince Czartorisky at Paris, from whom I learnt that the Campaign betwixt the Russians and the Turks wou'd probably begin early in the spring—He persuaded me to set out with him. We have been at Vienna a fortnight, and only wait for the escort, which is to take care of us from the frontier to Warsaw, for the communications are by no means open in Poland, new confederations are form'd every day which pillage and murder all that falls in their way. I am to have a command of Cossars and Wal-lacks, a kind of people I have a good opinion of. I am determin'd not to serve in the line—one might as well be a Church Warden—direct to me, Chez le Prince General de Podolie Warsowie. This is all I have to say—My love to my Aunts and Cousins.

Adieu my D^r Sister

Yours C. LEE.

Have you got the wine?

To M^{rs} Lee in 6 Newgate Street

Chester Angleterre.

[TO LADY BLAKE.]

Warsaw, May 2d, 1769.

DEAR MADAM,

I should write to you with more ease and pleasure, had you not given me to understand that you looked upon me as an able letter-writer. The ambition of coming up to your expectations lays me under a constraint which will inevitably make me fall short of every correspondent. To render myself tolerable I

must endeavour to forget your sex, your beauty; but above all, the high opinion which you are pleased to conceive of my talents in this article. That I may not run into compliment, that I may divest myself of awe and vanity: the first you would despise as fulsome, and the second and last would be productive of reserve and petulance.

Your understanding and the care you have taken to cultivate it, cuts me off from some of the most fruitful subjects to female correspondents; the dress, intrigues, and diversions of the women in the several places we pass through; but, on the other hand, it affords me ample liberty of pouring out my mind upon subjects which, unfortunately for my own ease, engross it entirely; the dreadful situation of all the honest part of mankind, and particularly of our own country. How miserably fallen she is in the eyes of every state! How sunk are we (in a few months I may say) from the summit of glory, opulence, and strength, to the lowest degree of poverty, imbecillity, and contempt. Europe is astonished at the rapidity of the change; high and low, men of every order, from the ministers, of state to the political barbers, make it the subject of their admiration. How can it happen, say they, that Great Britain, so lately the mistress of the globe, with America in one hand, Asia and Africa in another, instead of the glorious task of giving laws and peace to nations, protecting the weak and injured, checking the powerful and oppressive, should employ her time in trampling on the rights of her dependencies, and violating her own sacred laws, on which her superiority over her neighbours is founded? It was some consolation, say they, for the generous few of the Romans who survived the liberties of their country, that it was a Julius Cæsar, a man with more than mortal talents, who was their subverter; and the patriots of England had some mitigation for their spleen, that it was a Cromwell who had over-reached them; but that a clod who has no right to be supposed endued with anima-

tion, unless from the symptoms it affords of perverseness, obstinacy, dissimulation and timidity should be able to encompass the enslaving of a spirited nation whose every law seems dictated by Liberty herself, is too much to bear. They compare the noble remonstrances of the French parliaments against the oppressions of their court, with the slavish addresses of ours. I must confess that instead of sending for cooks and hair-dressers from that country, I have long wished that we were to supply ourselves with members of parliament. What it will come to, I know not, but it is time something should be done, and I flatter myself it will: there is much spirit in the body of the people; but I will endeavour to quit this subject; it makes me mad.

This country is the reverse of ours; they have an honest, patriot k——g, but a vicious nation. If God delights in seeing a virtuous man (as Seneca supposes he does) struggling with adversities, he has a charming spectacle in the king of Poland: and I hope God will, in the end, recompense the instrument of his pleasure, by extricating him out of his distresses; nothing else can, I am sure. You must excuse me entering into a detail of these difficulties, as this letter may possibly fall into the hands of the Confederates, and be published to the nation, as several others, full as insignificant, have already been, to the no small detriment of this good man's affairs. I shall reserve them for some future letter, or our evenings chat in Queen Anne Street, or Langham.

Our station here, I mean those who are about the king's person, is whimsical enough. We have few troops, the bulk of these totally disaffected, and the town is full of (though not declared, far from being concealed) Confederates. We have frequent alarms, and the pleasure of sleeping every night with our pistols on our pillows. I at present only wait for an opportunity to join the Russian army: this does not offer every day, as a strong escort is necessary, the commu-

nications being filled with banditties of robbers, who are the offals of the Confederates. I believe it will be but a ridiculous campaign, something like that of Wilks and Talbot. The Russians can gain nothing by beating their enemy, and the Turks are confoundedly afraid.

I have heard of Lady S——h's flight. I cannot say I ever liked the match. It is impossible to have the least connection with Fox, either of a political or a private nature, without smarting for it: every thing he touches becomes putrid and prostitute. I hope your brother will have the grace to break this accursed connection, which has diverted such excellent parts from their true use, blasted all the hopes which his real friends and his country had a right to entertain of him; that he will see, in its proper colours, the odiousness of dependency and venality, particularly in a man of fortune; and that he may, by his future conduct, make an ample recompense to the opulent county which has chose him for their hitherto disappointment. I am convinced you will not think what I am saying as too great a liberty with your brother; I am convinced your sentiments correspond with mine; if I thought they did not, I solemnly declare, were your beauty and understanding greater than they are, I would not write to you. I have no doubt of Mr. Blake's doing his duty. He is not only well-disposed himself, but in the hands of one who might transform a Maccaroni into a Cato. He must be the devil himself whom a young, beautiful, English woman, with the sentiments of a Spartan matron, cannot lead into the ways of political righteousness. If women in general were like you, men could not possibly be such rascals. I have long lamented the accursed prevailing notion that women ought to have defective educations. It was the most cunning fiend in hell who first broached this doctrine; which, had it not prevailed, the better part of the globe would not have groaned in the wretched state of slavery we at present see it. For God's sake, Madam, have as many daugh-

ters as possible, and make them as much like yourself as possible, and some descendant of Catharine M'Cauley may attribute the salvation of the state to your progeny.

I am, dear Madam, with the highest esteem,

Yours, &c.

CHARLES LEE.

Warsaw, May 4th, 1769.

DEAR LOUISA,

When you first requested me to give you lessons in English; I esteemed myself happy to demonstrate my gratitude to Madam Kreithin for her singular kindness to me. I have been so used to converse with myself and a few favourite books, that I never found it necessary to attend the toilets of women, merely as the generality do, to fly from themselves, and kill the time which they have no other means of employing. This was my original motive; but on one or two conversations with my scholar, I entertained a sort of ambition of adding something to the means of enlightening so excellent an understanding as I perceived her to be possessed of. A little knowledge of the English language I conceived to be one of the means, as it abounds with so many excellent and instructing books. For a few days my views were confined to this; but, O Louisa! you ought, you must, have seen this ambition giving place to another less tranquil sentiment. Why did you not check it in its birth, by affecting to find difficulties in the task you had undertaken? Why did you not, on some such humane pretext, remove me from your side before the flame had acquired such inextinguishable fierceness? This you should in charity have done, as you was determined to treat me as an enemy the moment I declared I loved. Your resentment at my pretending to more than common friendship, is futile and vain, or, what is worse, hypocritical and deceitful. You know your own charms, your own powers too well. You have

proved them with an unhappy success on several, not to be conscious that it is impossible to see you often, and to hear your voice, without being forced beyond the bounds of friendship. But, to speak proudly, I do not see why the declaration of my passion should so heinously offend you. To inspire you with an equal passion for an object destitute of any kind of charm, would be ridiculous presumption: and were I furnished with every charm that could captivate woman-kind, to entertain any hopes which might affect your happiness, or reputation, would be the highest villainy; but as I am born of a reputable family, I hope my character is rather a fair one; and as my fortune is sufficiently ample to make an honest man independent and an honest woman content, I cannot see the mighty crime in wishing to unite your fortune with mine. I had flattered myself, that time and an unwearied attention to please, would have supplied in me what you might find amiss in my person or the arts of conversation.

I am, dear Louisa, with much esteem,
Yours, &c.

CHARLES LEE.

To Louisa C

TO LORD THANET.

Warsaw, May 4th 1769.

MY DEAR LORD,

I wrote a sort of scrap of a note to you by the hands of Fawkner, and flattered myself that I should have found at this place a scrap in return. I know your indolence too well, to expect a letter of a sheet of paper, and do not exact it; but if you knew how much pleasure a scrap signed by your hand, certifying your health, welfare, and good spirits affords me, I am confident you would from time to time muster up resolu-

tion, to write me a few lines, three will be sufficient, which I insist on, as a tribute due to friendship, which on my side I can affirm to be as pure and genuine as the spawn of such a rascally planet as this is capable of; and I have the strongest reason to think it is not less so on yours. I must therefore repeat it, that I expect a tribute of this sort every fifth or sixth post. I have been in this happy capital five weeks, waiting for an opportunity to join the Russian army, which does not offer every day, for the communications are filled by a set of gentlemen who are called Confederates, but why or wherefore they are pleased to stile themselves Confederates, I cannot find out. They give no reasons, they propose no plan, but they rob, strip, and generally murder every body of every religion, color and complexion who fall into their hands.

You used to dine formerly with very knowing, wise politicians, such as Hans Stanley, and others, who are acquainted with all the schemes of all the nations, and all the individuals in Europe; I would request you, to give me some hints of what these worthies intend: You will scarcely believe me serious, but I do assure you, that I knew, before I left London, the state of this country, full as well, if not better than I do here on the spot. If Gates is in the way you will much oblige me in procuring his opinion. I have greater reason every day to congratulate my prudence in having left England; I am persuaded, had I stayed, I should have brought myself into some cursed scrape; even here, at so great a distance, I am thrown into strange agitations of passion on the sight of every newspaper. Heavenly God! is it possible we should be so far sunk? to return solemn thanks for a manifestly corrupt dissipation of such enormous revenues, and an impudent demand on the public to repair this dissipation, is pushing servility to its *ultimatum*. Those nations who have the least idea of liberty, as the Austrians and Russians, laugh and hoot at us; compare, say they, the remonstrances of the French parliaments with the addresses of yours,

and then dare to pride yourselves in the superiority of British spirit over their neighbours. It is impossible to make the least reply to these charges, I choak with grief and indignation. When I attempt to assure them that the body of the nation is still untainted, that they have still sentiments of freedom; they answer, that such sentiments are of little consequence, when courage is wanting to put them in motion. Is not every of your most boasted laws trampled upon, or eluded? Is not perjury, desolation, and murder, encouraged and rewarded with the national money? Are not your magistrates, from the sole merit of being declared enemies of the law, become factious partizans? Is not the choice of your people in their representatives, treated with contempt and annulled? Are not your citizens massacred in the public streets and in the arms of their household gods by the military, and the military thanked for their fiend-like alertness? If these things are borne with by a people, who possess sentiments of liberty, we have lost the meaning of words. Such, my dear Lord, is the language of these people, and it is fortunate for me, that they are ignorant of the state of our American politics. They can have no idea of our carrying our abominations so far, as to disfranchise three millions of people of all the rights of men, for the gratification of the revenge of a blundering knavish Secretary, and a scoundrel Attorney Governour, a Hillsborough, and a Barnard. Were they informed of these facts their opinion of us would be still more mortifying. I had the other day a conversation with the gentleman to whom you gave the horse; he laments, with great energy, the weak and wicked conduct of our administration, not only on our own account, but on that of all Europe. He says, did they barely possess common sense, and common honesty, Great Britain must have been the Empress of the World; that she might have kept on the muzzles of the dogs of war, which must now inevitably be slipped off, to the devastation of the greater part of the globe. He desires his

respects to you, and thanks you again and again for the horse which turns out nobly. I beg my compliments to Lady Thanet, and was in hopes to have heard that she had before this, produced you a son. Adieu, my dear Lord, and write soon a few lines to one who sincerely loves you.

C. LEE.

Lord Thanet.

TO THE KING OF POLAND.

Kaminec, August 16th, 1769.

MOST GRACIOUS SIR,

As an express is this evening dispatched by the governor, I take the liberty of addressing this scribble to your Majesty. As it is in English, I am in hopes no bad consequences can arise, if it falls into the hands of the Confederates. Your Majesty will have heard of our retreat—a thousand reasons will undoubtedly be given, and probably not one founded in justice; I must, it is my duty, to speak freely to your Majesty. The operations have been miserably concluded; they opened with a capital defect—without a certainty of the state of the place, (Chotzim,) they were destined to attack it; they with infinite fatigue and expence marched to the certain, (in idea,) reduction of it, without the possible means of reducing it. Chotzim is perhaps as secure from assault, as any fortress in the universe; but must inevitably be taken, when attacked with the necessary quantity of battering artillery, in forty hours. The hopes of reducing it, with our pop guns soon appeared vain; it was then seemingly determined to blockade it, but the line of blockade was either broken in part, or totally taken away on every alarm. When the blockade was formed, the grand Vizier was expected with an hundred and fifty thousand men. If that number was formidable, they ought not to have formed the blockade, but retired at once over the Niester,

without harassing for no purpose, their men and their horses. If it was not formidable, they ought to have persisted in the blockade. In fact, the Russian army, I mean the infantry, brave as it is, was not sufficient in number to form a line complete of circumvallation, against so numerous an enemy; but neither the marching without battering cannon, the blockading the place without a resolution to persist in it, nor any blunder committed, are so liable to censure, as the neglect to attack them in their camp. If success in war can be assured, ours was certainly so.

I am,

With the highest respect and attachment,
Your Majesty's most obedient and
humble servant,

CHARLES LEE.

TO GEORGE COLMAN (THE ELDER).

Warsaw, May y^e 8th 1769.

D^R COLEMAN,

You must undoubtedly think me a very extraordinary person, that, on a slender acquaintance, I shou'd have saddled you with the curation of my affairs, and afterwards not think it worth my while to write to you even a civil note, such as a common acquaintance, who had conferred no obligation, might have expected. The truth is I have expected every day to be ascertained of my destiny, and then intended to have given you a circumstantial plan of my operations; but as this day is as remote in all appearance as ever, I should be guilty of a monstrous neglect in any farther delaying to pay the tribute of friendship which I so sensibly owe; believe, my dear Sir, I most sincerely love and honour you, and this love and honour is founded on so solid a basis that I have dared to neglect a form which would not be pardoned by a person who is not really an object of love and esteem.

I have been in this place two months, waiting for an opportunity to join the Russian army, and I am afraid that I shall be obliged to wait a month longer, the communications being so filled with the offals of the Confederates (who are themselves a banditti) that it is impossible to stir ten yards without an escort of Russians. The English are less secure than others, as they are esteemed the arch-enemies of the holy faith. A French Comedian was the other day near being hanged from the circumstance of wearing a bob-wig, which by the Confederates is supposed to be the uniform of the English nation. I wish to God that three branches of your Legislature would take it into their heads to travel through the woods of Poland in bob-wigs. The first opportunity that will offer will be the present Ambassador, who it is said will now be succeeded in ten days; but this has been so long said, that I begin to despair of any opportunity offering 'till the whole is over. The Turks have already got a drubbing at Chotsin. If I should not arrive 'till all is over I have made a wise journey of it. I believe it would break my heart, for I have an unspeakable curiosity to see this campaign, though in fact I believe it will be but a ridiculous one. If not quite like that of Harlequin and Scapin, it will resemble that of Wilkes and Talbot.* The Russians can gain nothing by beating their enemy, and the Turks are confoundedly afraid. I wish by practice to make myself a soldier for purposes honest, but which I shall not mention.

I think, after the campaign, of passing through Hungary and spending the ensuing winter in the south of Italy, Sicily, or some of the Islands in the Icarian, or Ægean Sea. You are a scholar and know where these seas are. As to England, I am resolved not to set my foot in it, till the virtue which I believe to exist in the body of the people can be put in motion. I have good reasons for it: my spirits and temper were

[* The papers entitled the "North Briton," written by Wilkes, occasioned a duel between him and Lord Talbot.]

much affected by the measures which I was witness of, —measures moderate, laudable, and virtuous in comparison of what has been transacted since. To return solemn thanks to the Crown for the manifestly corrupt dissipation of its enormous revenues, and an impudent demand on the public to repair this dissipation, is pushing servility farther than the rascally Senate of Tiberius was guilty of. In this light it is considered by all those I converse with of every nation, even those who have the least idea of the dignity of liberty. The Austrians and Russians laugh and hoot at us; in fine, it is looked upon as the consummation of human baseness—as the *coup de grace* to our freedom and national honour.

You will say it is being a pleasant correspondent to give you my comments on what passes under your own eyes, and being entirely silent on the transactions of this country, which you may be supposed to have some curiosity to be acquainted with. You will scarcely think me serious, when I assure you that I am as totally a stranger to 'em as yourself, as any man in England, as my Lord Mayor Humphrey Gates I am sure must know fifty times more of the matter. I see that the country is in one general state of confusion, filled with devastation and murder. I hear every day of the Russians beating the Confederates, but as to what the Russians, what the Confederates, what the body of the nation propose, I am utterly ignorant, though no more I believe than they are themselves. Their method of carrying on war is about as gentle as ours was in America with the Shawenese and Dellawars. The Confederates hang up all the Russians (generally by the feet) who fall into their clutches, and the Russians put to the sword the Confederates. The Russian Cossacks have an admirable *sang froid* in these executions. The other day at a place called Rava, forty or fifty Confederates were condemned to the bayonet, but as they were tolerably well dressed, they were desired to strip for the ceremony, the Cossacks not choosing to

make any holes in their coats. The situation of the King is really to be lamented. Notwithstanding he wears a Crown, he is an honest virtuous man, and a friend to the rights of mankind. I wish we could persuade a prince of my acquaintance, who is taught (as far as he can be taught anything,) to hate them, to exchange with him. I know a nation that could spare a whole family, mother and all to the Poles, and only take in exchange this one man.

I could say many things on this subject, *digna literis nostris, sed non committenda ejusmodi periculo, ut aut interire aut aperiri aut intercipi possint.*

I hope your kindness has not entailed any trouble upon you with respect to my affairs. I hope Mr Ayre has been punctual in his payment. I wrote to him from London acquainting him with your powers. If you should pass by Mr Hoare's, I beg you will tell him that I writ to him from Munich, requesting him to send me if possible a letter of credit to Warsaw, and to give credit to a Captain William Spry for surveying my lands in St John's. How does the hallowed Juliet? It is inconceivable how much I am interested for the success and welfare of that girl. If she does not succeed (but this is impossible) I wish you could persuade her to marry me and settle in America. My respects to Mrs Coleman, and that I am most sincerely hers. Adieu, my dear friend, *et tibi persuadeas te à me fraterne amari.*

CHARLES LEE.

My love to Rice; and that when he can find time and matter I wish he would write. The best news he can send me, is his being married to the Princess of Wales, or any Widow with vast interest and income. Are the women blind or mad, in not seizing so inestimable a prize?

Direct to me chez le Prince General de Podolie, Varsovie. You know Fawkner? Ask him if he did not receive a long letter from me from this place. I am

apprehensive that it has miscarried; for the posts are frequently cut off by the Confederates. Tell him from me (but this I request you will not mention to a third person) that I hope he will not sell any land to purchase a company. He had better borrow the money; all I can muster shall be at his service, which will go a good way. I forgot to mention this in my letter. For God's sake make Rice procure me one of Elliot's dragoon casks; if Sir William Erskine is about town he may ask him for one in my name; it is for the King of Poland. It must be sent to Mr Montague's in Lincoln's Inn-fields. Let your letters be as long as possible, and let them have in them as much of Juliet as possible.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

[July, 1769.]

[*Extracts.*]

I have been in this place three months waiting for an opportunity to join the Russian army—a very safe one will now offer in ten or twelve days—the present Ambassador is to join his Regiment. He will have a strong escort. I am happily very well acquainted with him and I believe am a sort of favorite of his. He is a good sort of man, has wit, knowledge and courage—in short a man of that stamp whose friendship gives one credit and pleasure.

The King received me with the cordiality and goodness which I expected from his noble steady and frank character. He treats me more like a brother than a Patron and Master. He this week intends honoring me with the rank of Major General—this is really an honor, for altho' amongst the Poles, many indifferent subjects, from the nature of the government, arrive at a still higher rank, yet the foreigners who have ob-

tained it have been men of unexceptionable character in the services in which they have been engaged. This testimony of so excellent a Prince's esteem flatters me extremely. He is indeed an excellent Prince. He is worthy of being the chief magistrate of a better nation. I know a nation that is worthy of a better chief magistrate than it possesses. Could they not make an exchange?

* * * * *

I am not surprised at Lady Sarah's flight. I knew the woman. Nor can be grieved at it. My soul is so sick of publick griefs it has no room for private ones. I think it right the corporal prostitution of our Women sh^d go hand in hand with the political prostitution of our Men and I thank Heaven I never was acquainted with so young a Man who was equally prostitute with our Cousin.

FRAGMENT OF A JOURNAL.

June ye 20th 1769 We pass'd the Vistula and lay that night at Prague.

Ye 21st—Warsaw was allarm'd by a large body of Confederates who approached within two Polish miles of the city—We sent over to secure the City half our Cossacks and infantry—

22^a—The Confederates were repulsed by By Brantitzky—Warsaw quieted our Escort return'd—Our Escort consisted of 600 Cossacks 300 Carboniers—300 Infantry—We marched this day 5 German miles to a village called Glinianki—the situation of which is in a wood—

23^a. We marched at four in the morning thro' a Wood to a little Town called Latovicse—situated on the banks of a small river Svidar—

24th. We march at four in the morning and march 5 miles thro a very fine country part wood and part plain

abounding in pasture and corn to a village call'd Grezocwka—the woods so open that any sort of Troops may act—the trees of oak with some few pines.

[The above in "*Trash Book*" preceded and followed by French exercises. This book also contains numerous extracts in various languages, chiefly French and English. There are a few Greek words and some Italian verses—all in the handwriting of General Lee.]

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Muncaes in Hungary
Sept^r. ye 30th [1769.]

D^R SISTER,

I am just arriv'd at this place after a difficult journey thro the Mountains, for I durst take no other way, the confederates having cut off all communication. I thought of proceeding strait to Buda, for the baths which are good for Rheumatism and relax—two evils with which I have been much afflicted during the whole campaign, which has been tedious unedifying, and not very glorious from the fruits—tho' in all the skirmishes and battles, if they deserve that name, We have been victorious. We had a cursed deal of rain, and were a great part of the time without tents, the water very bad, and the little wine we had worse. I have learnt something but not much. I knew before that blockheads in command cou'd render abortive the valour of troops. I am here in a very foolish situation. I am oblig'd to wait a fortnight or twenty days for a passport from Vienna, and I have no money nor can procure any. I am oblig'd to sell my horses, and with this money make what shift I can. I think of passing this winter in the kingdom of Naples, and being with you in the beginning of Summer. I hope that a winter bathing in the Sea in that warm climate will brace my body, which is really in a wretch'd state—Write to me, directed to the Ambassador at Vienna—I can say no more—As this letter such as it is is called for—Adieu, My love to my

Aunts, Cousins, and all those you think are or should be favourites.

Yours D^r Sister,

Most affectionately

C. LEE.

PASSPORTS.

WHEREAS the Bearer of these Charles von Lee Commissioned General and Adjutant of His Majesty the King of Poland has arrived here from the Russian Armee, and having been detained by a severe sickness of which he has so far recovered as to prosecute his voyage to Cashau, agreeable to the Orders of his Excellency Count Esterhazy General and Field Marshal Lieutenant.

Therefore all military as well as civil authority are hereby required, to let the said General Von Lee pass free and unmolested with his Servants and Horses, and to assist him in the prosecution of his intended voyage—

Signed Munckaws the 29th 8^{bre}

JOSEPH VON OROSZ

Colonel Commandant of the Regiment of Count of Gyulaish, of their Roman Imperial Royal & Apostolic Majesties.

1769

Whereas Charles von Lee, General and Adjutant of his Majesty the King of Poland by order of his Excellency the Count Esterhazy, General and Field Marshal Lieutenant, and with the permission of von Orosz, Colonel Commandant of the Regiment of Gyulaish, intends to go to Cashau, therefore the honorable Quartermasters are required to furnish him with four harnessed

horses, and the necessary assistance of men, to the requisite station at p^r florin,

Given at Munckaes the 29th October 1769, In absence of von Romern, Field and War Commissary

JOHN PHILIP FREDERIC
Field Provost

Underneath is an order for the horses in the Hungarian language.

Emeree Count Esterhazy von Galantha actual Chamberlain to their Roman Imperial, Royal and Apostolic Majesties, General Field Marshal Lieut & actual Colonel of a Regiment of Husars &c.

Whereas General Charles Lee is going from this place to Vienna by the way of Ofen, and has requested of me a passport. Therefore all and sundry the military Officers and Privates under my command are hereby required and commanded, and all other persons are requested to let the said General Charles Lee not only pass safe and unmolested, but to assist him in the prosecution of the same,

Given at Cashau the 29th Nov. 1769

E. ESTERHAZY.

TO SIR CHARLES DAVERS.

Vienna, Dec. 24th 1769.

MY DEAR DAVERS,

Tho' I have been rendered almost incapable of writing by a dreadful fit of sickness which has left on me so total a relax, dispiritness, and apathy, that I am unequal to the least consistence of thought or action of any kind, I can scarcely pardon myself for not mustering up resolution to inform my best friend, and old comrade, that I am still in the land of the living. I

writ to Coleman some days ago chiefly on business, with two or three additional lines acquainting him with my illness and present situation.

It would be tedious to give you my history since I left Warsaw; let it suffice that I set out with Prince Repnin the late ambassador to Poland, that we did not overtake the army on the Polish side the Neister, it was advanced two days march on Moldavia, and by what miracle we reached it I am at loss to expound, as the whole country was filled with Tartars to the right, to the left, on every side of us; however we did after being in a cursed sweat for two days and nights without a guide in that wild country, and fancying every bush a Tartar, stumble upon the army. The very day after our arrival we had a very smart engagement with the Seraskier, who attacked us as we were issuing out of a ravine, at the head of fifty thousand cavalry. He fell chiefly on the left wing of the advanced corps (where I happened to be mounted most superbly on a cart horse) the cossacks and hussars he had beat and drove back on our infantry, who were consequently thrown into great confusion. The Turks entered at this crisis, trampled down part of our infantry, and drove us all who were mounted, headlong into the ravine; but the valour and firmness of the Russian infantry is such, that thrown down, trampled upon, and wounded as they were, they fired on the backs of the pursuing Turks, and on the faces of those who were advancing, which together with the steepness and difficulty of the ravine, checked their progress till the second line of infantry consisting of eight thousand men were to form on the other margin of the ravine, (which was very narrow) and by a well directed and heavy fire obliged them to retreat. Our whole infantry passed the ravine, formed an oblong square, and in this order, notwithstanding the repeated attacks of two days successively, gradually gained one eminence after another, and took possession of their camp on the heights of Chotzim; part of the Turkish army threw

themselves into the fortress, the rest contrived to join the grand vizier; but I am getting into a detail; to be short, we attempted to take the place by force of cannon, but (as we had no pieces heavy enough for battering works of so great strength) in vain; we then converted it into a blockade, but when the grand vizier and Tartar chan arrived with a hundred and seventy thousand men, we were obliged to collect our force (which was reduced to forty thousand) into one camp; here we waited six days in hopes through confidence in numbers, he would have attacked us in our camp, which was very strong; this he did not seem inclined to do, but why we did not attack him (for by his strange position he exposed his whole army to almost certain perdition) I cannot conceive. At length through want of forage and excessive bad weather, we were obliged to repass the Niester, which retreat was disposed and executed in so masterly a manner, that we did not leave a single man, a single horse behind, though our rear was attacked by at least sixty thousand cavalry, and a considerable corps of infantry.

Of what happened on the Polish side the Niester, you may have seen a pretty just account in the papers; but as none has appeared with respect to what passed on the Moldavian, I could not help giving you this sketch of it.

I left the army before the last affair happened and the abandoning of Chotzim, as I was advised to cross the mountains before it was too late, and try the waters of Buda, which are esteemed infallible for relax and rheumatism; to these two agreeable companions was added a slow fever; I had 'em all upon me before the campaign, but by bad water, worse wine, and lying in the mud without a tent, they were greatly improved; however I contrived to reach Hungary, but in the first town of that country they united their forces, I was delirious for eight days, and given over for three weeks, but the toughness of my stamina (which undoubtedly nature has conferred on me with a generous hand) got

the better of the beastly ignorance of a surgeon to destroy me. I contrived to get out of that miserable village to a decent town called Cushem, where I fell into better hands, and after a month's stay acquired strength sufficient to reach Vienna. My intentions were to go to some small town in Italy to live very coolly and regularly, ride constantly, acquire strength and brace myself; but I am detained for want of my baggage and want of credit.

I writ to Coleman on this subject; my two mortgages I fancy have been remiss on this head, otherwise I should have a considerable sum in Mr Hoare's hands. As the forms of the affidavits are in my trunks (which I expect here) necessary for the receipt of my half pay, I must beg you will advance to Mr Hoare, 'till I can send you the papers signed, two hundred pounds, the half pay due is more; my inclination would carry me to England, but I am afraid I should not have resolution to observe the necessary regimen, so will attempt re-establishing myself first.

I am sorry to see Suffolk so infamously silent when other counties are acting so gloriously. I begin to think my cousin a proper representative of 'em. The D—— your quondam friend is really a noble youth, the qualities of Sejanus, Tigellinus, Empson, and Dudley, seem all to be united in his grace at an age when most men are troubled with some of those ridiculous qualms called conscience, honour, or at least decorum; if the axe is not applied to his neck, it is laid to the root of our liberties, national honor, and importance; there is no medium; for my own part, I will to speak impudently after Brutus, resign all things of Rome and find out some spot *ubi liber ero, ubi libertas erit, ibi mihi Roma erit.*

America has I think a chance of emerging from ministerial oppression; on this I fix my hopes. I wish dear Davers you would write a line to my sister informing her of my state and situation. I shall in a post or two write to her and Lord Thanet, but I have

exhausted all my spirits in paying this tribute to my most sincere love and friendship for you.

I beg my love to Lord Thanet, to Fawkener, Hall, and Phipps; I have not received a line from any of them since I left England (except Fawkener) though I writ to you all; but I suppose the rascally confederates have prevented my receiving what was writ.

I wrote to Mrs. Blake, I beg my respects to her, and intreat she will read a chapter of Catharine Macculey every day to all her friends and admirers who are in Parliament.

Adieu my dear friend, and believe me to be, most affectionately yours,

CHARLES LEE.

I am heartily glad of Patterson's promotion; wish him joy in my name, and recommend to him the superintendence of my estate in St. John's; I wish he would write to me, and tell me what is best to be done with it.

TO GEORGE COLMAN (THE ELDER).

Vienna, March y^e 16th 1770.

MY D^r COLEMAN,

As I do not know who M^r Gratton* is, or how to direct to him, I must beg you will thank him for his letter. I suppose he is a person you have employed to superintend my small affairs. I dare say he is able and honest from your confidence, and I am extremely happy not only on my own account, but on yours principally, that you will be discharged from any farther trouble. He will oblige me in desiring M^r Hoare to

[* Garton was the name of the person to whom this paragraph alludes; he was Treasurer of Covent Garden Theatre, and a private agent of Mr. Colman.]

send a letter of credit for me to Leghorn, as I shall certainly set out in three days for Italy. I have recovered my force in some degree, but am yet far from right; my plan is to bathe in the sea for six weeks, and then go through a course of waters at Viterbo, or some others that are recommended to me in Upper Valois. I should have liked to embark in the Russian fleet; some days I find myself in health, spirits, and strength, sufficient to undertake it; but I am *journalier*, and on the whole, therefore, had better let it alone; but I shall regulate myself by my future feelings.

I long to be with you in England—I mean with you, and four or five whom I sincerely love; but dread the agitations I should be thrown into by the too slow progress of public virtue. Let the hallowed Sir George Savile, honour, and the genius of England, triumph over tyranny, corruption, Grafton, North, and the devil; and I will hasten to participate the joy: or should the sword of our good angel be unsheathed, my puny dagger shall contribute its mite of annoyance to the breast of despotism and wickedness. You will excuse my not delivering myself like a man of this world;—I never can on so heating a subject.

I wish I could muster up wit or news to entertain you, but I am unfurnished with both, unless you will consider as an article of news my being enamoured of a royal family, but I really am smitten with the reigning one of this country. The women are all divinely handsome, gracious, unaffected, and civil, without the air of protection. The Emperor will, I believe, one day make a figure, at least comparatively with the sad automata of sceptered herd. He sent for me the other day, and suffered me to converse with him for an hour, as he was curious to have a detail of the Turkish War. I was not much surprised at his having so good an idea of this, but could not help admiring his general knowledge of what has passed in America, of the geography of the country, and what is more, of the interest of Great Britain with respect to it. In short, I have

heard of Monarchs, who are more concerned in the subject, not quite so well acquainted with it. Since I began this letter I am told a circular letter of credit will be better, on Leghorn, Genoa, and Milan: if Mr. Gratton will inform M^r Hoare of it, he will oblige me. If Davers is in Town let him know I have received his letter, and will answer it from Venice. Ask my Lord Thanet if he has received a long letter from me. I wish you would make Rice write to me; he has time, you have none. Let him give me the politics and the progress of cuckoldom; let him direct to me at Venice. I find by M^r Gratton's letter M^r Eyre has not yet paid; he must do it. Adieu, my D^r Coleman.

Yours most affectionately

C. LEE.

My service to M^{rs} Coleman; and if you see Fawcner desire he will write to me at Venice. I have sent him two letters, one to Hall, without receiving an answer.

TO SIR CHARLES DAVERS.

Florence, May 14th, 1770.

MY DEAR DAVERS,

Tho' I have been so long in answering your letter, I beg you will not conclude that it gave me no pleasure; every fresh assurance of your friendship (tho' I have no occasion for fresh assurance to be convinced of it) gives me unspeakable satisfaction. Every day I live my love for you acquires new force (perhaps from a cynical disposition) in comparing you with other men; I have long been acquainted with your private virtues, and am now, thank Heaven, confirmed in my opinion of your public virtue. I am very uneasy at your having any thoughts of quitting parliament. I know your reasons, but cannot approve of

'em. You think that as you are no speaker and have no turn for business, that you can contribute but little to stem the torrent of corruption and villainy, which at present seems to bear everything down before it; it is this indolent or despairing method of reasoning of several honest men (for I am persuaded that there are still several honest men) which has reduced us to the dreadful situation we are in at present.

You know that the God of the Jews, who must, or should have been a judge of the Jewish affairs, as he interfered in 'em so much, was of opinion that five righteous men were sufficient to save the rotten state of Gomorrah, and I do not find that he meant that they should be all speakers; besides the mass of the people of Gomorrah was entirely polluted, the mass of the English people certainly is not. I believe no body of people was ever possessed of more public virtue, which is manifest from all their proceedings; I conjure you therefore my dear friend not in despair to quit the deck and get under the hatches—hand a rope, work at the pump, do anything with good will and firmness, encourage others to do the same, and with so intrepid a pilot as Sir George Saville, the vessel may perhaps work into the harbour, notwithstanding the hellish treason of the major part of the crew. Consider moreover that the abandoning your post is not simply the loss of one man to the cause of virtue, but that it throws two into the scale of iniquity. Yours is a ministerial borough—the instant of your resignation, or rather desertion, the government (as they are pleased to call themselves) claps in your place a most assured scoundrel. I must therefore my dear school fellow and fellow soldier, my friend, entreat you over and over again, I must conjure you by the spirits of Cato, Brutus, Hampden and Sidney, by every thing that is divine and sacred, not to desert your post, but to give to the world as convincing testimonies as you have to me, of your virtue to persevere in your opposition until we are all buried in the last dyke of liberty. But I am running out of the sphere of a letter into an

enthusiastical rant. The journey, change of air, or something has made a wonderful alteration for the better in my health; nay I sometimes think that I am stronger, fresher and younger than I was before my illness. * * * * *

But I am going to bathe in the sea of Leghorn, which will quite set me up; when I am sufficiently braced, I perhaps shall set out for England, where I intend my principal residence shall be Rushbrooke. Did you mention anything to Patterson of my St. John's estate? If he is not set out, I wish he would write a line to me, inclosed to Sir John Deck, English consul at Leghorn, to which place you will likewise direct. Is Fawkener in England, or where is he? I have writ to him twice, but no answer. Have you received the powers for my half pay from Lord Thanet, to whom I enclosed 'em? If you should see Colman, I wish you would desire him to make Mr. Hoare send me some credit to Leghorn.

If I was quite well I perhaps should embark with the Russian fleet for the Morea.

Adieu my dear Davers,
from your ever affectionate
CHARLES LEE.

I wish I could hear from Hall, or know where he was.

To ———.

[Leghorn, Italy, 1771.]

MY D^R SIR,

It was the custom of Queen Anns Ministry to write at the great Lord Peterborough not to him, for as He was eternally upon the wing They cou'd take no standing aim—as I have the honour of resembling that wonderfull Person in my vagabund courses it is impossible

to catch me standing—your most kind and friendly letter has hit me only a few days since at Leghorn where I am making an experiment of sea-bathing, and as I think it has done me considerable service, I shall try it some time longer—tho not in this place of which the relaxing society and conversation must certainly counteract the bracing quality's of the water. I live chiefly *cum portitotibus*—an order of men never remarkable for wit learning or sentiments—why is not the sea at Vienna? or rather why am I such a blockhead as not to suppose that a society which gave me such satisfaction must be better both for my soul and body—though the water was fresh—than salt water with conversation *sine grano salis*—believe me, Dr Sir. I most sincerely regret having left Vienna—I pay no compliment to it when I say I prefer it to all the places (particularly capitals) which I know and believe me farther when I say that your society constituted not the least of its agreements. I love your chearfullness, admire your understanding, knowledge, and feelings—feelings I say (for I don't admit of the word taste) and I honour your liberal way of thinking—particularly with respect to the rights of mankind. I beg you will not think I flatter for in the Language of my divine Shakspeare what advancement can I hope from thee? I intreat you will assure the circle of our common friends of my Idolatry for Vienna—I mean the families of Hurach, Shunbrowne, and the Spanish Ambassador. I cannot find terms to express my love and veneration for 'em—I must beg you will assure 'em of this therefore in your terms—assure 'em likewise that if they will encourage me by saying thro' your channel that They have not already had too much of me, I will pay 'em another visit and that perhaps a very long one—this I undoubtedly will do if my American affairs do not absolutely require my presence on that Continent—as to England, I have forsworn it—if it is my fate to live in a Country govern'd not by establish'd laws but by the will of men—I will certainly chuse a master who hits

my fancy—and it wou'd be flying in the face of God and Nature not to prefer your respectable sensible virtuous master to our despicable and tho stupid at the same time not innoxious dolt—it was some consolation to the generous few of the Romans who survived the liberties of their Country that it was a Julius Cæsar, a man endued with more than mortal talents who subverted the noble fabrick, and the Patriots of England might plead in their excuse that it was Cromwell who overreach'd 'em—but that a reptile who has no pretension to be suppos'd endued with animation unless from some symptoms it betrays of dissimulation obstinacy and vindictiveness shou'd be able to encompass the ruin of a sensible and spirited nation is too much to bear—perhaps I despair too soon—but notwithstanding the incredible the accursed profligacy of those dens of thieves the Lds and Commons, We ought not to think everything lost—whilst the mass is untainted there are hopes of salvation—nothing but a proscription more bloody and extended than that of the execrable triumvirate can insure despotism—but I must avoid rhapsody into which this subject always hurries me—

Your friend Cochi was so exceedingly ill when I was at Florence that I cou'd not have the pleasure of seeing him—it is not certain that I shall return to that place, indeed I know not to what place I shall bend my steps, but wherever I am I hope to hear from you—my letters must be enclosed to S^r John Dick Consul at Leghorn—You have I confess little encouragement to give yourself this trouble, as I think I every day grow a duller and duller correspondent. I cannot eke out a scroll of three lines unless by disgorging my spleen against our scoundrel Court—or by a repetition of how much I love those whom I do love, in which class you hold a considerable rank—Adieu My D^r Sir,

Cura te valeas et escribas

CHARLES LEE.

I desire my love to the little Countess of Clari and

to Langlois--whom I cannot help loving tho' his head is so fill'd with ministerial ordure--tell him that I din'd with a young set of English at Florence, with whom I pass'd for a monarchical man if not a Courtier by my excessive moderation.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Leghorn, March ye 27th, 1771.

MY D^R SISTER.

After a long tour thro' Calabria, Sicily, and Malta, I am arriv'd at this place—My busyness in those places was partly curiosity, and partly to bath in the sea, as long as possible in the Winter, in order to recover the strength and spirits which I had lost by that infernal Hungarian fever, but I don't think it has done me all the service which I had flatter'd myself with. I embark here today with Capt. Braitwaite of the Liverpool for Minorca and Gibralter, after having seen these places, I intend making for Spa, as fast as possible, where I hope to find service from the waters—from thence I shall set out for England—this will be I suppose in Autumn. I writ to you from Messina by a Merchant Ship, but suppose you did not receive it as I find no letter in this place, to which I desir'd you wou'd direct—indeed it is now a twelvemonth that I have not heard a word from you, Davers, Lord Thanet, or Coleman, in short from any correspondent on earth—You will perhaps think this a lie, and that I never wrote, but I cou'd produce many witnesses, or in the great sublime Cumberland stile, cou'd take my Bible oath. I beg you will write to me at Minorca, from whence your letter will find its way to whatever place I direct my steps. I was desirous of sending you some wine from this place, but it has been so bad these last two

seasons, that there is danger of its not resisting the sea. I shall therefore send you some Cherrie from Cadiz, which runs no risk of spoiling. As we are in a great hurry sending our things on board, you must excuse this shabby short letter only let me intreat you to assure my Aunts and Cousins of my sincerest affection; and believe

Me to be most ardently

My D^r Sister Yours

CHARLES LEE.

To JOHN HALL [STEVENSON].

Hothfield, July y^e 30th 1771.

MY D^R HALL,

Fame (good or bad is nothing to the purpose) of the right or the wrong sort—whom I have been running after all my life in every part of the globe must be a more abominable bitch than fortune herself if she has not appriz'd you of my Honour's arrival in this Island—however lest she shou'd have been guilty of this monstrous negligence I think it necessary to inform you that I have been above six weeks in England, that I was much mortify'd in not catching you by accident in London, as it is not certain that I shall have time to pay the tribute of love and esteem out of the great stock which I profess to have [for you] viva voce at your Palace (for such I hear you are swelling it into) at Shelton, my intention being to repair to Spa, in hopes of bracing my frame (which has been so damnably shatter'd by my Hungarian fever—I find myself indeed infinitely better since a slight fit of the gout which laid me up for some days in London—if I alter my mind with respect to this expedition, I shall uninvited pack myself off for your Castle—I don't

know whether you will be charmed with my conversation, tho' I have pick'd up so much matter in my travels that I am almost at a little loss for that as Doctor Martin, not quite so many bright sallies but considerably more narrative—in the interim 'till I can find a patient to practice upon, I am obliged to give myself vent in the publick advertizer—You may have seen the character of the Emperor—but the blockhead of a Printer has made it really worse than it was by disarranging the order of the parts—I am about a more important work, in which I wish you would assist me, or rather take upon yourself the better part—the plan is singular enough, it is the history of the Emperor Claudius and his nephew and immediate Successor Nero—professedly in imitation of M^r David Hume's history of the house of Stewarts, wherein I pretend to moderate by decent softenings and coloring the ill humour and prejudice of mankind with regard to those injur'd characters—it is likewise dedicated to the same M^r Hume—but I will send you the dedication by which you will judge of the scheme. I have been down with Davers, nothing can scarcely make me so happy as the constant even spirits in which I found him, for I think you will agree with me that he is deserving of the greatest good to be met with in this beldam planet, and of all the good which she affords constant even spirits—is certainly the greatest—one of his merits is the great esteem he has for you—what is become of Scrope? I was much tickled at his cunning method of finding out who lov'd him and who not. I saw some of your imitations of Horace. I take it ill you have not address'd one of your epistles to me—orna me per Deos oro—do you come to Town in Winter? I hope not—for I wou'd visit you in the Country in Spring or y^e beginning of summer I believe I shall take a trip to America—let me hear from you—direct to this place that is Hothfield near Ashford, Kent—tho' I shou'd be at Spa it will find me out—if I have time I will write out my dedication by

the next post—Adieu, my D^r Hall and believe me to be sincerely and affectionately

Yours

C. LEE.

I wish you wou'd make the dedication fuller.

AN EPISTLE TO DAVID HUME, ESQ.

[*Referred to in the foregoing.*]

SIR,

In reading history, nothing has so frequently shocked me as the disrespectful and irreverent manner in which divers writers have spoke of crowned heads. Many princes, it must be owned, have acted, in some instances not altogether as we could wish; but it is the duty of every honest man, and friend to royalty, the great source of human happiness, to draw a veil over their weakness; and if not able entirely to justify some parts of their conduct, he may at least, by the aid of certain *managed terms* and *decent softenings*, in a great measure prevent the evil effects which a coarse, and I may say barbarous relation of facts is apt to have on weak and vulgar minds. The passion, prejudice, and party heat of several who style themselves historians, have, I make no doubt, been the principal causes of the numberless murmurs, insurrections, rebellions, dethronements, expulsions, regicides, which have disgraced the history of mankind, and more particularly of this infatuated country.

On this principle, sir, you will readily believe, that the satisfaction I have received from your incomparable History of the House of the Stuarts, is of the highest kind; that I have perused it, and re-perused it a thousand times, and always with fresh pleasure; and that I ardently wish the youth of our country were

never suffered to read any other ; a rule which I am charmed to hear is observed by the most exalted personage in the kingdom, as well in virtue as in rank, whenever he condescends to unbend his mind from his severe studies and occupations by dipping into the annals of his predecessors ; and it is to this rule, perhaps, that we are indebted for the prodigious enlargement of his mind in so tender an age that all Europe stands astonished at it.

How complaisant, how gentle, how guarded, how humane, how polite are your phrases, in laying before us the transactions of those good, though perhaps misguided, princes ! How calculated are your comments to mitigate the seditious spirit of the mad multitude ! Had you written an hundred years ago, I am persuaded you would not only have prevented the growth of those horrible opinions, (alas ! too prevalent,) that kings are not only responsible, but punishable for their delinquencies towards their people ; that Charles the First met with no harder fate than he deserved, and that his two sons ought, in justice, to have made the same exit. I say, sir, had you written an hundred years ago, you might not only have prevented the growth of such monstrous notions ; but, probably, have checked those furious principles which ended in driving from the throne of his ancestors, to the indelible disgrace of these nations, a prince replete with every royal virtue.

In short, sir, I am so much in love with the scheme of your history, I am so convinced that no task can be equally laudable in a philosopher, an historian, and a gentleman, as to endeavour, to eradicate from the minds of our youth all prejudices and prepossessions against the memory of deceased, and the character of living princes ; and by obviating the cavils and malice of republican writers, to inspire mankind with more candour in judging of the actions and government of sovereigns, that I am determined to follow so bright an example, and exert the utmost of my zeal, skill, and

abilities, (indeed far short of yours,) to rescue from the unmerited odium under which they lie, two much injured characters in history; I mean the Emperor Claudius Cæsar and his immediate successor Nero, whose foibles and indiscretions have been swelled up into vices by the austerity and malevolence of Tacitus, Suetonius, and others, (the Rapins, Ludlows, and M'Cauleys of those days,) who wrote under succeeding monarchs of a different family; but as the motives for such virulent proceedings are now ceased, and as men's minds ought to be a little cooler, we may venture to pronounce the disposition of these princes, (though I do not think they were faultless, or altogether well-advised,) to have been good.

Should the ungenerous and bigots in party raise a clamour, should they exclaim that its being a pander to despotism, and an enemy to the rights of humanity, the endeavouring to gloss over vices and enormities so manifest, as they pretend, by a concurrence of facts, vouched by the most authentic records, I shall console myself, sir, with your approbation, and that of the generous few who think with you, and shall flatter myself that the attempt, whatever may be the merit of the execution, will recommend me, along with the Smollets, Scotts, Murphys, and Johnsons, to the notice of a Court which seems to pique itself in rewarding the champions and apologists of unpopular men and measures, in proportion as their labours are unsuccessful with the narrow-minded public.

Yours, &c.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Hothfield in Kent near Ashford,
August 9th [1771].

D^R SISTER,

I wrote to you about six weeks ago from Rushbrook, but have received no answer, which I am heartily

glad of, for it furnishes me with subject of accusing you of being a negligent correspondent, which I have long wish'd to do. However, if you will promise to be more punctual for the future, I will forgive you what's past. I long to know whether you have writ a civil line to Davers on your becoming Godmother to his son, as I requested you to do. If you have not already done it, I most earnestly conjure you not to delay. Every thing that can give him pleasure, Every thing that can in the least flatter him, I ought and wish to bring about, as almost the whole friendship, affection and love which my soul is capable of entertaining for the male part of the human race is concentred in him—in short in Montaigne's odd ungrammatical (tho' significant jargon) He is not my friend, He is another me. I beg therefore as you have always profess'd and demonstrated so true a zeal for the original Me, you will not be wanting to the Duplicate. I have been a month here with Lord Thanet. He is an invalid with the gout. Upon my word he is singularly fortunate in a Wife, and particularly as she is a woman of great fashion and family, which you know is not the class of women nowadays remarkable for furnishing good domestick wives. I never met, I think, with a more even temper, join'd to perpetual chearfulness and really an extraordinary understanding. She is totally void of airs, vanity, coquetry, and the spirit of intrigue, if I may judge from what I have seen. They have a very beautiful family of Children, and do not spoil 'em. We have two Lady Finches here, very good sort of young women, but a great deal too formal. The day after tomorrow we set out for Margate, from whence I believe I shall cross over to Spa, for tho' I have a most canine appetite, I get no strength. Indeed my appetite is too great to be natural, it is like our Uncle Bunbury's or his son's, apropos, do you ever see Sir Charles, or know anything of him? He is a very extraordinary character for an Englishman the more I see of him or hear of him, the more I am amaz'd. I

shall surprise you with some traits. Has my aunt Williams rec^d my letter? I have commission'd my friend Butler to convey her a few bottles of nice wine. I beg once more my love to her and to all the tribe of Townshend and Gwynynog, to Patty Price. I remember at Wrexham to have promis'd her some memento of my friendship. Tell me what I should send her which will be the most acceptable. I will most willingly do it.

Adieu, my D^r Sister,
Yours affectionately
C. LEE.

Direct to me at Ld. Thanet's, Hothfield, Kent, it will always find me. Have you seen in the papers my character of the Emperor. I shall give the Public some more of my ebullitions soon; it is a noble way of venting our foul humors. The damn'd Printer disarrang'd the parts—otherwise I am vain enough to think the performance wou'd not have been bad.

TO CLOTWORTHY UPTON.

Dijon Janry y^e 18th [1772.]

MY D^r UPTON:

I have receiv'd your Uptonical (that is your cordial frank friendly) letter—I am extremely happy that you express an inclination to have me with you, and can assure you that my wishes to be with you are very ardent—it is on the whole a damn'd thing to have horses, my companion's are unfortunately ill, which circumstance together with the badness of the weather (for We have had a great deal of snow) has persuaded us to engage our Lodgings one month longer—When that is out I am determin'd to set out immediately for

Geneva, where I hope to find my friend, his Wife, and son (of whom I wish you both sincerely joy) in perfect health and spirits—You must not mistake—My Companion is not a young lad who is abroad for his education—but an officer nearly as old as myself—who has leave of absence from his Regiment and chuses to pass his time of leave abroad, but wishes en passant to pick up something of the language, which is very possible as he has a good ear, and knows the grammar: there is another who has joined us and is really a very pretty lad. He has a good fortune, pretty figure, excellent temper, and an understanding above par. I shall bring him down to you, and wou'd wish to fix him there—now, my D^r Friend, with respect to myself—is the famous Tissot at Geneva or Laussane? I must have some advice—I am in a strange way—I have an unnatural insatiable appetite, grow very weak, my eyes glassy, my complexion yellow, and am universally relaxed—the great quantities I eat turn not to nutriment—in short if I was much attach'd to this beldam planet, the earth—I should think myself in a wofull condition—but I would willingly gather health to look out for a more honorable exit than that in a stinking winding sheet—but have you a good doctor? let me know by the return of the post—Your Countrymen go on vigorously—They push that scoundrel Townshend—God send 'em perseverance—but I am somewhat suspicious the great principle of liberty seems to be worn out in this Hemisphere—I long to see the old Lord Stanhope, for if this principle exists, I am taught to think it is in his breast—I wish you may be able to read this scroll, for I am so tired with Tennis that I can scarcely hold up my head—but from my heart, I declare myself, my D^r Upton, to be most truly and affectionately yours

CHARLES LEE.

I beg my respects to M^{rs} Upton—it may appear like flattery to say I like much a Person I have seen but

once—but I value myself in the science of physiognomy—& am very apt to pronounce and form judgment from the first sight.

TO SIR CHARLES DAVERS.

Lyons, March the 26th, 1772.

MY DEAR DAVERS,

I wrote to you three weeks ago, and discovered yesterday that my letter had been lost through my negligence in not franking it; shall therefore send you as near a copy of it as I am able from memory.

Nothing could make me so happy as your being brought in on the shoulders of your county as their representative; but if the least degree of expence, cabal, or even solicitation had been necessary, I am heartily glad that Holt (as I find by the public papers) is returned. I have not a very good opinion of mankind in general, and not a better of your country than the rest, yet I cannot help thinking that your character, your manners, your frankness, natural blunt good breeding, and your unostentatious hospitality, must triumph in the end. Continue therefore my dear friend the man you are, and I flatter myself (if the forms of our constitution are thought worth preserving) to see you the next parliament in the situation you wish. If your countrymen are so void of feeling and judgment as to prefer any rascally creature of that Grafton damn 'em, resolve to detach yourself even from your hereditary possessions, pack up your penates, and transfer them along with me to some climate and soil more friendly to the spirit of liberty. North America stretches forth her capacious arms, Switzerland, or even the little state of Lucca has room to admit a generous few; it is talking proudly you will say to rank myself in this class, but when men of the first

condition and property are valuing themselves on their zeal for slavery, why should not almost a beggar as I am, glory in being the reverse? More of these things another time. I am not determined on the place I shall move to from hence. My health has been of late better; whether it is the air or the charms of the country, I know not, that have given me spirits and vigour, but I have acquired 'em.

Dear Davers write a very long letter with all that is passing on the stages of St. James and St. Stephen. You will direct to Chez Messrs. Condere Pere et Fils a Lyons.

To whom has old Sycorax left the conduct of her cub's nose? A propos will you speak to Mr. Mure your neighbour on the subject of my money; whether he chuses to pay it in when the time expires, or continue it another year, on the same security.

Write to me immediately. My love to your family, for whom I interest myself as I know you love 'em.

Adieu my dear Davers.

C. LEE.

TO MISS SIDNEY LEE.

Lyons, March y^e 28th [1772.]

I believe I observ'd to you before, My D^r Sister, how Extreemly pleas'd I was with your being infected with my disease, the malady of not writing, as it prevents your reproaches. I wrote to you before I left England, with directions how your letters were to be address'd to me, but not a syllable have I rec^d. However don't try to make any excuses as I dare say I shall be even with you some time or other. My friend Butler and I arriv'd at Dijon without any moving accidents by flood or field, unless horses losing their shoes may be esteem'd such. We fix'd ourselves there for two months, not much to

our Emolument, Edification, or pleasure. I think on the whole he was not oversatisfy'd with his Expedition nor can I say that he had reason, for to speak honestly my society is not calculated at present to promote any of the three. I begin in my cooler candid moments to be sensible that my temper is alter'd for the worse, whether it is to disappointed ambition, too high an opinion of my own merit I cannot tell; but sometimes I am apt to flatter myself that the alteration which I am conscious of, may be attributed to a good principle, viz—the declension of publick virtue, and the giant strides which Tyranny is taking towards the annihilation of every thing that ought to be held dear by the sensible and manly part of human kind. But whatever the causes may be, I feel the effects, and I wish I only felt 'em myself, but I am afraid that those who by accident are much connected with me must feel 'em still more sensibly. I have just merit enough to condemn and detest myself, and to wish to throw myself at the feet of those whom my deportment must disgust and shock. Butler is certainly the most deserving of Bipedes and is worthy of friends whose minds are forever placid and benevolent, but enough of his good qualities and my bad. After having entertain'd you on the distemper of my mind, let me say something of my bodily disposition. I think I gave you an Account some time ago of my complaints not totally unlike those of our Uncle Bunbury, a most canine, insatiable appetite attended with weakness and low spirits, tho' it is not constant. I have entervals of a month when my appetite is moderate and my strength and spirits return. The air of this place has I think, been beneficial to me, the fits of this strange disorder have been shorter and less violent—but beneficial as it has been, I shall leave it soon and take a tour in the Cantons of Switzerland. The small ones I long to see, where the people are certainly happy, as they have neither Kings, Courts, nor Aristocrats; and where the Clergy are not taught to anathematize the Champions of their Country, and consecrate the Tyrants;

but my sole object is not to visit those bless'd regions of manly Democracy. I am paltry enough to admit into consideration my own individual interest; in short I intend to consult the famous Physician Tissot of Lausanne on the subject of my disorder. When I shall be in England, Heaven alone can tell. I have long explain'd to you the accurs'd feelings which flow upon my spirits from those corrupted sources of S^t Stephens and S^t James's. The consolation I might have received from the conversation of my Chester relations and Friends, I dare not yet avail myself of. I must continue therefore to play the Vagabond to dissipate and distract. My chief amusement is disgorging part of my spleen on paper. I am finishing a very bulky work which will afford fruitful subject of criticism to my Lords the Scotch Reviewers. It is entitled Remarks on David Hume's history of the House of the Stewarts, with a prefatory discourse address'd to the Officers of the Army. M^{rs}. McCauley and Dempster approve it. It is not very gentle and may pass with moderate men (that is men who are indifferent about the fate of their Country if they individually are not disturb'd) for seditious. Whatever it is, the Publick shall have it.

How does my Aunt Williams? I zealously wish her long life and health. She has great worth. How are the Townshends, male & female? The Gwynynog family and Charlotte amongst the rest? My love to 'em all, to Mrs. Hincks and Martha Price. You must direct to me Chez Mes^{ses} Condere Pere et Fils, Banquiers à Lyon. Wherever I am it will find its way to me. Adieu, My D^r Sister,

Yours most Sincerely and affectionately

C. LEE.

Write a great deal of News, publick and private. How go on Mr. Henry Bunbury and Spouse? I think they will make some figure, but what sort I know not.

FROM WALTER PATTERSON.

Island S^t John y^e 10th Nov. 1772.

MY DEAR LEE,

Of all men on earth you are the last from whom I expected to hear; or indeed of whom I expected to hear, unless it was in a paragraph of a foreign Gazette, that such a day Monsieur General Lee un Anglais was cut to pieces defending his Polish Majesty, or in some desperate uncommon aattck; or, which was full as likely, that you were hanged for treason, in some of the damned arbitrary governments you have been wandering through. But how surprised! when in place of this, I receive a flattering letter, *from you*, dated Dijon—surely Lee the climate of France has produc'd this wonderful effect. I am sure in old England, you wou'd never flatter any man; much less one whom you honour'd with your friendship. Do not you know how apt we all are to forget ourselves when in power? or upon any sudden elevation; and how very ready we are to believe all the handsome things, that even the most abject sycophants are pleased to bespatter us with. Then my friend, how much more dangerous must it be from a man, of whose understanding I have always had the highest opinion? and who is so remarkable for his candour and freedom of speech, that they are (to the disgrace of our day) well known to be his greatest enemies. In spite of what I say, I will acknowledge I am proud of your good opinion, tho' delivered in too flattering a style, but I hope it will have no other effect than to make me endeavour to deserve it.

Taking it for granted, that you will like to know how I bear my promotion, I will give you as impartial an account of it, in a few words, as it is possible for a man to give of himself. I feel myself dependant, and a slave to slaves; obliged to court, and flatter men whom I despise, both for their want of abilities, and

want of honesty. I hate power, and those in it, more and more every day. I am plainer in my table, and apparel than you ever knew me, without an attempt or a wish to be rich. I have children, and I feel they may one day be under another Governor, on the spot where their father once presided; this helps to make me careful and as tender as possible of those entrusted to my care. My actions are as publick as they can possibly be made. And I hope my children, nor friends, will never have reason to blush or be ashamed to hear of them. I find the care of a people, a more difficult thing than I imagin'd it to be; and I find myself very defective as a Legislator: the former, perhaps time may render more easy; and I am endeavouring to remedy the latter, by as close an application to study the *spirit* of the laws of my country, as is in my power; in the meantime I am cautious of doing much, least I may do more evil than good.

This, if I know anything of myself is truth—

How you will like the daubed portrait, I know not, nor whether or not I may not forfeit a part of your good opinion by the badness of the attempt.

Like the Priest, after christening my own child first, I now come to your business; and in the first place, I promise you if it be in my power to do any for you I will; and with more pleasure than you can ask me.

In the meantime I can answer you some of your queries to a greater certainty, by being here, than if I had received your letter in Suffolk street, where you directed it to me. You desire to know if it is worth your while to lay out any money on your lands in this Island. I answer yes. You have half of the very best lot on this Island, or at least as good as any; and were I in your circumstances I *would* be proprietor of the whole of it; in that manner I would lay out the first money. There are a good many French who live upon it already; but for want of titles to the land, they do not improve it as they might, these would commence a small rent immediately, for which reason you ought to

appoint an Agent, and if you do not like to purchase the other half, you ought to come to some agreement with S^r Francis M^cleane, either to have a division made of it, or to bear a share of the expenses but I would by all means recommend the former, that is to say to purchase the whole, or to have it divided. The kind of man, I would recommend to you as an Agent would be an English Farmer, an active Fellow, with a Genius a little above the common run of them, such a man as would not be so much guided by old custom as to attempt ploughing here in February, because he was used to do so at home, in short a man who can think a little, and accommodate both himself and his labour to the climate. As you have a plentiful fortune, no matter whether or not he has perhaps better not. To such a man you might give at an easy rent, as much land as he thought would make him a complete farmer. He ought to bring some servants with him, who ought to be bound for three or four years, he paying them yearly waiges, something more than they get in England; he ought to bring likewise all the iron parts of every kind of farming utensils and all necessary iron work for building himself a house, and beside that, either money or a credit to purchase cattle, and a year's provisions.

If you had such a man well settled, and it should be done in such a manner, that he might feel as few inconveniences as possible, he would soon bring you more, for you may depend upon it, the soil and climate both wou'd please him. He ought to have a power of Attorney to let your lands, and indeed as extensive an one as you from your knowledge of the man, wou'd think prudent to entrust him with.

But after all Lee, what is there to hinder you from taking a view of the place yourself, nay of bringing your own agent, don't you think, the cultivating your lands and improving your constitution and fortune, is a much more rational, and perhaps I might say sensible employment, than scampering over all the Continent of Europe in search of damn'd Hungarian fevers. Come

Lee, and leave Hume to cramb his history down the throat of his countrymen, for few others read it. You will find your gall bladder decrease in size very much, without writing strictures upon anything, or even abusing a king or a Barrington, as soon as you set foot upon this our free and hospitable coast: and to encourage you as I know you like good living, I will engage to give you as good beef, mutton, poultry, and salt fish, as you ever met with, and as my countrymen say, a hundred thousand welcomes.

But now Lee, after having written so much, in answer to your letter to me, and so much to answer nothing perhaps, let me ask you one serious question. Why did you write to Mr Smith that I owed you money, as a reason for not paying your quit rent? What could put such a thing into your head? for I will never believe you would write such a thing, knowing it to be true—and yet as it is not now, nor never was the case, I am a little surprised how you shou'd stumble on such a reason. If you will give yourself leave to reflect a little upon the matter you will recollect that the only moneys I ever had from you were (something near the sum you say I am in your debt) which I received as a part of your quota towards defraying the expence of taking up a tract of land for you in America, as you could not at that time advance the whole sum agreed on, which was £200, from each person concerned, and after my return I settled with you in London, and received what remained due me of your proportion of the money I expended in that fruitless expedition. If ever I received any more money from you at any other time, or on any other occasion, I do assure you it has totally escaped my memory, and I will very readily not only acknowledge my error, but pay you the debt if you can recall it to my mind by any one circumstance; but believing myself as I do to be right, I will tell you that you owe me still a further small sum on account of that expedition, about £8, which was your proportion of waiges which I paid

Sawyer, the Carpenter, I took out with me; after that settlement with you and some lawyers fees, I paid Mr Upton and which he had advanced. Thus I believe you will find our accounts to stand. And now taking it for granted, that you will be as tired with reading as I am with writing, by the time you get thus far I will finish by assuring you

I am your affectionate Friend and servant

W. PATTERSON.*

FROM JOHN HALL [STEVENSON].

Manchester, Jan. 28, 1773.

D^R SIR,

Y^R letter 20th ins. came to hand this morning. Kennedy was here the 20th & went off for Hallifax yesterday—His visit was to meet you, but purposes back again when he hears of y^r move this way. I wrote to him this day, and I suppose his letter to you will determine when we are to have the pleasure to see you—as for my part, I believe my residence will be about here till 10th April.

Your letter flatters me—I shall not answer that part of it till I shall shake you by the hand, and assure you how much I am

Y^R aff^c frd

JNO HALL

My last letter under cover to C. Vaughan—told me he could not find you

Col. Lee,

Mounts Coffee House, London.

[* Walter Patterson was appointed Captain General and Governor in chief in and over his Majesty's Island of St. John, &c., August 1, 1769. —*St. James Chronicle*, August 3, 1769.]

FROM CHARLES THOMSON.

SIR,

As you seem undetermined which road to take in your route to the Southward I beg leave to recall your attention to what you have doubtless observed in passing through this Country. From Hudson's River to the Cape of Florida, our Coast tends Southwest—our hills, mountains, and even the veins of quarries have the same direction. The face of the Country if divided by nearly parallel lines in the same course at proper distances, present you with prospects, in each of which the soil allowing for the difference of climate is nearly the same. Let the first line be drawn from Sandy Hook to Philadelphia, the falls of Susquehannah, Potomac & so by the heads of the tide or falls of the several Rivers down to Georgia, all the Country between this & the sea is flat and sandy—along the sea coast the sand is barren, producing pines, cedars, & cypress—As you approach the line the soil is meliorated with a mixture of loom, & produces hickory & oak, and where brought into cultivation rewards the labour of the farmer & planter with plentiful crops. The second line begins upon Hudson's River crosses Delaware about 15 or 20 miles above Trenton is continued to the southward by the western Valley hill about 10 or 12 miles this side Lancaster following the same Ridge through Maryland Virginia & the Carolinas. The land between the first and second lines is broken & hilly but watered with an innumerable quantity of springs and small rivulets. The soil is generally poor, & to produce good crops requires great assistance from art. Here the husbandman has an opportunity of displaying his abilities, and where any farmer has industry and skill to make the best use of the water by leading the little streams along the declivities and sides of the hills he finds his pains well rewarded. The third begins higher up Hudsons River, crosses Delaware at the junction of the Lehi, follows the Oley or Lehi hills until it

traverses Susquehannah, & then by what is called the South or in Virginia the blue Ridge continues down through the Carolinas. The land between this and the second line is rich and fertile abounding with limestone. The fourth line is one continued Ridge distinguished by different names in the several provinces through which it passes. The land between this and the third line is a vale of exceeding rich land from ten to twenty miles wide and extending from Albany or the German Flats quite down to Georgia—Beyond this to the westward is a vast chain of mountains, amidst which the Alleghany rises with towering pride, dividing North America into parts and directing the streams different ways. Those to the Eastward flow through different channels into the Ocean; those to the westward are convey'd to the Mississippi which disembogues in the Mexican Bay.

Through each of these parts are different Roads from the Northern to the Southern Colonies. In the lower part are two Roads, one over Christiana ferry near Wilmington; from thence to New Castle, the Red Lyon, Dover & so down the Peninsula between Delaware & Chesapeak Bays to Acamack. From thence you are transported across a wide bay directly to Norfolk.

The second road in the same track leads from Wilmington to the head of Elke, thence by Charlestown to Susquehannah, thence through Baltimore & Annapolis, from thence to Hob's hole where you pass Potomack; or if you please from Annapolis through Upper Marlborough to Alexandria. These roads lead through a well settled country and the principal towns in Maryland and Virginia, but are impeded by large rivers, where the ferrys are ill attended and at this season of the year dangerous.

I need not give you the route of the roads through the second part as from the account already given of that part, you will perceive they are uneven & broken and the accommodations bad.

The road through the third part & which is usually

called the Upper Road leads through Lancaster (66 m) thence crosses Susquehannah at Wright's ferry (10 m) thence through York (12 m) Hannover (16) Tawrry town (16) Frederic (28) thence crossing Potomack to the capital of Loudon County—the name of the Town I forget thence by a south direction crosses Rappahannock & James River, & enters North Carolina not far from Hillsborough.

The back Road through the Vale above described leads from Lancaster to Middletown, where it enters the Vale, thence to Harris' ferry thence through Carlisle & Shippensbury to Watkins ferry over Potomack, at the mouth of Connegogique thence through Winchester, Miller's town & Stanton to Carolina.

I apprehend you will find the best accommodations at least for your horses on what is called the Upper Road and be least impeded with ferries—I wish you a prosperous journey, and am

Sir,

Your humble Servant

CHA. THOMSON.

Philad^a 23rd Dec^r 1773.

To His Excellency General Lee.

FROM EDMUND BURKE.

Westminster, Feb. 1, 1774.

DEAR SIR,

I received two letters from you; one by Mr Hey, the other by the packet. I thank you most sincerely for both.—Your first was particularly acceptable, as it gave me an opportunity of renewing and improving my acquaintance with a gentleman for whose character I have always had an high esteem. My particular friends were the first who took notice of his merit. They imagined that they could not do a better service to government in a newly acquired French country than to send them one

of the best samples we were able to furnish of plain, manly English sense and integrity. I wish those who rule at present may show by the provision they make for him here, that such qualifications are still in some request among ourselves.

It was extremely kind of you to remember your friends in our dull worn-out hemisphere, among the infinite objects of curiosity that are so exuberantly spread out before you in the vast field of America. There is indeed abundant matter, both natural and political, to give full scope to a mind active and enterprising like yours; *where so much has been done and undone; and where still there is an ample range for wisdom and mistake*;—either must produce considerable effects in an affair of such extent and importance. *It would be no light mischief, and no trivial benefit.* When one considers what might be done there, it is truly miserable to think of its present distracted condition. But as the errors which have brought things into that state of confusion are not likely to be corrected by any influence of ours upon either side of the water, it is not wise to speculate too much on the subject. It can have no effect but to make ourselves uneasy, without any possible advantage to the public.

Here, as we have met, so we continue, in the most perfect repose. It has been announced to us that we are to have no business but the gold coin. This has not appeared as yet; and if there be nothing further than we hear of intended, it will come on time enough. The politics of the continent which used to engage your attention so much, attracts no part of ours. Whether the American affairs will be brought before us is yet uncertain.

Saturday, I heard the Massachuset's petition against their governor and deputy discussed before the council. It was spoken to very ably by the counsel on either side; by Messrs. Dunning and Lee, for the province; by Mr Wedderburn, for the governors. The latter uttered a furious philippic against poor Dr Franklin. It required

all his philosophy, natural and acquired, to support him against it. I hear that the petition will be rejected. The council was the fullest of any in our memory. Thirty-five attended.

I hope, as you say nothing of it in your letter, that your fit of the gout was but gentle, and rather a sharp remedy than any thing that deserves to be called a disease. With many thanks for your obliging remembrance, and all good wishes for your journey and safe return,

I am, dear Sir,

Your most obedient and faithful humble servant
EDMUND BURKE.

To General Charles Lee,
Philadelphia.

TO HORATIO GATES.

Williamsburg May ye 6th [1774.]

MY DEAR GATES—

Your letter dated from Travellers rest came to my hands yesterday, but by what means I know not, unless by the agency of some infernal Potentate a Friend and Patron of the Pandemonium who thinks it for his interest that a correspondance shou'd be kept up between the members of that noble society. You upbraid me with having pass'd thro' Haggars Town in your neighbourhood without calling upon my old friend. I never was in Haggars Town in my life, nor do I know where it is. I came to this place down by the Eastern shore—my intention was indeed to have pass'd thro' Annapolis. I was at Rock Hall ferry for this purpose, but the Bay being froze oblig'd me to alter my rout—be assur'd that I have made it my busyness to find out where you were

fix'd, and that I was so far from wishing not to pay you a visit that I was resolv'd to make it a visitation, which you know is a visit drawn out into a preposterous length. I am now going Northward, and you may undoubtedly expect this calamity to fall upon you tho in a lighter degree (as my time will be short) as I pass along—My plan is at present for Boston and in the Autumn to fall down the Ohio to the Mississippi—if we are not prevented by a War, which I think probable enough—What think you of our blessed Ministry—do they not improve in absurdity and wickedness? Seriously Gates, I think it incumbent on every man of liberality or even common honor to contribute his mite to the Cause of mankind and of liberty, which is now attacked in her last and only asylum. She is drove from the other Hemisphere, for in England she has been for some time to me only a name—for my own part I am determin'd (at least I think I am) not to be slack in whatever mode my service is required but we will talk over those things viva voce; I have an infinite fund of things to say to you—but am at present as Mr. Wormley (who is charg'd with this scroll) has one foot in the stirrup—obliged to conclude. Adieu, My Dear Gates, my love to your Wife and Son

and believe me to be with

a Brotherly affection yours

C. LEE

FROM THOMAS GAMBLE.

New York, June 10th 1774.

DEAR LEE,

I should have done myself the pleasure to have wrote to you before; but really did not know where a letter would find you; sometimes we heard you were gone to the West-Indies; at another, that you were

gone on to Carolina; by Mr. Bird, I am informed you are still in Virginia.

I expected before now, to have heard from Governor Chester, relative to your land in West Florida, but suppose I shall shortly. I set out in a few days to join our worthy friend General Gage at Boston; he is come out with very extraordinary powers, and has wrote for me: It is a very fortunate circumstance, that the power both civil and military hath fallen into the hands of so moderate a man as General Gage; I hope he will gain great credit on this critical occasion; his abilities are good, and with respect to his heart, you who know him so well, will allow him to be possessed of one of the best kind.

Your things are all left with M^{rs} Aire who will take care of them. I enclose you a letter from Dunbar, and one I picked up in the coffee house for you. Dagworthy has got a company in the 48th regiment, through Colonel Vaughan's interest.

I am, Dear Lee, with great truth,

Yours most sincerely

THOMAS GAMBLE

FROM HORATIO GATES.

Travellers Rest, 1st July, 1774.

MY DEAR LEE,

I received your welcome Letter by Mr. Wormeley & live in daily expectation of seeing you at my Hut. I now more than ever wish for that satisfaction, as the alarms of the Times make me Earnest to consult & converse with you thereupon, until Actions convince me of the contrary. I am resolved to think Mr. Gage has some secret medicine in his pocket to heal the wounds that threaten the life of American Liberty; surely a man so humane, so Honorable, so Independent in his Circumstances, & so great from Family expectations

would never undertake a business fit only for an abandoned Desperado, or a Monster in Human Shape, a General Murray, a Macro, or a Ravilliac. I cannot think what detains you so far to the southward at this season of the year, without any disparagement to Williamsburgh, (a place I only know by Character) Health, & such as you like for associates are more certainly to be met with to the Northward; I know not how you find it, but the Older I grow, I become less & less inclined to new acquaintance. Selfishness & sycophancy possess so generally the minds of men that I think the many are best avoided, and the few only who are Liberal & sincere to be sought for and caressed. I therefore stick steadily to the cultivation of my farm, am intimate with few, read when I have time, and content myself with such Domestic Comforts as my Circumstances & Fortune afford me. I wish therefore most anxiously you would come to my retreat, and let us philosophize on the vices & virtues of this Busy world, the Follies and The Vanities of the Great Vulgar & the Small.

Laugh where we please, be candid where we can,
And justify the ways of God to Man.

Mrs. Gates is earnest in desiring to see you under her Roof, where a good bed is provided for you, two or three slaves to supply all your wants & whimsies, and space enough about us for you to exercise away all your spleen & Gloomy Moods, whensoever they distress you—in my neighbourhood, there is this moment as Fine a Farm, Mill & Tract of Land to be sold as any in America, & provided it is convenient to you to pay down half the price, I am convinced you may have it a very great bargain—it is altogether 2400 Acres at thirty shillings sterling an Acre, I'm satisfied you might have it so by paying down about 1800 £ sterling—you may be put in possession of an Estate that 10 years hence will be worth 7000 £ sterling: and I take it for granted

you may have the payment of the rest of the purchase money at easy instalments, and that too without Interest, so by laying out £1000 sterling more in stocking and improvements your produce will yield you a fine living, and wherewithal to pay your annual Instalment bargain'd for in the purchase. I suppose you have procured from Lord Dunmore his Warrant for your 5000 Acres upon the Ohio that will very soon be of considerable Value—As to the Indians, the behaviour of certain of the White people is beyond all comparison abominable towards those unhappy Natives, not content with quiet possession of all the Land on this side Ohio, they demand as a preliminary to a peace, all the Land between that River & the Mississippi—but this story is too long for a Letter, you shall know the whole of this iniquitous affair when we meet—The Gentleman who does me the favor to present you this Ltr, has the pleasure of your acquaintance, & can very fully inform you of the exceeding wickedness and absurdity of the measures pursued and pursuing against the Indians. I have read with wonder & astonishment Gages Proclamations, surely this is not the same man you and I knew so well in days of yore; but that men should change neither you nor I will be surprised at, it is rather matter of amazement when they do not.

August the 17th. I am this instant returned from Baltimore, & hoped to have crossed upon you in your Route to the Northward, but like Swift's Mordanto you were vanish'd. I was sorry for it, as I might have prevailed upon you to have tempered your zeal with caution before all such persons as may reasonably be suspected to watch your words and actions: where your zeal in the Noble Cause you mention can be exerted to effect too much cannot be shewn—but be careful how you act, for be assured Gage knows you too well, and knows you know him too well not to be glad of any plausible pretence to prevent your good services in the Publick Cause—Farewell my Friend—Remember I am what I have allways profess'd myself to be, &

that I am ready to risque my Life to preserve the Liberty of the Western World—

On this Condition would I build my Fame,
And emulate the Greek or Roman Name;
Think Freedom's rights bought cheaply with my blood—
And die with pleasure for my Country's Good.

While I live,
I am unchangeably Yours
H. G.

FROM THOMAS GAMBLE.

New York, July the 1st 1774.

DEAR LEE,

I have been stop'd by Genl. Haldimand from setting out for Boston as soon as I expected when I wrote to you last; and I am just inform'd of your being at Philadelphia in your way to New York; I suppose you intend for Boston, if so, I should be glad of your Company as I propose to set out in eight or ten days.

The second and third acts of Parliament respecting the Government of Boston are not yet arriv'd, nor are all the Troops, so that Genl. Gage remains inactive; they are look'd for every moment, when probably there may be some mischief as the Bostonians hold up their heads expecting that the other Colonies will unite, and make it a general Concern, nor do they intend I am told to offer payment for the Tea, unless it shou'd be approv'd of, and recommended by the proposed Congress; as matters stand at present I foresee that the troubles in America will not cease for some time, for the people at home seem determin'd to assert their authority over the Colonies; it is not at present a ministerial affair, but seems the Voice of the Nation; the 23rd Regt. are ordered to Boston, Eight Regiments are to encamp

there, viz^t a Battalion of artillery, the 4th 5th 43rd 38th 64th 59th 23rd and if wanted more are under orders—two Battalions of Guards have received orders to hold themselves in Readiness to embark for America in case more Troops shou'd be wanted there. I hope the prudence of the Americans will prevent there being any occasion to call for them—let me hear from you by return of the post and believe me to be

D^r Lee, Yours most sincerely

THO^s GAMBLE

General Lee.

Endorsed: To General Lee
at the New Tavern
Philadelphia

FROM THOMAS BALDWIN.

Mr. Jacobs's Third street—
Philadelphia, Sept. 10. 1774.

DEAR SIR,

My Brother and I landed at Philadelphia on Sunday last. We have escap'd from Bermudas with our lives, but we have lost our health. History informed us, that, in those happy Islands only, was to be found the Goddess of Health, Hygeia: Experience, woful Experience has shewn us that it is the Residence of Pandora, whose baneful Box was first open'd here; this, we know, was never to be shut again; so our good Friend Jove out of mere Compassion to mankind, gave Neptune an healing Hand, and by degrees separated it from the rest of the World: still surrounding it as formerly with ragged Rocks and Shoals on a near approach, and at a distance with storms and Calms, and currents and lightning more fatal and terrible than the rest. Had you been at Bermudas, & had known our

Intention of going thither in the Autumn, tho' we did not expect to receive a letter from you, we should have considered any Information you might voluntarily have favoured us with, as satisfactory, nay as friendly; and we should have acted accordingly. This is my apology to you for the present Letter, if an apology be thought necessary. But in spite of all excuses, I should have stood self excus'd and self condemn'd; had I neglected the first opportunity of sending you this Account. Possibly you may not once have turned your Thoughts towards Bermudas since we parted: but there is an equal possibility on the other scale. We have remained on the Islands near three months; and the substance of our Remarks in regard to Health & good living are these: The Breadth of the principal Islands which are separated only by a Short Ferry, or Bridges, is at most two Miles, in general scarcely one: consequently the whole Islands may, in regard to the air, be considered as a large ship at anchor in the midst of the Ocean or rather becalmed: with this Difference, that instead of the fragrant and wholesome smell of pitch and cordage, and a well scour'd deck, you are entertained whenever you leave your *Cabin* with so offensive a smell from the putrid Rocks and stagnating fresh water ponds, that you become immediately sick: have a Nausea, a Reaching, lose your Relish for food, and are consequently much out of order. My brother & I chose the most eligible situation the Top of a Hill facing the N. N. West & even [there] the continual Damp of the Air, from which Nothing is exempt, rusted all Metals; and all salts melted: our clothes, tho kept at a distance from inner walls, and near them, became musty and mildewed: Candles burned dim, cock-roaches and innumerable Ants filled every room, not only our own house, but every house we entered, smelt as strongly of the lime and mortar, as if newly built. All with whom we conversed agreed that the Island was infinitely damper during Winter than at another Time.

The general tenor of the Air (a circumstance which delighted me in theory, became in fact the very thing we would avoid) the Tenor of the Air was more equal than could be imagin'd.

During the months of June and July the Therm: did not differ more than eight degrees—the medium was 84—the middle of the Night often equalling the middle of the day. The Air is never free from clouds, which generally form a chain and canopy over the Island about noon—this indeed prevents an intense heat, but encreases the damp, which of the two is the more unwholesome. Heavy dews fall, whenever the breeze ceases: but the Air continues still hot; so that instead of being refreshed during the night with sleep, you are overcome by it, nor can you sleep after the peep of day, since at the earliest Dawn innumerable very small shrill Musquitoes attack you from every quarter.

P. S. The water is putrid in a few days. There are no Markets thro' the Island, nor any thing to be purchas'd, except haut-gout Pork, starved fowls and ill-tasted fish—there are no vegetables except stringy Cabbage, woolley West India Potatoes (I do not mean Yams) Papoes, and Pumpkins. Melons indeed I had forgotten—but these are their only tolerable fruit. Bananaes are worse than a mixture of cucumbers and bad eggs, and Prickly Pears are refused by children. They have plenty of Figs, which in general are so ill-tasted that the Inhabitants who snatch with greediness at all the rest, suffer them to rot upon the Trees. I could say more, but I have said enough. The Delegates from the different Provinces meet daily at Carpenters Hall, but still keep their deliberations secret. The City is in great consternation on hearing the Bostonians are bombarded. I hope it is not true. I have called on Mr. H. Lee, but have not found him at home.

If you have any thoughts of leaving America this Autumn, and of wintering in any part of Europe, except England, we shall be happy to accompany you. We are not determin'd to remain at Philadelphia, but

should be glad to be informed which is the healthiest spot on this Continent. Your own Experience can point it out to us. I should have told you the present necessity we are under of reestablishing our Health; since we both left Bermudas with the ardent fever and Jaundice upon us. I am, with sincere Regards, Dear Sir, Your most obliged hble servant.

THOMAS BALDWIN.

Endorsed:

To General Lee, at York, or Boston or Salem.

[FROM WILLIAM BAKER.]

[London, September 3d, 1774.]

MY DEAR SIR,

I received with great pleasure your long letter and will answer it as fully as I am able. You must have misunderstood me in what I said of the Bill to alter the Massachusetts government if you imagin'd I had either concurred in or even forborne to express my fullest disapprobation of it when it was depending in the House—the fact is so much otherwise that I fought it thro' every stage almost alone when most of the opposition were attending the New Market meeting or other occupations equally entitled to be preferred to that duty. I may have said indeed that I prefer the form of the English Government to that of any other country upon earth because it appears to me we are most calculated to reconcile necessary restraints and natural liberty, and to draw the line between them. It is the government I was born under, I am happy to live under and would willingly die to preserve and transmit entire, but I look upon the first principle of that Constitution to be that the whole must be governed by the will of the whole, and that any government where the

authority residing with the few is supported by any other power than that of the many in consequence of their free concurrence and full approbation is the worst of tyranny—Judge then my Dear Friend whether I cou'd approve of tearing from a free and happy people that form of government which has been purchas'd with the blood and establish'd by the wisdom of their ancestors and of subverting that excellent polity endear'd to them by their prosperity, and sanctified by the most laudable of human predilections, a veneration for their ancestors, and an enthusiasm for the permanence of their liberties *Nolumus leges Angliae mutari* was the noblest expression that ever bore testimony to the spirit of a free legislature—I think it is as laudable at Boston now as in London some centuries ago—so far I stand upon the ground of natural right and manly feeling—thus much I say because *Homo sum*—but to descend to the humbler ground of policy nothing can be so absurd or impolitic as to shake a frame sanctified by long possession for the caprice of a moment or the fancies of a few to sacrifice the wisdom of ages to the presumption of an hour and to divert the stream of government, which has fertilized the country and enriched the people by channels which it has gradually formed for itself by surmounting or eluding all the obstacles it has met with in its course, from those channels by dams raised by strange hands unacquainted with the Country which if they are not borne down by the Torrent must deluge the country and destroy the ancient landmarks. If therefore I prefer in speculation the government of Virginia to that of Massachusetts Bay it is not from thinking that what appears best in the abstract shou'd be impos'd on all—on the contrary I am convinc'd that the minds of individuals and the manners of a people form and adapt themselves naturally and imperceptibly to the mode of government under which they are born—the modifications of municipal Institutions are in themselves indifferent provided they are approved by the people, but it is of the essence of freedom and common to all free

governments that the people should be convinced the laws they live under are of their own choosing and that there is no power on earth that can prolong their existence or give force to their Injunctions one hour after the disapprobation of the Mass of the people is signified. I have been the more full upon this subject because I would not willingly be mistaken in my principles upon so material a point. Now I am upon the subject of Massachusetts I cannot help expressing my surprise that you should have been so far misinformed as to have believed that I amongst the rest could speak with "approbation of that scoundrel Hutchinson"—so far from it that I agree with you in the epithet and was the *only* person in the House that declared my detestation of his character and my conviction that his whole conduct had been that of a Parricide who had attempted to ruin his country to serve his own little narrow selfish purposes, this I did in such pointed terms that I was informed he had afterwards waited upon a friend of mine (who did not see his character in so just a light) to thank him for what he was pleased to call defending him against me—be assur'd I never shall speak well of a man who recommends an abridgement of English Liberties in any part of the Globe where one spark remains unsmothered by corruption & unextinguished by violence. As to the Quebec Bill I can with pleasure assure you that I opposed it with activity throughout & tho' I could not overset it I was at least fortunate enough to set a defined bound to despotism & say so far shalt thou go & no farther, by drawing the line which protected New York & Pennsylvania tho' I have since been told Burke takes the merit to himself, but upon what grounds I know not as I proposed the line without any communication with him.

As to myself I am out of Parliament without any prospect of being in, and tho' I should have thought it infamous to have deserted my post and not endeavoured to get in, yet I hardly can say, that I much regret my being out there is so little prospect of doing good.

TO GENERAL GAGE.

[1774.]

D^R SIR—

I little thought the time cou'd ever arrive when I shou'd not run with eagerness to embrace M^r Gage—whether it is from a cynical disposition or a laudable misanthropy—whether it is to my credit or discredit I know not—but it is most certain that I have had a real affection for very few men—but that these few, I have lov'd with warmth zeal ardor. You, Sir, amongst these few, I swear by all that's sacred, have ever held one of the foremost places. I respected your understanding, lik'd your manners and perfectly ador'd the qualities of your heart—these, sir, are my reasons, paradoxical as they may appear to many, that I now avoid what I heretofore shou'd have thought unhappiness were you personally indifferent to me. I shou'd perhaps from curiosity appear in the circle of your Levee—but I hold in such abhorrence the conduct temper and spirit and measures of our present Court, more particularly their present diabolical measures with respect to this Country, fills me with so much horror and indignation, that I cannot bear to see a man, from whom my affections can never be wean'd, in the capacity of one of their instruments, as I am convinc'd that the Court of Tiberius or Phillip the Second were not more hostile to the rights of mankind than the present Court of G. Britain. I cannot help thinking it one of the greatest curses fall'n on mankind that They should be endued with sufficient art to seduce or delude men of the best hearts and heads—My Lord Chatham himself was for a time their dupe, and poor York was entrapp'd to his destruction. I believe, Sir, I know the tricks and insidiousness of the Cabinet better than you do. I have no doubt but that they were to set to work upon you—May God Almighty extricate you with honour safely from their clutches. I know not whether the People

of America will be successful in their struggles for Liberty, I think it most probable They will, from what I have seen in my progress through the Colonies—so noble a spirit pervades all orders of men from the first estated gentleman to the lowest Planters, that I think They must be victorious—I most devoutly wish They may—for if the machinations of their enemies prevail, the bright Goddess Liberty must like her Sister Astrea utterly abandon the Earth, and leave not a wreck behind—She has by a damn'd conspiracy of Kings and Ministers been totally driven from the other Hemisphere—here is her last asylum—here I hope she may fix her abode. I have now, Sir, only to intreat that as knaves and fools will probably from design and misunderstanding exaggerate disfigure and distort what I do and what I say, you will be upon your guard, particularly when it relates to yourself—tho' it is difficult to separate the man from the Office shou'd it be reported that I ever speak of you in terms of disrespect, I entreat that you will slight the report. I am not capable of it—personal friendship for Mr Gage has taken too deep a root in my breast tho' were you my Brother twin'd at a Birth, [I must wish to] to defeat the purposes of those by whose instructions Governor Gage must act—As to North, my opinion of him is this, and (I have known him a long time) that did he hear of a single freeman in the remotest part of the World, He wou'd willingly put his country to the expense of furnishing forth an Army and fleet for the sole pleasure of destroying that single freeman. I know, Sir, you will do me the justice to believe that I am not acting a part—that no affectation has place in my conduct—You have known me long enough, I flatter myself to be perswaded, that zeal for the liberties of my Country and the rights of mankind has been my predominant passion. May God Almighty bless you, Sir, and with honour to you dissolve the spell which has charm'd you into a situation so incompatible with the excellence of your natural disposition—excuse the [length] and if it

appears to you the impertinence, [of this epistle, and believe me, with great esteem,

Yours,

CHARLES LEE.]

TO SIR CHARLES DAVERS.

Philadelphia, Sept. 28th 1774.

MY DEAR DAVERS,

I flattered myself that on my return from the southward I should have found a letter from you, and am much mortified at the disappointment. Since I wrote, a system so strange has taken place amongst you, that I find myself at a loss what I am to say, how I am to act. Great God! what a dreadful situation the whole empire is now in; can it be possible that the ignorance or corruption of the English nation should be so transcendent as to suffer and to sanctify such measures? Lord North has now done your work most completely; nothing but the sudden death of his tyrannical [master] can save you from utter destruction. I tell you, my dear friend, you are lost, unless everything lately with respect to this country, is speedily and totally reversed.

I have now lately run through the colonies from Virginia to Boston, and can assure you, by all that is solemn and sacred, that there is not a man on the whole continent (placemen and some high churchmen excepted) who is not determined to sacrifice his property, his life, his wife, family, and children, in the cause of Boston, which he justly considers as his own. Inclosed I send you the resolutions of one of their counties, which the delegates of all America are sworn to abide by. They are in earnest, and will abide by them so strictly, I am persuaded that the parent country must shake from the foundation.

It is needless to write you a detail of their proceedings, as I have sketched, and transmit to you the papers, which will instruct you more fully than I could possibly do.

I know not what other men may think, but I am sure you cannot disapprove my conduct towards General Gage. I did not and would not pay him a visit. A copy of my letter to him I send you, which will best explain the principles I act from, and my reasons for avoiding him. He makes a most horrible ridiculous figure; I am sorry for it, as I love the man; but very glad of it, as I detest the office he acts in. He is now actually shut up at Boston (with the whole troops he has mustered) either by real or affected fears. His head seems to be turned; he has nobody to advise him but his own family which is very weakly composed, and he has perhaps the most able and determined men of the whole world to deal with. In short he stands on such damned ground that he slips every instant.

The character of New England men, seems to me to be totally changed since we knew 'em. Instead of gasconade, laziness, self-sufficiency, and poltroonery, they appear to me to be modest, active, temperate, and I am confident in the present cause will prove most formidably brave. Their rage for war is increased; in every town are formed companies of cadets, who are as perfect as possible in the manual exercise, evolutions, and all the minute manœuvres practiced by the troops of Europe. The Boston company of artillery is allowed to be equal to any; so that in reality, they have drill officers sufficient to form an army of sixty thousand men; and this number the four provinces can levy and maintain without neglecting the culture of their lands.

This is the estimate of their people lately taken by an order from home.

Rhode Island.....	60,000
New Hampshire.....	70,000
Connecticut.....	196,000
Massachusetts Bay.....	420,000
	746,000

I leave you to judge whether it is very easy to dra-goon these numbers, even should the other colonies stand aloof. But they will not stand aloof. They will support them with their blood and money. The Canadians it seems are to be employed against them; but if a single man stirs, they are determined to invite France and Spain to accept the prodigious profits which their commerce affords. They want nothing in return but arms, ammunition, and perhaps a few artillery officers as well as guns. And they certainly are to be justified by every law human and divine. You will ask, where they will find generals? But I ask, what generals have their tyrants? In fact the match in this respect will be pretty equal.

I have marked in the margin of the papers I send you those which are best worth reading. Junius Americanus who gives Gage such a trimming is unknown. I will send you if to be found, two of my own performances. One is an address to the citizens of Philadelphia, the other to those of New York; they are the only things I have wrote here.

Adieu, my dear friend, expect to hear from me by every opportunity

Yours most affectionately

CHARLES LEE

Send the printed papers when you have done to Lord Thanet.

INDIAN SPEECH AND ANSWER.

SIR,

A Copy of the following Speech & Answer was sent me by a Friend now on the Banks of the Monongahelah which you will be kind enough to insert.

I am Y^r most obd^t H. Ser.

A FRIEND OF OPPRESSED SAVAGES.

Berkeley County

Virginia, Sep. 29^o 1774.

A Copy of the Speech made to y^e Right Honble the Earl of D—— & seventeen Militia Colonels at Fort Dunmore, formerly Fort Pitt by the great Wahatomacho Chief of the Delawares :

“BROTHERS OF THE LONG KNIFE,

We are very glad your great Warriour is come that we may talk with him : we could not believe it was with his orders you killed our People at Wheeling. Thro' the long grass, thro' rapid streams of water, with Toil & Hardship we are contented to live free & at peace. Whatever we earned you got from us, we were like servants to you, yet you were not contented, but pursued us thro' unknown paths to take our Lives also : We thought it was a few Rogues amongst you that scalped our people ; but behold your great Warriour is come with a great many warriors to kill us all. Your people the Traders were amongst us, we brought them safe home. Our people went over to Baker's to eat with you, you stole their Guns & scalp'd them. We sent to ask what harm we had done, you keep our Messengers prisoners. I don't know but I am now talking my last. My Brother of New Comer's Town went with you to look for the Shawnese, you brought him here, wanted to kill him & shot his horse. My two Brothers lie dead close by that came to see you. You say you are not at War with us. What make you kill our people? Skyashuta one of the Chiefs of the Six Nations has been with our Brothers of Philadelphia & New York. They have no War against us. They kill none of our people. They use our Brother well. They tell us your great Warriour belongs to a Savage Nation a great way off, that delights in blood, & that his Countrymen are trying to destroy you. Why don't you fight with them that come over the great River in great Canoes to hunt for you? Why will you rather follow us? We ask for peace, & you say you must have our Chiefs to keep in Prison. We will die before we will give them up. Our young Men will never agree to part with our

young Squaws for your great Warriors sport. We once more ask for peace. But if you want our Blood it shall cost you some trouble. We wish to live in Peace, but are not afraid of War. If you desire to know the way to the lower Shawnese Towns, we will blaze it for you—you shall not lose yourselves. Our Wives & Children are safe with our Brothers the Six Nations. If you come you shall meet the same Welcome with the Scotch Savages when Col^o Grant first brought them here. We used to love you Brothers of the long knife better than all our Brothers; you will make us hate you. If you want more Land pay us for it. For as long as the Sun shines & Water runs, you shall not take it from us.”

To which the following gracious Answer was given :

“WARRIOURS,

According to my promise I come now, after three days mature consideration, to give an answer to your Talk anient the Terms of Peace, you seem so earnestly to sue for. My Royal Master, the King of all these Countries & Lands afar off, has ordered me to secure this your antient Country for the possession of some of his Warriours, who have done mighty things to deserve his Royal favour, & I am determined to obey his Commands. You frequently have been ordered to remove to the other side of the Mississippi, where you might peaceably live & hunt 'till we wanted to enlarge our settlements; But you have obstinately refused to comply. You have often been advised by your Friends the Pennsylvanians, not to enrage the Virginians, for they only wanted an opportunity to draw their long knives on you & put you to death. But all this you have not attended to. I am now come to force you to remove yourselves, your wives & your little children, & to kill you all if you refuse. I have a right to keep your Chiefs in bondage, because that may prevent your young men from scalping my Soldiers, and tho' I will

not rest until I force you by Fire & Sword to remove & will scalp all you that I can, yet if you attempt to do the same in return, I will instantly put your Chiefs to death. I will give you two days to consult with your Nations, provided you bring here immediately 15 of your best & oldest Warriours and 50 of your young Squaws to be kept in the great town of my Country 'till the War is finished. Your Brothers of Phil^a & New York are as fond of getting possession of your Country as I am, but wanting Courage & Money (which I have enough of) they wish to cheat you out of it. You are fools to contend with my master when he says he will have your Country. The Warriours and great Canoes which you speak of I can order against you when I please, & they will blow you to the Devil in a crack. You know I am your Friend, therefore take my advice and do not make my blood hotter than it naturally is, else I will hunt you off the face of the Earth."

TO THE DUKE OF — .

Philadelphia, October 29th 1774.

MY LORD—

The noble part your Lordship has acted in opposing all the diabolical measures of our accursed misrulers, has encouraged me to address these few lines to you—Men who are embark'd in the glorious cause of Liberty shou'd wave all ceremony. I shall therefore neither trouble you nor myself with making apologies—Inclos'd I send your Grace a copy of the different resolves of the Congress (tho' it is probable you may have receiv'd em before) their address to the People of England, to the People of English America, to the People of Canada, and to the King. They argue so irresistibly and They breathe so noble an ardor that if

there is the least understanding remaining in your Island and the least virtue latent, the former must be convinc'd and the latter rous'd to action. What cou'd put it into our Blockheads heads that these people cou'd be trick'd out of their liberties by [their] cunning, or bullied by any force which They can send over? What Devil of nonsense cou'd instigate any Man of General Gage's understanding to concur in bringing about this delusion? I have lately my Lord run through almost the whole Colonies from the South to the North—I have convers'd with all orders of men from the first estated Gentlemen to the poorest Planters, and cannot express my astonishment at the good sense and general knowledge which pervades the whole—but their elevated principles, their enthusiasm in the cause of freedom and their Country, is still more admirable. I think I shou'd not be guilty of exaggeration in asserting that there are two hundred thousand strong body'd active yeomanry ready to encounter all hazards and dangers, ready to sacrifice all considerations rather than surrender a tittle of the rights which They have deriv'd from God and their Ancestors: But this is not all, They are not like the Yeomanry of other Countries unarm'd and unus'd to arms, but They are all furnish'd and all expert in the use—They want nothing but some arrangement and this They are now bent on establishing. Virginia, Rhode Island, Carolina, are forming Corps—Massachusetts Bay has long had a sufficient number instructed to become instructors to the rest—even this Quakering Province is following the example—I was present at a review of some of their Companies at Providence in Rhode Island and really never saw anything more perfect—in short unless the banditti at Westminster speedily undo everything They have done—Their Royal paymaster will hear of reviews and manœuvres not quite so entertaining as those He is presented with in Hyde Park and Wimbledon Common. I must now my Lord, hasten to the main purpose of this letter, as your Lordship is justly consider'd as one

of the most strenuous advocates and Patrons of this Country, and one of the most active assertors of the rights of Mankind, I must beg leave to propose to you, what you had adverted to, I am persuaded you wou'd have already adopted—it is to set on foot a subscription for a relief or indemnification for the brave suffering Boston—these People's sufferings and merits are so transcendant that men less animated with sentiment and public spirit than your Lordship would exert themselves in their cause. A Town consisting of thirty thousand People perhaps of more ease and affluent circumstances than any other Town of the World, reduc'd at one stroke to beggary and wretchedness—ev'ry individual of 'em depriv'd of the means of supplying themselves with a morsel of bread but what is furnish'd to 'em by the precarious hand of Charity—to see a whole People struggling with the extreme of distresses not only magnanimously but chearfully rather than comply with the wishes of brutal Tyrants, and thereby admit precedents injurious to mankind and posterity is I say a strain of virtue almost too bright for modern eyes to gaze at—and must fill every breast not totally dead to [and] unsusceptible of sentiment and feeling with rage, indignation, horror and compassion—but They went farther—They made a formal offer to the Congress—to abandon their town with their wives Children Aged and infirm—throw themselves on the charity of the inhabitants of the Country, or build huts in the woods—and never revisit their native walls untill re-establish'd in the full possession of their rights and liberties—Your Lordship will see the Congresses resolve on this head—these instances I am sure render unnecessary any thing I cou'd say to incite a man of your Graces stamp to exertions in their favour—or more properly in favour and support of human virtue—

I am, my Lord, your

Graces true friend Admirer

and humble Serv^t

C. LEE.

I shou'd be very happy in receiving a couple of lines in answer—it must be directed for G. Lee at Richard Penn Esq^rs Philadelphia.

[To BENJAMIN RUSH.]

Annapolis, Dec^r ye 15th [1774.]

DR. SIR,

I received your letter & am extremely oblig'd to you for it, as it gave me a great deal of pleasure in two respects—the assurance of my having your good opinion, which I much value, and the accounts you give of your assembly Committee and people in general. Cardinal De Retz says a Community is never in so great danger as when their affairs have gone on prosperously for some time—that then is the time to be vigilant and exert your vigour, and if ever there was a crisis when vigour and vigilance was necessary, it is the present. I began to think [you had] all fall'n asleep; I was in hopes before this to have heard of a certain conflagration. I am sorry I have been disappointed. Every time I think upon the subject, it appears more and more requisite that the step should be taken. I sent you by a Mr. Thompson belonging to Mr. Morris, the Resolves of the Provincial Congress of Maryland. I hope they will set an example to all others. They are immediately to form their Battalions for which purpose a plan has been furnish'd by one of your acquaintance—The Companies of this Town are to be muster'd the day after tomorrow. I think with all your virtue at Philadelphia you have got a damn'd trick of adjourning and procrastinating—the situation of affairs will not admit of the delay of whole weeks. Every body here, as I dare say they are with you, is astonish'd that the miscreant Rivington is suffer'd to

heap insult upon insult on the Congress with impunity. He has now advertis'd tea to be sold—for God's sake, as the Committee of New York is in so profound [a sleep w]hy does not your Committee wake 'em? [Why] do They not write a remonstrance upon this subject? You were known to be the author of those Papers you speak of before I came—but they were much approved of for my own part I never did nor shall speak of 'em as being yours.

Adieu, My Dear sir. Let me hear from you as often as possible—

Yours most Sincerely

C: L:

Do inquire of Mrs Yard if she has any Letters for me—if she has send 'em.

To Doctor [Benjamin Rush
Philadelphia]

To EDMUND BURKE, ESQ.

Annapolis, December 16, 1774.

DEAR SIR,

As any apology I could make, for having so long delayed answering your friendly and obliging letter, would be extremely lame and defective, I shall not attempt any; but only assure you that the continuation of your correspondence (though I so little deserve it) will give me the greatest pleasure; and if I could obtain your good opinion and friendship, I should think it the greatest honour. You are by this time as well acquainted with the public proceedings and resolves of this continent as myself. I shall therefore not trouble you with them, but some account of their dispositions in general may not be unwelcome to you; and, on this subject, I deserve some credit; for, in my last letter I

predicted what they would do, and things have fallen out according to my predictions. I will now, therefore, venture to predict, that unless the Boston bills (and I may add the Quebec) are repealed, the empire of Great Britain is no more. I have now run through almost the whole colonies from the north to the south. I have conversed with every order of men, from the first estated gentleman to the poorest planters, and cannot express my astonishment at the unanimous, ardent spirit reigning through the whole. They are determined to sacrifice everything, their property, their wives, children, and blood, rather than cede a tittle of what they conceive to be their rights. The tyranny exercised over Boston, indeed, seems to be resented by the other colonies in a greater degree than by the Bostonians themselves. I cannot help being persuaded that those men, who first urged the ministry to this accursed fatal step, have, from a wicked shame of acknowledging their misrepresentations, continued still to keep them in the dark. They first assured them of the practicability of the scheme, that the Bostonians would, on the first appearance of an army and fleet be frightened into a submission; that their cause would not be considered as the common cause; and now, when they see their error, they cannot muster up honesty or courage to confess it. This I am confident is the case with Hutchinson and his associates; and there is the strongest appearance that my quondam friend, Gage, holds the same dangerous course. It is somewhat strange, but it is true, that this gentleman should reside so many years in America, and yet be as ignorant of the dispositions of the people of America as he is of those in the moon; indeed, he took all possible means of shutting up the avenues of truth. At New York he never conversed, as I can find, with any but place and contract-hunters, the staff officers, and his own family; and when he was sent to Boston with express orders to inform himself of the cause of the disturbances, he applied himself to the very men, and those only, from whom these disturbances were said

to flow. He shut himself up immediately in Castle-William, with Barnard, Hutchinson, and Sewell; under their inspection, and according to their dictates, after three days' labour, he put the finishing hand to a narrative of the state of the province, by which the ministry were to regulate their conduct. It was dispatched to England, and has produced most delightful fruits. Had he condescended to listen to the representations of the town at large, these pernicious measures had, perhaps, never been adopted. In fact, every circumstance relating to New England, as it appears to me, has been stated quite the reverse of the truth. Not only the principles and deportment of the people, but their qualifications and capacity for war have been misrepresented. Modesty, temperance, and the most inflexible firmness, are united in them. I may judge of the former from my own eyes and senses; and for the latter, I have the greatest reason to be convinced from the best authority. I was very well acquainted at Boston with a physician of exceeding good sense and the greatest candour. He assured me that the last act of almost every father of a family whom he had attended, was to convene his sons about his death-bed, and charge them on his blessing, never to desert the common cause of their country, whatever distress they might encounter; and as these people are most truly religious, and remarkable for their filial piety, there can be no doubt but that the injunctions of their dying parents must add a considerable quantity of fuel to the fire of enthusiasm already lighted up in their breasts by the hand of tyranny. But what I think is a sufficient proof of the spirit and principles of these people, is the offer which they made to the Congress, to abandon their town, and never set foot within their native walls, but with the re-establishment of their liberties. Such instances of virtue and magnanimity are, I know, scarcely credible in your rotten island. It is too bright a strain for their enervated eyes to gaze at. As to their capacity for war, the want of attention to certain circumstances has

led the regular officers who served in America into a very great mistake on this head. Their troops were ill constituted; economy they had none. They neither knew how to cook their provisions, nor keep themselves clean. They were, consequently, much subject to camp disorders; and in their sickness, (the same care not being taken of them as of the regulars) they were apt to be dispirited. They were only enlisted for six months; were, therefore, always new to the service; whereas the regulars, being kept always on foot, grew more knowing and economical every day. I say, without attending to these circumstances, and without reflecting how much worse themselves would have been in the same circumstances, the regulars attributed to a difference of materials in their men what, in fact, ought to have been attributed solely to ignorance of method, and boldly asserted the people of New England to be unfit for war. They shut their eyes to all the evidences of the reverse; to their promptness to action, their superiority in marching, and address in the use of all military instruments; but, above all, their ardour and zeal for the service. There is one more circumstance which we gentlemen in red never chose to remember, viz.—that in all our defeats and disgraces, particularly in those upon the Ohio, the provincials never led the flight, but were the last to leave the field. But be these things as they will, if I have any judgment, the people of New England are, at this day, more calculated to form irresistible conquering armies, than any people on the face of the globe. Even the appearance of their individuals is totally changed since I first knew them. Formerly, they had a slouching, slovenly air. Now, every peasant has his hair smartly dressed, is erect and soldier-like in his air and gait. This change struck me very much in passing through the provinces of Massachusetts and Connecticut. It must be attributed to the military spirit which they breathe, and their companies of cadets formed in all the towns of any considerable size. I have been present at the reviews of several of these companies,

and was amazed at the exactness and rapidity of their manœuvres. I shall say nothing of the formidable numbers of light infantry (undoubtedly the best in the world) which their back provinces can produce. In short, sir, it is my persuasion, that should the people of England be infatuated enough to suffer their mis-rulers to proceed in their measures, this country may scorch her fingers, but they themselves will perish in the flames. This small province of Maryland has already resolved to train and discipline about six thousand men; inclosed I send you the resolves of their convention. Pennsylvania is going to arm; I am not yet informed of their numbers, but they will be very great. I have still hopes that the people at home will open their eyes before it is too late, and not suffer the resentment of a hellish junto to weigh down eternal justice, the interest and honour of the nation, if not its existence.

I shall now trouble you with a few words respecting myself. I find it inserted in a paragraph of an English paper, that a certain officer (meaning me) had been busy in dissuading the people of Boston from submitting to the acts. It is giving me great importance to suppose that I have influence sufficient to urge or restrain so vast a community, in affairs of the dearest moment. The same paragraph adds, that I had offered to put myself at their head; but I hope it will not be believed that I was capable of so much temerity and vanity. To think myself qualified for the most important charge that ever was committed to mortal man, is the last stage of presumption. Nor do I think the Americans would, or ought to confide in a man (let his qualifications be ever so great) who has no property amongst them. It is true I most devoutly wish them success in the glorious struggle; that I have expressed both in writing and *viva voce*: but my errand to Boston was mere curiosity, to see a people in so singular circumstances; and I had likewise an ambition of being acquainted with some of their leading men;—with them only I associated during my stay at Boston. Our

ingenious gentlemen in the camp, therefore, very naturally concluded my design was to put myself at their head. I suppose you must have heard of the Indian war, carried on by the governor of Virginia, at the instigation of two murderers on the frontier, and in spite of the declamations of the whole continent against the injustice of it. It was an impious, black piece of work,—worse, if possible, than the affair of St. Vincent's. I most heartily wish you joy, if it can give you any, of your election; at least it gives credit to your electors. I direct this letter to Sir Joshua Reynolds, as I cannot be certain where you live. Adieu, dear sir, live and prosper; and believe me to be most sincerely

Yours

CHARLES LEE.

[FRAGMENT OF A LETTER TO THE PUBLIC.]

The part I have acted since my arrival upon this Continent, my not being a native of America, my having no property here, and the numberless squibs and innuendoes to my disadvantage which have been publish'd particularly in Rivingstons paper will I hope be a sufficient apology for my thus addressing the public—the Authors knocking at their own doors, and finding no sentiment of Liberty conclude that no such thing can possibly exist as [in] the human breast; I was bred up from my infancy with the highest regard for the rights and liberties of Mankind. My Father possess'd 'em to the highest degree—the little reading I am master of has strengthen'd 'em—the historians and orators of Greece and Rome with whom (tho' a soldier) I have been considerably conversant, have added I may say to the sacred fuel—my travels have not tended to diminish it. When a Boy at an Academy in Switzerland, I was struck with the general happiness, affluence and ease diffus'd throughout that Country, notwithstanding

its natural disadvantages of soil and climate, I cou'd not help comparing the robust well educated Commonality of this Country with their miserable neighbours of France, a spot upon which Nature seems to have taken pains to confer her favours—to France Nature has given the most fruitful soil, productive not only of every necessary but every Luxury of life—She has given to its people a lively active enterprizing genius—a Climate upon the whole the best of the world—to the Swiss She bequeath'd rocks mountains, and as it is thought very inferior mental faculties, and yet the Swiss are rich happy, respectable, the French starving wretch'd and contemptible—in Italy the contrast betwixt the free and those which are not free still more remarkable. I know very well that the Republicks of Genoa and Venice are not in general allow'd to be free states though Montesquieu has demonstrated that They are not free, but there is undoubtedly some excellence in 'em which has escap'd that wise man—Shall I beg leave to hazard a conjecture? They have no King—They have no Court.

STRICTURES
ON A
PAMPHLET,
ENTITLED,
A
“FRIENDLY ADDRESS
TO
ALL REASONABLE AMERICANS,
ON THE
Subject of our POLITICAL CONFUSIONS.”
ADDRESSED TO THE
PEOPLE OF *AMERICA*.

“Let’s canvass him in his broad Cardinal’s Hat.”

SHAKESPEAR.

P H I L A D E L P H I A :

Printed and Sold by WILLIAM and THOMAS BRADFORD,
at the *London Coffee-House*.

M.DCC.LXXIV.

[This pamphlet was reprinted many times and widely circulated. That to which it is a reply is said to have been written by the Reverend Dr. Myles Cooper, President of King's College, in New-York.]

STRICTURES, &c.

TO THE PEOPLE OF AMERICA.

A PAMPHLET entitled *A Friendly Address to all reasonable Americans*, advertised and sold by Mr. James Rivington of New-York, is of so extraordinary a nature, that it is difficult for any Man who is interested in the welfare of the Community (whatever contempt he may have for the performance) to remain silent. I know not whether the author is a Layman or Ecclesiastick, but he bears strongly the characters of the latter. He has the want of candour and truth, the apparent spirit of persecution, the unforgivingness, the deadly hatred to Dissenters, and the zeal for arbitrary power which has distinguished Churchmen in all ages, and more particularly the *high* part of the Church of England. I cannot help, therefore, considering him as one of this order.

The design of his Pamphlet, is manifestly to dissolve the spirit of union, and check the noble ardour, prevailing through the continent; but his zeal so far outruns his abilities, that there is the greatest reason to think that his Reverence has laboured to little effect. His discretion seems to be still less than his genius; a man of common judgment would not so wantonly have attacked the general reigning principle and opinions of a People, whom he intends to seduce or intimidate out of their rights and privileges: For instance, I believe there are at least ninety-nine Americans in a hundred, who think that Charles the First was an execrable tyrant; that he met with no harder fate than he de-

served ; and that his two Sons ought, in justice, to have made the same exit.

To descant, therefore, on the criminality of the resistance made to that tyrant ; to affect on every occasion, giving the title of rebellion to the civil war which brought him to justice, is a degree of weakness which no man, who is not blinded by the dæmon of Jacobitism could possibly be guilty of. But to preach up in this enlightened age, as he does, in almost express terms, passive obedience, is a mark of lunacy, or at least it proves that the moment a head begins to itch for a mitre, it loses the faculty of reasoning ; for if the principle of passive obedience is admitted, the gracious Prince, for whom his Reverence professes so great a devotion, is a downright usurper, and the Parliament, of which he speaks so respectfully, Lords and Commons, are rebels and traitors.

The doctrines he aims to inculcate are as follow :
“ That the Parliament has a right to tax you without
“ your consent ; that the duty upon tea is no tax ; that
“ this duty is your only grievance ; that the cause of
“ Boston is their own concern ; that it is not your
“ cause ; that the punishment of Boston is a just punishment ; that it is lenient ; that it is not equal to
“ their crimes ; that the Bostonians are rebels, traitors,
“ and pampered fanatics ; that the Congress are little
“ better ; that no misconduct of administration can justify or excuse open disrespect ; that submission is to
“ be paid to the higher powers, whatever character
“ they be ; that an apostle enjoined submission to the
“ tyrant Nero ; that, of all people under heaven, the
“ Kings American subjects have the least cause for complaint ; that the present confusion of the Colonies has
“ been occasioned by false alarms ; that none of your
“ legal rights have been invaded ; no injury has been
“ done you ; and, consequently, that you can never be
“ justified in resenting that of which you have no reason
“ to complain ; that you are no judges of the rights of
“ Parliament ; that the Parliament ought to act accord-

“ing to their own judgment, not according to yours, even in things which concern you principally or solely ; that they assert they have the right in question ; that you have never proved they have not ; that you have always believed or allowed they have it, until the present occasion ; that the Quebec Bill is a just and constitutional Bill ; that the Canadians are likely to prove the best and most loyal subjects in his Majesty’s American dominions ; that there is too much reason to believe, that the minds of the Americans are unprincipled, and their hearts disposed for rebellion ; that since the reduction of Canada, they have been bloated with a vain opinion of their own power and importance ; that the Island of Great Britain is able to govern, (that is to dragoon,) ten Americas ; that the moment it is known that America is no longer under the protection of Great Britain, all the maritime powers of Europe would join to ravage your sea-ports, plunder and seize your ships, merely for the pleasure of ravaging ;* that all the maritime powers of the world would not dispossess Great Britain of the empire of the sea, even when America is separated from her.” Now I challenge the world to produce so many wicked sentiments, stupid principles, audaciously false assertions, and monstrous absurdities, crowded together into so small a compass. All his po-

* This is perhaps the most preposterous idea that ever was hatched in a distempered brain. America (more particularly since the distractions in Poland have taken place) has been the great granary, or *cella penaria* of Europe. Is it possible to conceive, that the different maritime powers should unite to deprive themselves of the chief means of subsistence, merely for the fun’s sake ? Is it not more natural to suppose, that they would outbid each other for your friendship and commerce, on which so much depends ? When the Low Countries withdrew themselves from the dominion of Spain, did England, France, and the other Powers, immediately set about ravaging their sea-ports and seizing their ships ? Did they not, on the contrary, exert themselves, directly and indirectly, to assist them ? The case is similar ; the event would be similar, and that Great Britain would not be powerful enough at sea, when separated from her Colonies, to prevent this assistance, I shall refer my readers to Massie’s Estimates, the authority of which has never been disputed, and which demonstrate that more than half the naval power of Great Britain stands on her American foundation.

sitions, indeed, are so self-evidently absurd and false, that it would be an insult to American understanding, seriously to attempt refuting them. I shall only beg leave to take notice of the curious argument he uses to prove the duty on tea to be no tax, it is, that *unless we consent to the tax, we are not to pay the duty; we may refuse purchasing it if we please*. The same logic would demonstrate that a duty on beer, candles, or soap would be no tax: as we are not absolutely obliged to drink beer, we may drink water; we may go to bed before it is dark, and we are not forced to wash our shirts. His assertion that Great Britain, when divorced from her Colonies, will still hold the empire of the seas, in spite of all the powers of the world, is still more ingenious. It amounts to this, that *without the possible means of procuring timber, iron, plank, masts, pitch, tar, or hemp, to furnish out a single frigate, they may build more ships than all the world put together; that when her nursery for seamen is destroyed, and all the commerce on which the existence of seamen depends is annihilated, they will then be able to man more fleets than the whole universe put together*. But I am ashamed of trespassing on the public patience, in making strictures on such ridiculous articles, I shall therefore pass to some questions which have not been so much agitated, and on which, if I mistake not, his Reverence lays the greatest stress; for, as he modestly declares, that he has no opinion of your courage, it was natural for him to consider intimidation and terror, as the most powerful figures of rhetoric. *Regular armies from Great Britain, Hessians, Hanoverians, royal standards erected, skilful Generals, legions of Canadians, and unnumbered tribes of savages, swords flaming in the front and rear, pestilence, desolation, and famine, are all marshalled in a most dreadful order by this church militant author*. But let us somewhat minutely examine the picture, and see whether, stripped of its false colouring, it has any thing really terrifying. His Reverence begins with assuring us, that there is no room

to doubt but that such an army as was employed in the reduction of Canada (that is, an army of 7000 men) would be more than sufficient for the conquest of all the disaffected American Colonies (which are in fact, all the Colonies) should *such* a resolution become necessary in order to reduce them to obedience. For my own part, I think there is very great reason to doubt that 7000, even of the best troops, are able to conquer 200,000, of the most disorderly peasantry upon earth, if they are animated in defence of every thing they hold most dear and sacred; and there is still greater reason to doubt that 7000 very indifferent troops, composed of the refuse of an exhausted nation, few of whom have seen action of any kind, should be able to conquer 200,000 active vigorous yeomanry, fired with the noble ardour we see prevalent through the continent, all armed, all expert in the use of arms, almost from their cradles. The success of Quebec, it is true, does infinite honour to the English arms; the army was, I believe, only 7000; the enemy were perhaps more than double, but 16,000 men are not 200,000. The fate of Canada depended upon one decisive action, but it is impossible to calculate how many victories must be gained before these Colonies could be subdued; whereas a single victory gained by the Colonies must decide the contest in their favour. In the affair of Quebec, there is another circumstance to be considered; it was Wolfe who commanded, a man of the most wonderful talents, formed to level all difficulties, to render the most despicable soldiery almost instantaneously an army of heroes. In short, the genius of the man was so extraordinary, the event was so extraordinary, that no inferences can be drawn from it; but this, without presumption, may be asserted, that no General, now existing in the British service, would, with double or treble his number, have succeeded in the same circumstances.

One thing more I must add in honour of that illustrious personage, that the same greatness of soul which qualified him to conquer the natural hereditary enemies

of his country, would have made him reject with horror the Hangman's office; which others, who are not endowed with conquering attributes, will, with readiness, accept.

It is notorious, that Mr. Wolfe was not only the first of soldiers, but that he was a most liberal virtuous citizen; that he was passionately attached to the liberties of his country, and of mankind; and that he was particularly an enemy to large standing armies, in time of peace. It is, on the other hand, remarkable, that all the advocates for standing armies, all those who are the fondest of the faddling and parade of war, are the most active in avoiding real service.

This tremendous soothsayer, on the supposition, that so great a miracle should happen in our favour, as that the trifling body of 500,000 men, though firmly united (for every man in America, firmly united, would not amount to less) should be able to withstand his 7000, goes on to rattle in our ears armies of Hessians and Hanoverians. I wish to Heaven he had for once deviated into probability and truth. I wish 10,000 of them could possibly be transported to-morrow. The purpose they would answer, is a purpose devoutly to be wished for, they would be an addition to this continent of just so many useful and excellent citizens; for I will venture to affirm, (affirming is infectious), that in less than four months not two of these 10,000 would remain with their Colours. But does not this Reverend Gentleman know, that in the year 1764, a convention was formed by most of the Princes of the empire, at the head of which convention were the Emperor himself and the King of Prussia, to prevent the alarming emigrations which threatened depopulation to Germany? Does he not know that no troops can march out of the Empire without the consent of the Emperor? Does he not know that the Elector of Hanover and the Emperor are upon exceeding ill terms? Does he not know that the Elector of Hanover and the King of Prussia are still upon worse? Is he sure that the

Landgrave of Hesse would sell his troops? For, as not one man would return back to their country, he must consider them as for ever sold. Is he sure that, as the finances of Great Britain stand, the vast sum necessary for this purchase would be conveniently found? Is he sure that the State of Hanover would consent to such a draining of their country? I know not how it is; but his most excellent Majesty GEORGE the Third, who in England is justly esteemed the most gracious of Sovereigns, the wisest, greatest, and best of Kings, is not very popular in the Electorate of Hanover. These people seem to think it hard, that 270,000*l.* should annually be drawn from them, for the purposes, as they conceive it, of corrupting the Members of St. Stephen's Chapel, in order to support the power and authority of a set of men, who, from the beginning, have been enemies to the succession of the Hanover line, and who shewed a particular animosity to their last and favorite Prince George the Second. But these difficulties, (great and unsurmountable as to a common mortal they appear,) our divine Exorcist has, in an instant, conjured down; and by a single motion of his enchanted wand, has transported whole armies in spite of their respective Princes, and without the consent of their respective States, from the interior parts of Germany, across the Atlantic into the plains of New England and Pennsylvania; but he does not confine himself to the introduction of his Germans. He proceeds next to erect the Royal Standard, to which he tells us, that all who have the courage to declare themselves now friends to government, will undoubtedly resort; and these, he says, in a good cause, will be of themselves formidable to their opposers. Dreadfully formidable they must be indeed! There would resort to it; let me see, (for the respectable town of Rye, have declared themselves a kind of neutrals, *rather than friends to government*;) there would resort to it, Mr. Justice Sewell, the honourable Mr. Paxton, Brigadier Ruggles, and about eight or ten more *mandamus* Council-men, with perhaps twice

their number of Expectants, and not less than twenty of the unrecanted Hutchinsonian Addressers: these the four Provinces of New England alone would send forth. New York would furnish six, seven, or probably eight volunteers, from a certain knot, who are in possession or expectation of contracts, and the fourth part of a dozen of high-flying Church of England Romanised Priests. I represent to myself the formidable countenance they will make, when arranged under the Royal or ministerial Standard; but what will add to the terror of the appearance will be their Reverend Pontifex himself, whom I conceive marching in the front, an inquisitorial frown upon his brow, his hands and canonicals floating to the air, bearing a cross in his hands, with the tremendous motto, *in hoc signo vinces*, flaming upon it in capital letters of blood, leading them on and exciting them to victory. It is impossible that men, who are not under an infatuation by the judgment of Heaven, should flatter themselves, that forty thousand American Yeomanry; (for we are assured by the same great authority, that more than forty thousand cannot be brought to action), should stand the shock of this dreadful Phalanx.

But I should beg pardon for attempting to be ludicrous, upon a subject which demands our utmost indignation. I shall now, therefore, on the presumption that the People of England should be so lost to sense, virtue, and spirit, as to suffer their profligate Mis-rulers to persevere in their present measures, endeavour to state to you what is their force, and what is yours. I shall endeavour to remove the false terrors which this writer would hold out in order to intimidate you from the defence of your liberties and those of your posterity, that he and his similars may wallow in sinecures and benefices heaped up from the fruits of your labour and industry.

Great Britain has, I believe, of infantry at home, (comprehending Ireland, and exclusive of the guards), fifteen thousand men. They find the greatest diffi-

culty in keeping the regiments up to any thing near their establishment: what they are able to procure are of the worst sort. They are composed of the most debauched Weavers 'prentices, the scum of the Irish Roman Catholics, who desert upon every occasion, and a few Scotch, who are not strong enough to carry packs. This is no exaggeration: those who have been lately at Boston, represent the soldiers there (one or two regiments excepted) as very defective in size, and apparently in strength. But we shall be told they are still regulars, and regulars have an irresistible advantage. There is, perhaps, more imposition in the term *regular troops*, than in any of the jargon which issues from the mouth of a Quack Doctor. I do not mean to insinuate that a disorderly mob are equal to a trained disciplined body of men; but I mean, that all the essentials, necessary to form infantry for real service, may be acquired in a few months.* I mean, that it is very possible for men to be clothed in red, to be expert in all the tricks of the parade, to call themselves regular troops, and yet, by attaching themselves principally or solely to the tinsel and show of war, be totally unfit for real service. This, I am told, is a good deal the case of the present British Infantry. If they can acquit themselves tolerably in the puerile reviews, exhibited for the amusement of royal Masters and Misses in Hyde Park, or Wimbledon Common, it is sufficient.

In the beginning of the late war, some of the most esteemed regular regiments were sent over to this country; they were well dressed, they were well pow-

* There cannot be a stronger illustration of the truth here advanced, than the Prussian army. They are composed of about one-third of the King's own subjects, two-thirds foreigners. The third consisting of his own subjects are, when the exercising season is over, which lasts six or seven weeks, suffered to return to their families, and attend to the business of husbandry. Half of the other two-thirds, consisting of foreigners, are not only permitted, but encouraged to work at their trades in the garrison towns, and never touch a musket for the rest of the year. So that, in fact, only one-third are, in the modern language to be called regular soldiers: these generally make their escape the first opportunity. It may be said, therefore, that the King of Prussia has gained all his victories with a sort of militia.

dered, they were perfect masters of their manual exercise, they fired together in platoons; but fatal experience taught us, that they knew not how to fight. While your Militia were frequently crowned with success, these regulars were defeated or baffled for three years successively in every part of the Continent. At length, indeed, after repeated losses and disgraces, they became excellent troops, but not until they had absolutely forgotten every thing which, we are assured, must render regulars quite irresistible. The corps sent from this country under General Monkton, was, I believe, for its number, one of the best armies that ever was led to conquest; and yet, if I have been rightly informed, there was not a single regiment of them that could go through the manual exercise, or, at best they performed it most wretchedly. It is likewise said, that when, after their glorious and rapid conquest of Martinico, they were joined by the spruce regiments from Europe, such was their uncouth appearance, that they were scarce honoured with the title of Soldiers by those Gentlemen. Upon the whole, it is most certain that men may be smartly dressed, keep their arms bright, be called regulars, be expert in all the anticks of a review and yet be unfit for real action. It is equally certain, that a Militia, by confining themselves to essentials, by a simplification of the necessary manœuvres, may become, in a very few months, a most formidable infantry. The Yeomanry of America have, besides, infinite advantages over the peasantry of other countries; they are accustomed from their infancy to fire arms; they are expert in the use of them: whereas the lower and middle people of England, are, by the tyranny of certain laws, almost as ignorant in the use of a musket, as they are of the ancient Catapulta. The Americans are likewise, to a man, skilful in the management of the instruments necessary for all military works; such as spades, pick-axes, hatchets, &c. Taking, therefore, all circumstances into consideration, there will be no rashness in affirming, that this continent may have

formed for action, in three or four months, an hundred thousand infantry; for as to the assertion of one friendly adviser, that *no more than forty thousand could act to advantage*, I confess I do not understand it, nor does he, I believe, understand it himself. If he means that sixty thousand men cannot be ranged in a field, capable of containing only forty thousand, we shall all agree with him; but how, in the operation of a war, upon a vast continent, double this number should be a disadvantage, I can have no conception.

Let one simple general plan be adopted for the formation and subdivision of your battalions; let them be instructed only in so much of the manual exercise as to prevent confusion, and accidents in loading and firing; let them be taught to form, to retreat, to advance, to change their front, to rally by their colours; let them be taught to reduce themselves from a line of fire to a line of impression, that is, from two deep to four, six, or eight. This is all so easy and simple, that it may be acquired in three months. Let some plan of this sort be adopted, I say, and there is no doubt but that, in the time I have prescribed, you may have an army on foot of seventy, eighty, or an hundred thousand men, equal to all the services of war.

Should this be admitted, it will be still objected that you have no able officers to conduct you. I do not know that you have, but is it certain that those sent to dragoon you have better? I have taken some pains to inform myself what methods these Gentlemen, said to be bred to arms, take to qualify themselves in a superior degree for the profession. What is their routine of instruction? Do they read much? I am assured that they do not. From books alone the theory of war can be acquired, and the English service in time of peace, affords them no practical lessons! for mounting guard once or twice a week, or the preparation for the review of a single regiment, can never be esteemed as such.*

* It is much to be lamented that the gentlemen of the army do not apply more of the many leisure hours they have upon their hands to reading.

Another circumstance, Americans, may be added for your comfort; it has been allowed by some of the most candid of the regulars themselves, that during the last war upon this continent, your countrymen, the provincial Field-Officers, were in general more understanding and capable than their own of the same rank. But the history of the civil war in the year 1641, furnishes us with the strongest instances that excellent officers may be soon formed from Country Gentlemen, Citizens, Lawyers, and Farmers. The Parliament's army, (or, as our priestly writer would call them, the rebellious Republicans), were chiefly composed of this class of men. In the beginning of this war, they were treated with the same affected contempt, and almost in the same opprobrious terms as you, the people of America, are by your friendly and decent adviser.

Whoever would infer from the tenure of these papers, that the writer is desirous of precipitating, or could look with indifference upon the calamities of a civil war, does him great injustice. He considers them with all the horror natural to a feeling man and honest citizen. He execrates the memory of those men, to whom they may be justly attributed; but he is persuaded that they never originated, (at least in states of any considerable extent,) in the turbulent dispositions

The majority of them are of a generous disposition which did they cultivate, by conversing with the great historians and orators of antiquity, and the more liberal political writers of our own country, a standing army would be something less an object of jealousy to all virtuous citizens. We might perhaps see them, instead of being advocates and partizans of the present Ministry, a check upon their wickedness. I am inclined to think that few, or none of the officers have condescended to inform themselves of the merit of the present contest. Let me conjure them, for once, to read coolly and candidly the whole process; afterwards to lay their hands upon their hearts, and answer, whether the People of America in general, and of Boston in particular, are more sinned against, or sinning?

Now I am upon the subject of the Officers of the Army, I take the opportunity of mentioning, with the respect due to him, one Gentleman of high rank amongst them. The tenure of his conduct while in command was so liberal, and his letters quoted in the House of Commons, were so fair, candid, and friendly to the Continent that he is entitled to the thanks of America. He is indeed of a country that owes not only its prosperity, but its existence, to the same principles, which actuate America.

of the people, nor in the arts of demagogues, but in the oppression of their rulers, in the wantonness, folly, pride, or avarice of Kings, Ministers, or Governors. The Grislers of Switzerland, the Granvels of Holland, the Lauds and Straffords of England, were the undoubted authors of the tragedies, acted in their respective countries; and if this continent should be stained with the blood of a single citizen, it can never be charged to the unreasonable pretensions of the people, but to the Barnards, Hutchinsons, and some other traitors of a similar stamp.

He is convinced, that being prepared for a civil war is the surest means of preventing it; that to keep the swords of your enemies in their scabbards, you must whet your own. He is convinced, that remonstrances, petitions, prayers, and supplications, will make no impressions on our callous Court, and abandoned Parliament. England, Ireland, America, even Guernsey, Jersey and Minorca, are witnesses of their inefficacy. He is convinced, that fear alone can operate; there are symptoms that it already begins to operate. The monster Tyranny already begins to pant; press her now with ardour, and she is down. Already the Ministry have expressed in their letters an inclination to make some concessions, to meet you half-way, which, I suppose, may be construed thus, that as they find they have it not in their power to establish, by force, the despotism which they aimed at, they shall be very well satisfied if you will just cede so much of your rights and privileges as will enable them, by extending their pecuniary influence, and sapping your virtue, to take away the rest at their leisure.

There now remains, people of America, one consideration, which, (however it may be taken,) I think it my duty to offer. History tells us, that the free states of Greece, Thebes, Sparta, Athens, and Syracuse, were all, in their turns, subjugated by the force or art of tyrants. They almost all, in their turns, recovered their liberty and destroyed their tyrants. The first

act, upon the recovery of their liberty, was to demolish those badges of slavery, citadels, strong-holds, and military tenements; the Switzers did the same; the people of England, (lost in corruption and lethargy as they are,) could never be prevailed upon to suffer barracks amongst them; even the courtly Blackstone is startled at the idea. No separate camps, no barracks, no inland fortresses, says he, should be allowed; in fact, wherever barracks are, freedom cannot be said to exist, or she exists so lamely, as scarcely to deserve the name.

It is worth your consideration, Americans, whether these badges should remain or no. I shall now conclude, brave citizens, with invoking the Almighty God, from whom all virtues flow, to continue you in that spirit of unanimity and vigor which must ensure your success, and immortalize you through all ages, as the champions and patrons of the human race.

[To CONSTANTINE JOHN PHIPPS.]

[1773-74.]

MY DEAR PHIPPS,

I have not for a long time read any performance with so much pleasure, as the paragraph in the public papers announcing your safe return. I congratulate your country, your friends, and particularly myself, on this happy event. As I most sincerely love and honour you, I should have been pleased, in common with all mankind, had your hopes and expectations been answered in their full extent; but, as your individual friend, I am completely satisfied; for the attempt is sufficient to immortalize you. A young man of your rank and affluent circumstances, giving up his ease, pleasure, and connections, to encounter mountains, and even to risk the taking up his residence in the thrilling regions of thick ribbed ice, for the public benefit, would

have appeared heroic in any age or nation ; but the inglorious insipid character of the present age heightens the lustre of the enterprize.

Once more, my dear Phipps, I congratulate you and all your friends on your safe return ; and the honour which is your due, and which is not paid you at home, come to this country, where your praises are sung daily ; but your political parliamentary conduct has the largest share of their panegyrick. Their opinion of your integrity, talents, and consistency, is very high ; and I hope you will believe that I do not labour to weaken it. By all that is sacred, these are a fine people, liberal, enlightened, sensible and firm. Your Mansfields and Norths may play over their wretched tricks, have recourse to their paltry finesses, may bluster and bellow, but they will never be able to trick or frighten these men out of their liberties. They are too acute and vigilant for the former to avail, and much too strong for the latter. Twelve thousand fresh colonists, half Germans, half Irish, were imported this year into Philadelphia alone, and not a much less number into the colonies of Virginia and New-York. The banks of Hudson's River, of the Mohawk, Susquehannah, Juni-atta, and the Ohio, from the Monongahela downwards thirty miles, which at the peace were totally a desert, are become one continued chain of villages. Four large military townships are immediately to be established on the Mississippi. I leave you to judge, whether it will be easy to dragoon so numerous a people for any length of time. Ships of war, it is true, may insult, and put to inconvenience some of their capital ports ; but these teasings and insults will only serve to shew the absurdity of your minister's policy in a more striking light, by giving a unanimity to these people equal to their effectual strength, when they may set at defiance the machinations not only of an earthly, but of the infernal potentate himself and his ministry. Egregious block-heads ! their folly increases every day ; no sooner are they out of one bad scrape, but they get into a worse.

This blessed tea project meets with a resistance full as vigorous, though more regular and temperate than the stamp act. The colonists, one and all, have entered into the most solemn obligations to send it back to its exporters, and continue furnishing themselves from the Dutch; so that by the ingenuity of our ministry, smuggling is rendered an * * *

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

Williamsburg, Jan^r. 27. 1775.

DR SIR,

I received your letter of credit on Mr. Inglis for which I return you my hearty thanks. I shall make very little use of it as I only want sufficient money to carry me to Charles Town. I am very sorry your Province cannot be prevailed upon to arm themselves as I think it absolutely necessary in the present crisis it is necessary every way either the ministry must recede or they must persist if they recede your Province will incur disgrace in having shewn less spirit than the others less powerful and if they persist you will be unprepared for the resistance necessary, but you have always in my opinion been in pursuit of a chimera absolute unanimity which cannot be expected in a society of any considerable extent that damn'd slow heavy quaking Nag your Province is mounted upon ought be flogg'd and spurr'd though she kicks and plunges. If it had not been for the smart whip of my friend Mifflin I believe she never would have advanced a single inch. Virginia and Maryland ride most noble mettled coursers—but to drop this Jockey metaphor, they are a noble spirited people. Never was such vigor and concord heard of—not a single Traitor, scarcely a silent dissentient—The whole Country is full of soldiers—all furnish'd all in arms

I hope Mr. Dorcius has drawn for the money —
Adieu

D^r Sir.

Yours

C. LEE

My respects to M^{rs} Morris

[TO EARL PERCY.]

MY LORD,

Were your Lordship only a common Colonel of a Regiment I certainly should not have given myself the trouble of writing, nor you the trouble of reading this letter; but as you hold so high a rank, and one day will hold a still higher, I conceive it will not be improper to address you, and in some measure to apologize for my seeming want of respect. As I have not waited on the General (for reasons which he cannot I think, disapprove) I was not certain whether you might, in your military capacity, consider my visit as proper. But, as you are not merely a soldier, but a citizen of the first class and importance from your illustrious family and fashion, your vast property, and being destined by birth to be a councillor of the nation, I think some explanation of my conduct not only proper, but necessary, and I flatter myself that, some time or other, your Lordship will not simply approve my conduct, but become a friend to the same cause. My Lord, I will venture to say that it is the cause of Great Britain as well as of America; it is the cause of mankind. Were the principle of taxing America without their consent admitted Great Britain would that instant be ruined, the pecuniary influence of the Crown, and the army of placemen and pensioners would be so increased that all opposition to the most iniquitous measures of the most iniquitous ministers would be forever borne down. Your Lordship I

am sure must be sensible that this pecuniary influence is already enormously too great, and that a very wicked use is made of it. On these principles every good Englishman (abstract of any particular regard for America) must oppose her being taxed by the Parliament of Great Britain, or more properly by the first Lord of the Treasury, for in fact the Parliament and Treasury have of late years been one and the same thing. But my Lord, I have besides a very particular regard for America: I was long among them, and know them to be the most loyal, affectionate, zealous subjects of the whole empire. Gen. Gage himself must acknowledge the truth of what I advance. He was witness through the course of the last war, of their zeal their ardour, their enthusiasm for whatever concerned the welfare the interest and the honor of the mother country. When I see therefore the extremes of calamities attempted to be brought down upon such a people, by the intrigues of such a couple of scoundrels as Bernard and Hutchinson; when I see a minister violent and tyrannical like North, mowing down whole communities, merely to indulge his hereditary hatred of liberty, and those who are attached to her, I think it the duty of every honest man and friend to humanity to exert his utmost to defeat the diabolical purpose. That these people have been totally misrepresented at home, that they have been most unjustly and cruelly treated, your Lordship will, I make no doubt, be sooner or later convinced. But as, from your present situation, and many circumstances, you will not probably fall into the way of truth so soon as I could wish, I beg leave to recommend to your perusal a sort of pamphlet, lately sent from England; it is entitled, "A true state of the proceedings in the Parliament of Great Britain, and in the Province of Massachusetts Bay."

Mr — will furnish your Lordship with it, if you will make use of my name. It is a fair and candid relation of the whole process from the beginning to the end. When your Lordship has read it, you will be struck with compassion and horror, and I have great

hopes will become not a less warm (but more powerful) friend to this much injured country than myself. I take the liberty of recommending this method to your Lordship, as it is impossible you should gather anything but misinformation from the men who, I find surround Head Quarters. The Sewels and Paxtons are not only interested to misrepresent and calumniate, but to exterminate their country; there is no medium, their Country must perish, or they meet with the desert of impious parricides. It was the misfortune of Gen. Gage from the beginning to fall into such hands as these; had he not been deluded by men of this stamp, we should never have seen him acting in a capacity so incompatible with the excellence of his natural disposition. I must now my Lord entreat that as fools and knaves will, from misunderstanding and malice, probably disfigure my conduct, you will not suffer them to make any wrong impressions, that you will be persuaded I act not from any pique and disappointment (which I conclude will be insinuated) but from principle. I think my Lord an English soldier owes a very great degree of reverence to the King as first magistrate, and third branch of the legislature, called to this mighty station by the voice of the people; but I think he owes still a greater degree of reverence to the rights and liberties of his Country. I think his country is every part of the Empire; that in whatever part of the empire a flagitious minister manifestly invades these rights and privileges, whether in Great Britain, Ireland or America, every Englishman (soldier or not soldier) ought to consider their cause as his own: And that the rights and liberties of this country are invaded every man must see who has eyes, and is not determined to keep them shut. These my Lord, are my principles; from these, I swear by all that is sacred and tremendous, I purely and solely act; and these I hope will rather serve than prejudice me in your Lordship's opinion. I flatter myself still farther: I flatter myself that you my Lord, before it is long, will adopt them; that you will at least in your letters to

your father (whom I have always been taught to esteem as an honest man and a friend to humanity) endeavor to undeceive the people at home.

If the delusion is too strong I can venture to affirm, that you will feel some consolation amidst the calamities ready to fall upon your country in the reflection that you had attempted to avert them. I shall now finish my Lord, entreating that if anything appears impertinent, either in the matter or length of this letter, you will attribute it to an intemperate zeal in an honest cause, and that you will be assured I should not have addressed it to a man of whom I entertained an unfavorable opinion.*

TO THE GENTLEMEN OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS
OF VIRGINIA.

The addresses presented to their lieutenant governor by the Council, and eleven polluted members of the Assembly of New York, are, to every sensible thinking American, of infinitely a more alarming nature, than the threats of the minister, the *brutum fulmen* of the king's speech,) which the minister has publicly avowed to be his own composition,† or the echoing back this speech by a hireling majority of the peers to their paymaster; for as long as a spirit of union subsists through this continent; and as long as the people at home have reason to think that this spirit does subsist; these

* The foregoing letter was printed by Rivington: March 9, 1775, with this prefatory note:—"The following letter is said to have been written and sent by General Lee, in the service of the King of Poland, and Lieutenant Colonel upon half pay in that of his Majesty King George the third, to the Right Hon. Earl Percy, Son of his Grace the Duke of Northumberland and Col. of the 5th Regiment, now at Boston."

† The affected friends to Government often complain, that his Majesty is not treated with the respect due to his character and station; but it appears to me, that a minister's declaring in an open senate, that the speech from the throne is not the king's, but his own, is going beyond disrespect: It is a most outrageous insult; it is representing his Majesty as a mere puppet, that squeaks just as the prompter breathes.

threats of the minister, although vibrated from the sounding board of the throne, and the echoing it back by a hired chorus of peers, must cast more ridicule upon those by whom they are uttered than give terror to those at whom they are levelled. But the suspicion or report of any defection amongst ourselves, is a matter of most serious concern; it behoves you, therefore, gentlemen, it behoves every Provincial Congress of the continent, to consider immediately of some effectual means to prevent the mischievous consequences, intended by these abandoned and senseless men. Have we then formed a general association of our provinces? Have we pledged ourselves to each other, to our posterity, to mankind? Have we made so great, temporary at least, sacrifices in the glorious cause of liberty? Have we confounded our enemies by a strain of virtue, scarcely credible in these modern ages, and with a spirit of harmony that has surpassed the most sanguine expectation? Have we acted this noble part? And shall the council, and eleven contemptible Assemblymen of New York, attempt to render all we have done abortive? Contemptible in all respects, in numbers, in understanding, in knowledge, and in principles! For what other tendency can their addresses to their lieutenant governor possibly have, but to counteract the resolves of the Congress, and render everything you have done, abortive? These compositions of pusillanimity, abject servility, and disgusting folly amount simply to this: *That the utmost exertion of this united continent, consisting of half a million of fighting men, can have no effect; that all the resistance, civil or military, which they can make, must be in vain; but that redress alone must be sought, and can be expected from the magnanimity of the British nation, and the known goodness and virtue of the King.* Gracious Heaven! grant us patience to be told, that we are to expect any thing from the magnanimity of a people who, for twelve years successively, have suffered themselves to be insulted, disgraced, trampled upon, plundered and

butchered with impunity! Or to be told, that we are to look up to the goodness and virtue of a king, who for the same number of years has been influenced to make incessant war upon the property, rights, privileges, laws, honour, and integrity of his people, in every part of the Empire, is enough to drive moderation itself into violence.

But, continue these admirable senators, *what opens still a surer prospect of redress is, that his excellency governor Tryon is now near the throne*; so it seems, that what the petitions, supplications, remonstrances of the whole colonies, of the city of London, of the great commercial towns, of the leading counties of England, what the voice of policy, reason, justice, and humanity, could not affect, Colonel Tryon's being in England will accomplish.

I know not whether this Colonel Tryon is a man of so extraordinary talents, eloquence, and influence, as to work these mighty miracles: I never understood that he was; but I am sure, if he has common sense, and any manly feelings, he cannot help being somewhat disgusted, at this ill-timed impertinent flattery; and that he must conceive the greatest contempt for the parasites who, regardless of the most important concerns of their country and humanity, and at the very crisis which is to determine *whether themselves and their posterity are to be freemen or slaves*, could step out of their way to offer up incense to an unimportant individual. It may be said, this is all declamation; it may be so, but it is a declamation which an honest zeal in the public cause has forced me into. It is now time, gentlemen, to devise some means of putting a stop to this cancer before it spreads to any dangerous degree. You, gentlemen, of Virginia, and your neighbours of Maryland, have perhaps these means in your hands. I would propose then, that after a spirited manifesto expressing your abhorrence of the council,* and prosti-

* I cannot persuade myself that the council were unanimous in this infamous address; there are individuals amongst them known of probity,

tute eleven of New York, you should proceed to punish the individuals of this wicked junto who are in your power. Some of them have great contracts for wheat, and corn in these provinces, from Norfolk, Alexandria, Chester, Baltimore, and other parts. They export prodigious quantities, and enrich themselves considerably by this commerce. I would propose, that all commerce with these assassins should be laid immediately under an interdict; that not a single ship belonging to a counsellor of New-York, unless he purges himself by oath from having consented to the address, or of one of the prostitute eleven, should be furnished with a freight within the capes Henry or Charles; and I have that opinion of the virtue of these provinces, to think your injunctions would be efficacious. But here I must beg leave to pause for an instant, and ask pardon of the public for my apparent presumption. An individual who offers his thoughts to so respectable a body, as a congress, delegated by the voice of a whole people, has certainly the air of presumption. It is in some measure attributing to himself superior lights and abilities; but, on the other hand, it is allowed, that an individual has frequently been fortunate enough to chalk out lines in which the most sagacious and respectable bodies have not disdained to walk. If his proposals, or hints, be weak and absurd, they will naturally be laughed at; but if his intentions be honest, the consciousness of having acted from motives of rectitude, and the love of his country, will sufficiently compensate for any ridicule which his scheme can incur. I would therefore wish, that what I offer should rather be understood as hints than advice. If these hints are attended to, I shall reap no personal glory; if they are despised, I shall be no personal sufferer, as my name will probably never be known. But to proceed with my proposals, or hints, in which latter light I am most

sense, and patriotism. But these gentlemen, so far from objecting to the obligation of purging themselves by oath of having any share of the guilt, will rejoice in the opportunity of acquitting themselves.

desirous they should be considered, I could wish, to the above-mentioned manifesto, was subjoined, the warmest letter of thanks to the virtuous ten of the Assembly of New-York, for their endeavours to stem the profligacy and wickedness of the majority, and for the noble part they have acted as true Americans and excellent citizens; that another address, no less warm, should be presented to the gentlemen and people of New-York at large, expressing your opinion of their honesty and public spirit, and lamenting their peculiar circumstances; which, to those who are strangers to these circumstances, may inculcate a belief that they alone are exceptions to the character of patriotism, which the Americans are now indisputably entitled to. But above all, I could wish that it were recommended to every province of the continent, more particularly to their immediate neighbours of Pennsylvania, the Jersies, and Connecticut, not to suffer one of this depraved undecemvirate to set his foot on their territories, until he invokes the forgiveness of his country, and solemnly engages, that his future life shall be employed in making compensation for his present conduct, of so obviously a mischievous tendency. The epithets prostitute, profligate, &c. which I have so freely made use of, may probably appear illiberal; but, when we consider the mischievous consequences which the conduct of these Council and Assembly-men of New-York are fraught with, it must be allowed, that no language can furnish opprobrious terms adequate to their delinquency. I am far indeed from apprehending that their weight and influence are sufficient to shake the virtue of the continent, or occasion any defection. I do not believe that an individual, much less a set of men, will be found who will be stupid and wicked enough to tread in their steps; the infamous * * * of Philadelphia, and a small perverse drivelling knot of Quakers, who form his Senate and Court excepted.

This *Worthy* fixed his residence at New-York, with the professed intention of working, with some congenial

spirits in that city, towards the ruin of the whole fabric which the Congress had been raising. Indeed, it is most probable, that he was the principal compiler, if not the dictator, of these wretched addresses. The style and sentiments are certainly his: the same mist, fog, and darkness, which overcast all his productions, envelope these addresses; and the same narrow, crooked politics, low cunning, malignancy, and treachery, discoverable through the mist, fog, and obscurity of all his works and actions, betray themselves in these addresses.

It may now be asked, as I have represented the character, weight and credit of these eleven Assembly-men, of the majority of the Council of New-York, and their Philadelphian coadjutor, or, more properly, dictator, in so despicable a light, wherefore should I sound the alarm? What mischiefs can possibly result from the utmost such men can do? I answer, that although they can neither occasion any defection, nor present the least prospect of success to the enemies of America, and liberty, they can do very considerable mischief: they can procrastinate the issue; they can, and most probably will, prolong the inconveniences which we must, more or less, feel during the contest. There is nothing more certain than that the ministry have proceeded to the enormous lengths they have done upon the presumption, that the attacks upon Boston would not have been taken up by the other provinces as the cause of the whole.* There is, therefore, nothing more certain, than that the appearance of our firmness and unanimity, must soon have overthrown them, or forced them into a total change of measures; but the least appearance, that this firmness and unanimity no longer subsists, will encourage them to persist, and will enable them to keep their ground some time longer. These addresses of New-York will give this appearance; so that whatever the gentlemen, the merchants, the tradesmen, the mechanics,

* That this is the principle they acted upon, is now put out of dispute by the conduct of Lord North in the House of Commons, and some speeches directed to him.

and the people of America at large, suffer from the prolongation of the contest, whatever shall be added to the distresses and burden of the people at home, whatever shall further impair the commerce, strength, credit, and reputation of the mother country, and bring her still nearer to total bankruptcy and ruin; whatever shall farther alienate the affections of the child from the parent, may justly be imputed to this abject Council and eleven prostitute Assemblymen of New-York.

FROM GOUVERNEUR MORRIS.

[New York, May 1775.]

DEAR GEN^L

Stulti in contraria ruunt. The truth of this maxim is exemplified by every Day's Experience but in no instance more clearly than the Behaviour of some of my Fellow Citizens. Not one month ago and Whiggism was branded with Infamy. Now each person strives to shew the Excess of his zeal by the madness of his actions. The British Court shall soon behold its warmest Advocates driven from their Country miserable Exiles. This may produce good effects. But other matters now warmly agitated are replete with Mischief. Among other things Rivington is placed in the woful Dilemma to fly hence into Bankruptcy or become a Victim at the altar of popular vengeance. I venture to predicate the consequence of these proceedings. Pity, which however it may be overcome is never totally banish'd from the human heart—Pity will at length resume her seat—she will usurp upon Reason and sit in Judgment. Many advocates will arise to agitate political Questions before such partial Judicature. Is it not to be expected that opinions which have taught men to prosecute even to the Death will be deeply rep-

robated in that Court. *Stulti in contraria ruunt.* Popular wrath is a mighty Torrent, which opposed, rages; suffer it to take its course, it flows away, divides, evaporates. How essential it is to this oppress'd Country that all its Inhabitants shou'd be animated with equal ardour—Your good Judgment will instantly suggest with a thousand other observations tending to the Point my letter is intended for.

You will oblige me then if in the Circle of your acquaintance you endeavour to prevent any mischievous Resolutions against this unfortunate Printer, who is now I verily believe a sincere Penitent. I plead the cause of Humanity to a Gentleman, and one too, whom I take on me to address with the assurance that

I am D^r sir

Your Friend

GOUV : MORRIS.

P. S.—When you see Mr. Penn present to him my hearty good wishes—tell him that I interest myself in his Weal and Woe.

To General Lee, Philadelphia.

To HORATIO GATES.

Philadelphia May ye 13th [1775.]

MY DR GATES

I have the pleasure to inform you, that I can procure at least 2500£ and believe more for the purchase—it may be had immediately—so you may survey and take all the necessary steps without loss of time—let me hear from you immediately—as the post is just going out I can send you no news—I have thrown here the Troops into two compleat Battalions and a half of light Infantry there are three good companies—I will

write you a long letter by Tuesday—adieu, my Dr Friend

C LEE

My love to your gouvernant and Bob.

TO HORATIO GATES.

Phila. May ye 20th [1775.]

MY DR. GATES,

The inclosed was given me by Mr. Henry as necessary preparatory to the purchase. You will be so good as to proceed in consequence or employ some Lawyer—next post you shall have a long letter of news—till then adieu, my Dr Friend

C. LEE

it wou'd be foolish to write to day the Congress will settle all by Tuesday then a letter may be worth receiving

TO GENERAL BURGOTNE.

Philadelphia, June 7, 1775.

MY DEAR SIR,

We have had twenty different accounts of your arrival at Boston, which have been regularly contradicted the next morning; but as I now find it certain that you are arrived, I shall not delay a single instant addressing myself to you. It is a duty I owe to the friendship I have long and sincerely professed for you; a friendship to which you have the strongest claims from the first moment of our acquaintance. There is no man from whom I have received so many testimonies of esteem and affection; there is no man whose esteem and affection could, in my opinion, have done me greater honour. I intreat and conjure you, therefore, my dear Sir, to impute these

lines, not to a petulant itch of scribbling, but to the most unfeigned solicitude for the future tranquillity of your mind, and for your reputation. I sincerely lament the infatuation of the times, when men of such a stamp as Mr. Burgoyne and Mr. Howe can be seduced into so impious and nefarious a service by the artifice of a wicked and insidious court and cabinet. You cannot but recollect their manœuvres in your own select committee, and the treatment yourself as president received from these abandoned men. You cannot but recollect the black business of St. Vincents, by an opposition to which you acquired the highest and most deserved honour. I shall not trouble you with my opinion of the right of taxing America without her own consent, as I am afraid from what I have seen of your speeches, that you have already formed your creed on this article; but I will boldly affirm, had this right been established by a thousand statutes, had America admitted it from time immemorial, it would be the duty of every good Englishman to exert his utmost to divest parliament of this right, as it must inevitably work the subversion of the whole empire. The malady under which the State labours, is indisputably derived from the inadequate representation of the subject, and the vast pecuniary influence of the Crown.

To add to this pecuniary influence and incompetency of representation, is to insure and precipitate our destruction. To wish any addition, can scarcely enter the heart of a citizen who has the least spark of public virtue, and who is at the same time capable of seeing consequences the most immediate. I appeal, Sir, to your own conscience, to your experience and knowledge of our court and parliament, and I request you to lay your hand upon your heart, and then answer with your usual integrity and frankness, whether, on the supposition America should be abject enough to submit to the terms imposed, you think a single guinea raised upon her would be applied to the purpose, (as it is ostentatiously held out to deceive the people at home,) of easing the

mother country? Or whether you are not convinced that the whole they could extract, would be applied solely to keep up still further the enormous fund for corruption which the Crown already possesses, and of which a most diabolical use is made. On these principles, I say, Sir, every good Englishman, abstracted of all regard for America, must oppose her being taxed by the British parliament; for my own part, I am convinced that no argument, (not totally abhorrent from the spirit of liberty, and the British constitution,) can be produced in support of this right. But it would be impertinent to trouble you upon a subject which has been so amply, and, in my opinion, so fully discussed. I find by a speech given as yours in the public papers, that it was by the King's positive command you embarked in this service. I am somewhat pleased that it is not an office of your own seeking, though, at the same time, I must confess that it is very alarming to every virtuous citizen, when he sees men of sense and integrity, (because of a certain profession,) lay it down as a rule implicitly to obey the mandates of a court, be they ever so flagitious. It furnishes, in my opinion, the best argument for the total reduction of the army. But I am running into a tedious essay, whereas I ought to confine myself to the main design and purpose of this letter, which is to guard you and your colleagues from those prejudices which the same miscreants, who have infatuated General Gage and still surround him, will labour to instil into you against a brave, loyal, and most deserving people. The avenues of truth will be shut up to you. I assert, Sir, that even General Gage will deceive you, as he has deceived himself; I do not say he will do it designedly; I do not think him capable: But his mind is so totally poisoned, and his understanding so totally blinded by the society of fools and knaves, that he no longer is capable of discerning facts as manifest as the noon day sun. I assert, Sir, that his letters to the ministry, (at least, such as the public have seen,) are one continued tissue of misrepresentation, injustice, and tortured infer-

ences from mistated facts. I affirm, Sir, that he has taken no pains to inform himself of the truth; that he has never conversed with a man who has had the courage or honesty to tell him the truth. I am apprehensive that you and your colleagues may fall into the same trap, and it is the apprehension that you may be inconsiderately hurried by the vigour and activity you possess into measures which may be fatal to many innocent individuals, may hereafter wound your own feelings, and which cannot possibly serve the cause of those who sent you, that has prompted me to address these lines to you. I most devoutly wish, that your industry, valour and military talents, may be reserved for a more honourable and virtuous service, against the natural enemies of your country, (to whom our Court are so basely complacent,) and not be wasted in ineffectual attempts to reduce to the wretchedest state of servitude the most meritorious part of your fellow subjects. I say, Sir, that any attempts to accomplish this purpose must be ineffectual. You cannot possibly succeed. No man is better acquainted with the state of this continent than myself. I have ran through almost the whole colonies from the North to the South, and from the South to the North. I have conversed with all orders of men, from the first estated gentlemen, to the lowest planters and farmers, and can assure you that the same spirit animates the whole. Not less than one hundred and fifty thousand gentlemen, yeomen, and farmers, are now in arms, determined to preserve their liberties or perish. As to the idea that the Americans are deficient in courage, it is too ridiculous and glaringly false to deserve a serious refutation. I never could conceive upon what this notion was founded. I served several campaigns in America the last war, and cannot recollect a single instance of ill behaviour in the provincials, where the regulars acquitted themselves well. Indeed we well remember some instances of the reverse, particularly where Colonel Grant, (he who lately pledged himself for the general cowardice of America,) ran away with

a large body of his own regiment, and was saved from destruction, by the valour of a few Virginians. Such preposterous arguments are only proper for the Rigbys and Sandwichs, from whose mouths never issued, and to whose breast, truth and decency are utter strangers. You will much oblige me in communicating this letter to General Howe, to whom I could wish it should be considered in some measure addressed; as well as to yourself. Mr. Howe is a man for whom I have ever had the highest love and reverence. I have honoured him for his own connections, but above all, for his admirable talents and good qualities. I have courted his acquaintance and friendship, not only as a pleasure, but as an ornament; I flattered myself that I had obtained it. Gracious God! is it possible that Mr. Howe should be prevailed upon to accept such an office! That the brother of him, to whose memory the much injured people of Boston erected a monument, should be employed as one of the instruments of their destruction! But the fashion of the times it seems is such, as renders it impossible that he should avoid it. The commands of our most gracious sovereign, are to cancel all moral obligations, to sanctify every action, even those that the satrap of an Eastern despot would start at. I shall now beg leave to say a few words with respect to myself and the part I act. I was bred up from my infancy in the highest veneration for the liberties of mankind in general. What I have seen of Courts and princes, convinces me that power cannot be lodged in worse hands than in theirs; and of all courts I am persuaded that ours is the most corrupt and hostile to the rights of humanity. I am convinced, that a regular plan has been laid, indeed every act since the present accession evinces it, to abolish even the shadow of liberty from amongst us. It was not the demolition of the tea, it was not any other particular act of the Bostonians, or of the other provinces, which constituted their crimes; but it is the noble spirit of liberty manifestly pervading the whole continent, which has rendered them the objects

of ministerial and royal vengeance. Had they been notoriously of another disposition, had they been *homines ad servitudinem paratos*, they might have made as free with the property of the East India Company as the felonious North himself with impunity. But the lords of St. James's and their mercenaries of St. Stephens will know, that as long as the free spirit of this great continent remains unsubdued, the progress they can make in their scheme of universal despotism, will be but trifling. Hence it is, that they wage inexpiable war against America. In short, this is the last asylum of persecuted liberty. Here should the machinations and fury of her enemies prevail, that bright Goddess must fly off from the face of the earth, and leave not a trace behind. These, Sir, are my principles; this is my persuasion, and consequently I am determined to act. I have now, Sir, only to entreat, that whatever measures you pursue, whether those which your real friends (myself among them) would wish, or unfortunately those which our accursed *misrulers* shall dictate, you will still believe me to be personally, with the greatest sincerity and affection,

Yours, &c.

C. LEE.

Gen. Burgoyne.

TO LORD BARRINGTON.

Philadelphia, June 22, 1775.

To the Right Honorable Lord Viscount Barrington, His Majesty's Secretary at War.

MY LORD: Although I can by no means subscribe to the opinion of divers people in the world, that an officer on half pay is to be considered in the service, yet I think it a point of delicacy to pay a deference to this opinion, erroneous and absurd as it is. I therefore apprise your Lordship in the most public and solemn manner, that I do renounce my half pay from the date hereof. At the same time I beg leave to assure your

Lordship, that whenever it shall please His Majesty to call me forth to any honorable service against the natural hereditary enemies of our Country, or in defence of his just rights and dignity, no man will obey the righteous summons with more zeal and alacrity than myself; but the present measures seem to me so absolutely subversive of the rights and liberties of every individual subject, so destructive to the whole Empire at large, and ultimately so ruinous to His Majesties own person, dignity, and family, that I think myself obliged, in conscience, as a citizen, *Englishman*, and soldier of a free state, to exert my utmost to defeat them. I most devoutly pray to *Almighty God* to direct His Majesty into measures more consonant to his interest and honor, and more conducive to the happiness and glory of his People.

I am, my Lord, your most obedient humble Servant,
CHARLES LEE.

ADDRESS OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF MASSACHUSETTS, JULY 1, 1775.

To the Honorable Charles Lee, Esq., Major General of the Continental Army.

SIR: The Congress of the Massachusetts Colony, possessed of the fullest evidence of your attachment to the rights of mankind, and regard to the distresses which America in general, and this colony in particular, are involved, by the impolitick, wicked, and tyrannick system adopted by administration, and pursued with relentless and savage fury, do with great pleasure embrace this opportunity to express the great satisfaction and gratitude they feel on your appointment as Major General in the *American* army. We sincerely congratulate you on your safe arrival here, and wish you all possible happiness and success in the execution of so important a trust.

We admire and respect the character of a man who,

disregarding the allurements of profits and distinction his merit might procure, engages in the cause of mankind, in defence of the injured, and relief of the oppressed. From your character, from your great abilities and military experience, united with those of the Commander in Chief, under the smiles of Providence, we flatter ourselves with the prospect of discipline and order, success and victory.

Be assured, Sir, that it will give us great pleasure to be able to contribute to your happiness. May the favours and blessings of heaven attend you. May Divine Providence guard and protect you, conduct you in the paths of honor and virtue, grant you the reward of the brave and virtuous here, the applauses of mankind, and the approbation of your own conscience, and eternal happiness hereafter.

GENERAL LEE'S ANSWER.

To the Gentlemen of the Provincial Congress of the
Massachusetts.

GENTLEMEN :

Nothing can be so flattering to me as the good opinion and approbation of the Delegates of a free and uncorrupt people. I was educated in the highest reverence for the rights of mankind, and have acquired by a long acquaintance, a most particular regard for the people of America.

You may depend, therefore, gentlemen, on my zeal and integrity. I can promise you nothing from my abilities. God Almighty grant us success equal to the righteousness of the cause.

I thank you, gentlemen, for an address which does me so much honor, and shall labour to deserve it.

To ROBERT MORRIS.

Camp at Cambridge July 4, [1775].

D^R SIR,

We arrived here on Sunday before dinner. We found every thing exactly the reverse of what had been represented. We were assured at Philadelphia that the army was stock'd with Engineers. We found not one. We were assur'd that we should find an expert train of Artillery. They have not a single Gunner, and so on so far from the men being prejudiced in favour of their own Officers They are extremely diffident in 'em and seem much pleased that we are arrived. The men are really very fine fellows, and had they fair play would be made an invincible army. We are working hard to strengthen our different posts—And if the enemy will give us time for three or four days we shall I think be quite secure. I believe the loss of the regulars in the last affair was probably very heavy All accts concur in it. Adieu my dear Sir, My love to M^{rs} Morris

Yours

C. LEE.

I wish you would send us a part of the third Battalion from Philadelphia and forty volunteer Riflers. M^r Griffin makes an apology by the next post.

FROM GENERAL BURGoyNE.Boston, July 9th 1775.

DEAR SIR: When we were last together in service I should not have thought it within the vicissitudes of human affairs that we should meet at any time, or in any sense as foes. The letter you have honored me with, and my own feelings, continue to prove we are still far from being personally such.

I claim no merit from the attentions you so kindly remember in the early periods of our acquaintance, but as they manifest how much it was my pride to be known to be your friend; nor have I departed from the duties of that character, when, I will not scruple to say, it has been almost general offence to maintain it: I mean since the violent part you have taken in the commotions of the Colonies.

It would exceed the limits and the propriety of our present correspondence to argue at full the great cause in which we are engaged. But anxious to preserve a consistent and ingenuous character, and jealous, I confess, of having the part I sustain imputed to such motives as you intimate, I will state to you, as precisely as I can, the principles upon which, not voluntarily, but most conscientiously I undertook it.

I have, like you, entertained from infancy a veneration of publick liberty. I have likewise regarded the British Constitution as the best safeguard of that blessing to be found in the history of mankind.

The vital principle of the Constitution, in which it moves and has its being, is the supremacy of the King and Parliament; a compound, indefinite, indefeasible power, coeval with the origin of the Empire, and co-extensive over all its parts.

I am no stranger to the doctrines of M^r Locke, and other of the best advocates for the rights of mankind, upon the compacts always implied between the governing and the governed, and the right of resistance in the latter when the compact shall be so violated as to leave no other means of redress. I look with reverence, almost amounting to idolatry, upon those immortal Whigs who adopted and applied such doctrines during part of the reign of Charles the First, and in that of James the Second.

Should corruption pervade the three estates of the Realm, so as to pervert the great ends for which they were instituted, and make the power vested in them for the good of the whole people operate, like an abuse of

the prerogative of the Crown, to general oppression, I am ready to acknowledge that the same doctrine of resistance applies as forcibly against the abuses of the collective body of power, as against those of the Crown, or either of the other component branches separately: still always understood that no other means of redress can be obtained; a case, I contend, much more difficult to suppose when it relates to the whole, than when it relates to parts.

But in all cases that have existed, or can be conceived, I hold that resistance, to be justifiable, must be directed against the usurpation or undue exercise of power, and that it is most criminal when directed against any power itself inherent in the Constitution.

And here you will immediately discern why I drew a line in the allusion I made above to the reign of Charles the First. Towards the close of it the true principle of resistance was changed, and a new system of Government projected accordingly. The Patriots, previous to the long Parliament, and during great part of it, as well as the glorious Revolutionists of 1688, resisted to vindicate and restore the Constitution; the Republicans resisted to subvert it.

Now, Sir, lay your hand upon your heart, as you have enjoined me to do on mine, and tell me to which of these purposes do the proceedings of America tend?

Is it the weight of taxes imposed, and the impossibility of relief after a due representation of her burden, that has induced her to take arms? or is it a denial of the rights of British legislation to impose them, and consequently a struggle for total independency? For the idea of power that can tax externally and not internally, and all the sophistry that attends it, though it may catch the weakness and the prejudice of the multitude in a speech or pamphlet, it is too preposterous to weigh seriously with a man of your understanding; and I am confident you will admit the case to be fairly put. Is it then from a relief of taxes, or from the control of Parliament, "in all cases whatsoever" we are in war?

If for the former, the quarrel is at an end; there is not a man of sense and information in America, who does not know it is in the power of the Colonies to put an end to the exercise of taxation immediately and for ever. I boldly assert it, because sense and information will also suggest to every man, that it can never be the interest of Great Britain, after her late experience, to make another trial.

But if the other ground is taken, and it is intended to wrest from Great Britain, a link of that substantial, and I hope perpetual chain, by which the Empire holds, think it not a ministerial mandate; think it not a mere professional ardour; think it not a prejudice against a part of our fellow subjects, that induces men of integrity (and among such as you have done me the honor to class me) to act with vigor; but be assured that it is a conviction that the whole of our political system depends upon the preservation of its great and essential parts distinctly, and no part is so great and essential as supremacy of legislation. It is a conviction, that as a King of England never appears in so glorious a light as when he employs the executive powers of the state to maintain the laws, so, in the present exertions of that power, His Majesty is particularly entitled to our zeal and grateful obedience, not only as soldiers but as citizens.

These principles, depend upon it, actuate the Army and Fleet throughout. And let me at the same time add, there are few, if any, gentlemen among us who would have drawn his sword in the cause of slavery.

But why do I bind myself to the Navy and Army? The sentiments I have touched are those of the great bulk of the Nation. I appeal to the landed men who have so long borne burdens for America; I appeal to those trading towns who are sufferers by the dispute, and the City of London at the head of them, notwithstanding the petitions and remonstrances which the arts of party and faction have extorted from some individuals; and last, because least in your favor, I appeal to the majorities in the Houses of Parliament upon American

questions this session. The most licentious news-writers want assurance to call these majorities Ministerial; much less will you give them that name when you impartially examine the characters that compose them; men of the most independent principles and fortunes, and many of them professedly in opposition to the Court in the general line of their conduct.

Among other supporters of British rights against American claims, I will not speak positively, but I firmly believe I may name the man of whose integrity you have the highest opinion and whose friendship is nearest your heart—I mean Lord Thanet, from whom my Aid-de-Camp has a letter for you, and also one from Sir Charles Davers. I do not enclose them, because the writers, little imagining how difficult your conduct would render our intercourse, desired they might be delivered to your own hands.

For this purpose, as well as to renew “the rights of fellowship,” I wish to see you; and, above all, I should find an interview happy if it should induce such explanations as might tend in their consequences to peace. I feel in common with all around me, for the unhappy bulk of this country; they foresee not the distress that is impending over them. I know Great Britain is ready to open her arms upon the first overture of accommodation; I know she is equally resolute to maintain her original rights; and if the war proceeds, your one hundred and fifty thousand men will not be a match for her power.

The place I would propose for our meeting is the house upon Boston Neck, just within our advanced sentries, called Brown’s house. I will obtain authority to give my parole of honor for your safe return. I shall expect the same on your part, that no insult be offered to me. If this plan is agreeable to you name your day and hour. At all events accept a sincere return of the assurances with which you honor me, and believe me in all personal considerations, affectionately yours,

J. BURGOYNE.

P. S. I obeyed your commands to Generals Howe and Clinton. I also communicated your letter and my answer to Lord Percy. They all join me in compliments, and authorize me to assure you they do the same in principle.

TO THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF MASSACHUSETTS.

Head Quarters, July 10th 1775.

GENERAL LEE presents his respects to the President and gentlemen of the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, and submits to their perusal a letter which he yesterday received from General Burgoyne, in answer to one which was read and approved of by the Delegates of this Province, and other members of the Continental Congress. He begs leave to receive their commands with respect to the proposed interview. If they approve of it, he shall be glad to accept of it; if they disapprove, he shall reject it. But if they approve of it, he must request that they will depute some one gentleman of their body to accompany General Lee, and be witness of the conversation. He desires their answer immediately, as he has engaged to inform Genl. Burgoyne by four o'clock this afternoon, whether the interview is to take place. He shall likewise be much obliged to the gentlemen if they will return the letter; but if they choose to take a copy of it, he can have no objection.

FROM THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF MASSACHUSETTS.

[Watertown, July 10, 1775.]

SIR :

The Congress have perused the letter from Genl. Burgoyne, which you was kind enough to submit to their inspection. They can have no objection to the proposed interview, from a want of the highest confi-

dence in the wisdom, discretion, and integrity of Gen. Lee ; but beg leave to suggest that as the confidence of the people in their General is so essentially necessary to the well-conducting the enterprise in which we are engaged, and as a people contending for their liberties are naturally disposed to jealousy, and not inclined to make the most favorable construction of the motives of conduct which they are not fully acquainted with, whether such an interview might not have a tendency to lessen the influence which the Congress would wish to extend to the utmost of their power to facilitate and succeed the operations of war.

The Congress, agreeable to your request, have to prevent as far as we are able, any disagreeable consequences which may arise from the jealousy of the people on such an occasion, appointed Mr Elbridge Gerry to attend you at the proposed interview, if you shall think proper to proceed in it ; and as they do not think themselves authorized to counteract the General's inclination, they would submit it to his opinion, whether the advice of the Council of war might not be taken in a matter of such apparent delicacy.

To the Honourable Genl. Lee.

TO GENERAL BURGOYNE.

Head-Quarters, Cambridge, July 11, 1775.

GEN. LEE's compliments to Gen. Burgoyne. Would be extremely happy in the interview he so kindly proposed ; but as he perceives that General Burgoyne has already made up his mind on this great subject, and as it is impossible that he (General Lee) should ever alter his opinion, he is apprehensive that the interview might create those jealousies and suspicions so natural to a people struggling in the dearest of all causes, that of their liberty, property, wives, children, and their future generation. He must, therefore, defer the happiness

of embracing a man whom he most sincerely loves, until the subversion of the present tyrannical Ministry and system, which he is persuaded must be in a few months, as he knows Great Britain cannot stand the contest. He begs General Burgoyne will send the letters which his Aid-de-Camp has for him—If Gardiner is his Aid-de-Camp, he desires his love to him.

FROM GENERAL GATES.

Head Quarters, Cambridge, July 12th 1775.

SIR : I am commanded by the General in Chief to acquaint you, that he is exceedingly desirous to draw the body of the troops posted at Roxbury, as near and as completely together, for the defence of the several works as the nature of the ground and the conveniency of covering them will admit; and to that end, the Genl. wishes you would inform him what tents, sails, or boards, may be wanted to cover the men, and they shall be forthwith supplied from hence. I have it also in command from the General to recommend it to you to have the houses removed out of the street at Roxbury, as they may cover and facilitate the approach of the enemy. The General further directs me to desire that you will exert your utmost vigilance to get your several works finished and completed, your lines closed, and particularly the abattis, and the platforms immediately laid. As we are much in want of boats for Mistick and Cambridge Rivers, you will as soon as possible send two for each of these rivers to the Head Quarters at Cambridge.

With great regard, Sir, I am your most humble Servant.

HORATIO GATES.

To General Lee.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

Cambridge July y^e 20th 17[75.]

MY DR. SIR

I am sorry that my Friend Dunlaps Boys [have] been so careless; the errors are really abominable—for [before] Colonel Graunt They have foisted in the late—so [he] is made a deceas'd Person. I do not know whether I [ought to] be displeased or pleas'd with the effects of my [letter] it has, as you say, acquir'd me popularity—it [implies that I] was suspected before—enclos'd I send you his answer, very civil and respectfull, but has no argument—it is vague and in some parts obscure. If I had time I wou'd carry on the controversy; but I am generally twelve hours on horseback for our lines of defence are fiveteen miles, so you may judge whether I have much time to write comments—I wish you wou'd take up the employment, but I wou'd have you do it with personal decency—He deserves it. We have a report that the Generals in Boston are upon bad terms together. I suppose They are damn'd mad with Gage for his misrepresentations to the Ministry, which has brought 'em into so ridiculous and disgracefull a situation. I have myself no idea of their intentions, or what they can possibly do, unless they turn to a piratical War, for in very few days our posts will be so well secured as to be hors d'insult; or at least, if any part is forced, it must be at the expense of a much greater number of men than the enemy have to spare—Upon my Soul the materials here (I mean the private men) are [admira]ble—had they proper uniforms, arms, and proper officers, their zeal, youth, bodily strength, good humour [and dext]erity, must make 'em an invincible army. The Rhode [Islanders] are well off in the article of officers and the young [officers of] the other Provinces are willing, and with a little time s will do very well—but from the old big wigs [—libera] nos Domine—the abil-

ities of their Engineers are not dant—I really believe not a single man of 'em is [capable] of constructing an Oven—What the Devil possess'd the Congress to send another petition to the callous Tyrant of St. J——s? I am afraid it will have a bad effect—it implies that some dregs of fear still remain amongst us, which of all things ought to be avoided—We must work on theirs, by talking high & acting decisively—but to whine at this crisis is weak and dangerous. God bless you My Dr Rush—When anything worth while falls out, you shall hear it—Write to me by every opportunity.

Yours most sincerely

C. LEE.

To Doctor Benjamin Rush,
Philadelphia.

TO GENERAL THOMAS.

July 23rd 1775.

SIR,

It is with the greatest concern that I have heard of your intention to quit the service of your country at a crisis when men of merit can be so ill spared. You think yourself not justly dealt with in the appointments of the Continental Congress. I am quite of the same opinion, but is this a time Sir, when the liberties of your country, the fate of posterity, the rights of mankind are at stake, to indulge our resentments for any ill treatment we may have received as individuals? I have myself, Sir, full as great, perhaps greater reason to complain than yourself. I have passed through the highest ranks, in some of the most respectable services in Europe. According then to modern etiquette notions of a soldier's honor and delicacy, I ought to consider at least the preferment given to General Ward over me as the highest indignity, but I thought it my

duty as a citizen and asserter of liberty, to waive every consideration. On this principle, although a Major General of five years standing, and not a native of America, I consented to serve under General Ward, because I was taught to think that the concession would be grateful to his countrymen, and flatter myself that the concession has done me credit in the eye of the world; and can you, Sir, born in this very country, which a banditti of ministerial assassins are now attempting utterly to destroy with sword, fire and famine, abandon the defence of her, because you have been personally ill used?

For God Almighty's sake, for the sake of everything that is dear, and ought to be dear to you, for the sake of your country, of mankind, and let me add of your own reputation, discard such sentiments. Consider well the dreadful consequence such a pernicious example may occasion; consider well whether such a proceeding may not bring down upon your head the contempt and abhorrence of that community which has hitherto most justly held you in the highest estimation.

I beg you will excuse the liberty I take in thus addressing you; and ascribe it to the true motive—a zeal for the public good, and the great regard I have for your personal self, and that you will believe me to be most sincerely yours

CHARLES LEE.

General Thomas.

TO GENERAL SULLIVAN.

Cambridge, July 24th 1775, Two oclock, P. M.

GENERAL LEE begs General Sullivan will get as much work as possible out of the men this day. If they cannot all work on the face of the citadel, let

them deepen and widen the ditch of the flank and rear faces, and heighten the parapet all around.

To Genl. Sullivan.

P. S. For God's sake finish and strengthen the abattis.

To ROBERT MORRIS.

Winter Hill July 27, 1775.

MY DEAR SIR,

I have received your most friendly letter and hope my Virginian Affair will be finished immediately as we have just received a letter from Mr. Hite from whom I am to purchase. I am very happy (as we all must be) that the Philadelphia affairs are in hands like yours. I wish to God the N. York were in the same. Why the devil is not Tryon seized? He is capable and I believe willing to do infinite mischief. Your compliments make me rather vain. As to zeal and industry I think I deserve 'em—for I work like ten post Horses. Our miserable defect of Engineers imposes upon me eternal work in a department to which I am rather a stranger—the undoing what we found done gives us more trouble than doing what was left undone—however we have contrived to make ourselves pretty secure—the Enemy seem to aim at the same object—Upon the whole they act and I believe will act upon the defensive unless they turn to a piratical war—If they attempt an attack on any part of our lines we shall I am apt to think make a considerable hole in their seven thousand men—which I suppose to be a pretty just estimate—five Deserters came over to us these last four and twenty hours who all agree that they entertain at present no thoughts of attacking: But they are hoping and expecting (but from whence they cannot tell) reinforcements—one while from Canada, another from England, sometimes from Russia.

This announces at least a lowness of pulse. If I were General Washington however I should jump at the offer of your third Battalion Riflemen—indeed I should demand some entire Battalion from your Province—and should propose disbanding the same number of Battalions of Massachusetts—Not but the Private men are admirable and the young officers tolerable but they have in fact engaged for more than they can perform, Eight Thousand are full as much as they can compleat. Connecticut, N. Hampshire could furnish many more than is settled by the Congress. Moiland has come up to us, but unfortunately has dangled his time after some intrigue (for he calls every woman who has a body to her shift an intrigue) until my two Aid de Campships were filled up. I wish you would recommend him to the members of the Continental Congress with whom you are acquainted for some provision. I shall write to every one with whom I have any interest on the same subject—

Adieu my Dr Sir—My love to M^{rs} Morris and believe me to be most sincerely

Yours

C. LEE.

DRAFT—TO GENERAL GAGE.

[August, 1775.]

SIR,

In my letter, lately sent into Boston, all political disquisition was designedly avoided. I did not avail myself of the advantages which the sacred cause of my country, of liberty, and of human nature, manifestly gave me over Mr. Gage. I remonstrated with you in decent terms, with respect to the hard and unworthy treatment shewn, as I have been informed, to the soldiers and citizens of America, whom the fortune of war, chance, or an erroneous opinion of your honour, had thrown into your hands. In answer to this remonstrance, we are insulted with the most outrageous lan-

guage, and abusive epithets. Were we, Sir, the worst of traitors; had we conspired to subvert the liberties of our fellow subjects; had we conspired to re-establish on the throne the expelled tyrants of the Stuart house; or, could we be charged with any notorious breach of faith; had we, for instance, seduced some part of the troops under your command, upon certain conditions, into a surrender of their arms, and afterwards violated our engagement, the style which you assume would scarcely be justifiable.

You affect, Sir, to despise all rank not derived from the same source with your own: to speak, as I think, with becoming pride, it is impossible to conceive a more honourable source than that to which I owe my present station. I was called to it by the voice of the freely chosen delegates of a virtuous and uncorrupt people. Yours, for ought I know, and, as I am told, is frequently the case, might have been obtained by connections with some prostitute part of a prostitute House of Commons.

You threaten us, Sir, with a cord: Begin, Sir; I dare you to it. Although my nature shudders at the thought, necessity will force us to retaliate; and we have it in our power, Mr. Gage, to make a ten-fold retaliation.

You have the confidence to appeal to that Almighty God whose every law you have violated. Let that Almighty God, to whom the rights and happiness of his creatures cannot be indifferent, judge then between us. When the great and tremendous day shall arrive; when all mortals are to render a strict account, which do you apprehend, Sir, will have the greatest reason to tremble? The virtuous citizens, now forced to arms by the hands of tyranny; in arms not to rob, spoil, and invade; not as mercenary instruments to gratify the lust, ambition, avarice, or revenge of sceptered robbers or wicked ministers, but to defend their wives, children, and household goods, and to deliver down to their posterity the bright inheritance of freedom they received

from their forefathers: which, I once more demand, shall, on that dreadful day, have the greatest reason to tremble? The citizens engaged in this righteous cause, or those men, who by artifice, misrepresentation, and falsehood, have not only stained this fair continent with the blood of her children, but shaken the mighty empire of Britain to her foundation.

I shall now Sir, close my correspondence with you, perhaps for ever, assuring you, that the intelligence you have received, with respect to the harsh treatment of the prisoners in our possession, is as remote from fact, as that which you have constantly transmitted to the ministry, when speaking of the principles and designs of America. Not only the officers and soldiers have been treated with the tenderness due to fellow-citizens and brethren, but even those execrable parricides born amongst us, who have aimed their daggers at the vitals of their parent, have been protected from the fury of a most justly enraged people.

I shall now Sir, only add, that for the future, whatever mode of conduct you shall think proper to observe towards those of our people who are in your custody, such exactly are the ministerialists to expect in return.

I am, Sir, Your most obedient,

Humble servant,

C. LEE.

Gen. Gage.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

Camp on Winter Hill, August 12, 1775.

MY D^R SIR,

Can you think after the load of jobbs I have imposed upon you and the numberless obligations I have received from you that I should be displeased with your recommendations? I think indeed you ought to make an apology for your apologizing—the gentlemen

you have introduced have a claim to the best reception from other circumstances—We want able People in the medical Way and Mr. Luken's talents as a Draftsman make him quite a treasure. If you have any more such presents to make let us have 'em. I am only afraid that there are few things unoccupied worth their acceptance. We are at present in exactly the same inactive staring situation as when I wrote to you last. Our posts grow every day more secure the enemy seem every day more apprehensive, when anything falls out worth your hearing I shall not fail writing—My love to Mrs. Morris, and be assured that I am

Most sincerely yours

CHARLES LEE.

We sent in yesterday a most serious message to Gage but I cannot give you a copy without G. Washington's consent. I wish to God my purchase in Virginia was made. I hope Mr White or Mr Norse will soon draw upon you for the money. I believe I desired you in my last to honour the bills of either one or the other.

TO RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Camp on Winter Hill, Sep. 2^d. 1775.

MY DEAR FRIEND:

We have just heard of the strange manœuvre of sending back the clothing which was taken from Philadelphia. I have only time to express my astonishment and apprehension that this conduct will betray some degree of fear, than which nothing can be more pernicious both here and on the other side of the water. Upon this principle, I must confess I was shocked at your last Address to the King. I am confident it will do mischief; it will bring on a negotiation, which perhaps will be fatal. That callous tyrant must have his fears alone worked upon. If I did address him, I would do it in the following style: "Sir, if you do not

withdraw your troops upon the receipt of this, we will absolve ourselves from all allegiance to you, and we will divorce ourselves forever from Britain, whose abject patience in suffering such tyranny as that she has experienced through your whole reign, renders her totally unworthy to be the presiding power of a great Empire."

This is the style you should adopt; it is the only style which can possibly succeed. I rejoice that Congress has made the acquisition of your brother. My love and respects to him. Have you received my long scroll. For God's sake let me hear from you soon. God bless you, my dear friend, and send the common cause all the success it merits from a righteous being.

Farewell! Yours, most truly and sincerely,
CHARLES LEE.

FROM GENERAL GREENE.

Prospect Hill, Sept 5, 1775.

SIR

The bearer Colonel Ebbons [Aborn] from Rhode Island is a Gentleman of good Character and a family of distinction—from his public Spirit he has permitted his Son to enter into the Service a lad of about fourteen years of age. He is now Sick in hospital—the Doctor recommends a ride into the Country—the Colonel has brought down a Shaize to carry him and one Thornton home with him, they are both unfit for duty and will be for some time. As soon as they get fit for duty the Colonel promises to return them to Camp—You may depend upon his honor in what he engages—I wish you may find freedom to gratify the Colonel in his request. I am Sir your most obedient humble Servant

NATH GREENE.

Camp on Winter Hill 5th Sept 1775.

The within named John Anthony Aborn & Christ^r Thornten in Colo Varnum's Regiment has leave of absence for five weeks for the recovery of their Health
(Signed) CHARLES LEE Major General.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

Camp at Prospect Hill Sept. 7. 1775.

MY DEAR SIR

I have received your letter of August 26th and have just time to answer you by a single line the powers you are invested with I apprehend are sufficient to complete the business which I have so much at heart. I wish it may be done as soon as possible and am most happy that you have undertaken it, as I have if possible a greater confidence in you than myself—but enough of this—You have judged extremely well in not trusting too much to M^r Hite as he is by all reports a very acute genius. As to the mortgages, we were apprized at Philadelphia and sent a list of 'em to M^r Norse and M^r White—Adieu My dr Sir,

Yours most affectionately

C. LEE.

You mentioned to me a bond I was to sign—Why is it not arrived?

Altho' we want powder most cruelly we rather approach than retire from the Enemy. On Sunday sevenight I took possession of Plow'd Hill with the loss only of four men. I should have compounded for sixty or an hundred men. We have made it a very strong post so that M^r Gage will almost begin to think that our affectation of besieging him is something like

reallity. I write a line by this Post informing Mr. Hite that I imagine your Powers are sufficient. My respects to Mrs. Morris.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

Camp on Winter Hill Sep. y^e 19. 1775.

MY DR. RUSH,

I am extremely sorry that your Philadelphians have been buoy'd up with the news of so complete a victory, and more so that I am the Hero who have gain'd it—When men fall from great expectations, They are apt to esteem themselves deceiv'd by those who have been the reputed actors of the things They wish'd, altho' They had no hand in raising these expectations—Not a syllable of the Bunker's Hill seduction and victory has the least foundation in truth, indeed from all appearances not all the astutia of Hanibal or Sertorius wou'd draw 'em from their nest—let me communicate to you my sentiments, but at the same time I must desire you to be secret. I think then We might have attack'd 'em long before this and with success, were our Troops differently constituted—but the fatal perswasion has taken deep root in the minds of the Americans from the highest to the lowest order that they are no match for the Regulars, but when cover'd by a wall or breast work. This notion is still further strengthen'd by the endless works We are throwing up—in short unless we can remove the idea (and it must be done by degrees) no spirited action can be ventur'd on without the greatest risk—to inculcate a different way of thinking, to inspire 'em with some confidence pugnando manubus, I first propos'd a body of spearmen for each Regiment at Philadelphia, and I cou'd perceive that the proposal appear'd to many to be the production of a distemper'd brain; but I am afraid They may find to their cost

some time or other that the principle was sound, and that They will suffer by not adopting it. You alarm me extremely in expressing apprehensions of divisions starting up amongst the members of the Congress. Good Gods, I was in hopes that we shou'd reap the full harvest Which We have sown with such infinite pains and labor. [I agree with you entirely in the opinion that they ought (at least half of them) to be changed annually.] I condemn with you the barbarous, dangerous custom of loading the Servants of the People with the trappings of Court Titles. I cannot conceive who the Devil first devis'd the bauble of Excellency for their Commander in Chief, or the more ridiculous of His Honour for me—Upon my Soul They make me spew—even the tacking honorable to the Continental Congress creates a wambling in my stomack—What cou'd add dignity to the simple title of the Continental Congress of America, as long as they do their duty? And the instant They grow corrupt or slavish from timidity all the rumbling sounds of honorable, serene, mighty, sublime, or magnanimous, will only make their infamy more infamous. I am much pleas'd that my laughing at Mr Adams's description of me in his intercepted Letter has met with approbation—but I cannot conceive how any man who has any share of understanding cou'd be offended at it. I am called whimsical and a lover of Dogs. As to the former charge, I am heartily glad that it is my character, for untill the common rotine of mankind is somewhat mended I shall wish to remain and be thought eccentric—and when my honest quadruped Friends are equal'd by the bipeds in fidelity, gratitude, or even good sense I will promise to become as warm a philanthropist as Mr. Addison himself affected to be—to say the truth I think the strongest proof of a good heart is to love Dogs and dislike Mankind. I know very well that it is hazarding a great deal to profess a dislike to mankind in general, but if you are generous, undesigning and public spirited yourself, you will naturally expect the same in others;

and the frequent disappointments We meet with as naturally sours us against the whole species—it certainly appears paradoxical, but if you will examine history you will find all or almost all the Enthusiasts for general liberty had the reputation of being cynically dispos'd—now I chuse to construe a cynical disposition a love of Dogs, in preference to some other animals who are pleas'd to think their convenience, pleasures, and dignity were the only objects of the great Creator of all things. So much for Dogs and myself. [I do suppose Dickison will be confoundedly piqued at Adams's attack on his genius—I am sorry it has been published—altho' I really think his late proceedings cannot be reconciled to consummate talents or even common sense—but you remember the maxim of de Retz that the head is always the dupe of the heart—and if I have any observation—the natural constitutional pusillanimity of our Farmer has rendered him totally unfit to tread the stage of public affairs when pieces of bustle and action are to be performed. He might and I believe he would acquit himself well in the declamation of the sententious uninteresting Comedy of Terrence as long as the theatre is hush'd but the least uproar either in the pit or boxes wou'd put him so out of his part—that he would have a chance of being hissed, laughed at and perhaps pelted with oranges.]

I intreat, My Dr. Rush, you will pardon this damn'd heap of nonsense, for to confess honestly, I can make neither head or tail of it myself, and I have no time to write a letter, and if I had time I have no paper. So adieu, and believe me to be most sincerely yours

CHARLES LEE.

TO JOHN ADAMS.

Camp, 5 October, 1775.

MY DEAR SIR :—As you may possibly harbor some suspicions that a certain passage in your intercepted

letters (may) have made some disagreeable impressions on my mind, I think it necessary to assure you that it is quite the reverse. Until the bulk of mankind is much altered, I consider the reputation of being whimsical and eccentric rather as a panegyric than sarcasm, and my love of dogs passes with me as a still higher compliment. I have, thank Heaven! a heart susceptible of friendship and affection. I must have some object to embrace. Consequently, when once I can be convinced that men are as worthy objects as dogs, I shall transfer my benevolence, and become as staunch a philanthropist as the canting Addison affected to be. But you must not conclude from hence that I give in to general misanthropy. On the contrary, when I meet with a biped endowed with generosity, valor, good sense, patriotism, and zeal for the rights of humanity I contract a friendship and passion for him amounting to bigotry or dotage; and let me assure you without compliments that you yourself appear to me possessed of these qualities. I give you my word and honor that I am serious; and I should be unhappy to the greatest degree if I thought you would doubt of my sincerity. Your opinion, therefore, of my attainments as a soldier and scholar is extremely flattering. Long may you continue in this, to me, *gratissimus error*. But something too much of this.

Before this reaches you, the astonishing and terrifying accusation, or rather detection, of Dr. Church, will be reported to the Congress. I call it astonishing, for, admitting his intentions not to be criminal, so gross a piece of stupidity in so sensible a man is quite a portent; and, supposing him guilty, it is terrifying to the last degree, as such a revolt must naturally infect with jealousy all political affiance. It will spread an universal diffidence and suspicion, than which nothing can be more pernicious to men embarked in a cause like ours, the corner stone of which is laid not only on honor, virtue, and disinterestedness, but on the persuasion that the whole are actuated by the same divine

principles. I devoutly wish that such may not be the effects.

We long here to receive some news from the Congress. Now is the time to shew your firmness. If the least timidity is displayed, we and all posterity are ruined; on the contrary, at this crisis courage and steadiness must infuse the blessings of liberty not only to Great Britain but perhaps to all mankind. Do not go hobbling on, like the Prince of Lilliput, with one high-heeled shoe, one low one, for you will undoubtedly fall upon your noses every step you take. It is my humble opinion that you ought to begin by confiscating (or at least laying under heavy contributions) the estates of all the notorious enemies to American liberty through the Continent. This would lighten the burthen which must otherwise fall heavy on the shoulders of the community. That afterwards you should invite all the maritime powers of the world into your ports. If they are so dull as not to accept the invitation, wean yourselves from all ideas of foreign commerce, and become entirely a nation of ploughmen and soldiers. A little habit, and I am persuaded you will bless yourselves for the resolution. But I am running into an essay; shall, therefore, to prevent pedantry and impertinence, stop short with once more assuring you that I am,

Most truly and affectionately yours

C. LEE.

My respects to your namesake, and let me hear from you. Spada sends his love to you, and declares, in very intelligible language, that he has fared much better since your allusion to him, for he is caressed now by all ranks, sexes, and ages.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

Camp on Winter Hill Oct. y^e 10th [1775.]

MY DR. RUSH,

I think you ought to apologise for your apologies. I have often told you that nothing can give me greater pleasure than the frequency of your letters—I only wish you wou'd make 'em longer—for God's sake let me have one every post and add something to the length—*si nihil habes quod scribas, hoc nihil scribas*. General Washington's letter I think a very good one, but Gage certainly deserv'd a still stronger one, such as it was before it was soften'd—that gentleman has now run his race of glory—I am afraid your intended Philippic will not reach him—damn him! let [us leave] him alone to the hell of his own conscience and the infamy which must inevitably attend him! You see I have not left off swearing, but am in hopes that your reproofs and time will bring about reformation. I am sorry that we have reason to apprehend bad consequences from the publication of Adams's letter—surely Dickenson cannot be so ill arm'd in zeal for liberty as to suffer private pique to slacken him in the public cause—if it has this effect, he must forfeit all title to the reputation of a truly virtuous citizen. What in the Devil's name possesses the Congress in not giving orders to seize that scoundrel Tryon?—Scoundrel is not too harsh an epithet for the man who will accept of any office under the present hellish Administration, as They can only hold their office by a Scoundrel Tenure—any delicacy of this kind at present is not only ridiculous but must be pernicious—it confirms me in an opinion that I have long held—viz: that in public Contests, Rogues with inferior capacities, are an overmatch for the honest, with superior—the latter are always hesitating lest They should not act consonantly to the rule of rectitude, whereas the former find no stumbling blocks. Cato's parts were perhaps equal to Cæsar's, but Cato would never have forced the doors of

the Temple of Ops where the publick treasure was lodg'd. Brutus (cou'd he have relax'd at certain junctures from his inflexible divine notions of honor and virtue) wou'd have baffled and crush'd that reprobate Anthony—indeed a thousand instances might be produced from ancient History in support of my Hypothesis. I suppose the Tories are in high spirits with the news of Hanoverians, Hessians, Ships of War, &c—for my own part I maintain the same opinion the more They send the better, the sooner They will be exhausted, & I am sure if We continue firm They cannot subdue us—the Congress must give better pay to their Officers, for the present miserable pittance will not tempt men of liberal notions to engage in the Service—it is indeed a fortune to the low wretches who live like the Common Soldiers and with the Common Soldiers, but men who chuse to preserve the decent distance of officers, must have a decent subsistence, and without this distance no authority or respect can be expected. I once was of opinion, that some Battalions from the Southward wou'd be necessary—but I have alter'd my opinion. I am now perswaded you have not to the Southward so good materials for common soldiers. Your Riflemen have a good deal open'd our eyes upon this subject, tho' to do justice to their officers They are unexceptionable; their Privates are in general damn'd riff raff—dirty, mutinous, and disaffected. We grow very impatient for Powder. [You ought, my Friend, to be a little more upon your guard in declaring your Republican sentiments to the Southern People—Virginians and Carolinians are not yet prepared for such doctrines.] I must now close—the Post is just going out—Give my respects to Colonel Cadwallader—I have received his letter recommending Mr. Duncan—but Mr. Duncan is not here—I intend to answer the Colonel next post, but cannot at present.

Yours most affectionately

CHARLES LEE.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

Camp on Winter Hill, Oct^r y^e 20.

MY D^R RUSH,

I hope you received my last letter wherein I hinted to you how necessary it is to be cautious in broaching your Republican doctrines, tho' I cannot, for my own part conceive that there should be two opinions on the subject, and think that the most nonsensical idea that ever enter'd the head of that nonsensical animal, man, is to invest the most stupid and worthless part of his species (which a Prince from his education must undoubtedly be) with so great a part of his property as to enable him to take away the rest at his leisure, and to encourage him to every transgression of duty by assuring him of personal impunity, for such I think is the substance of those divine maxims of the English Constitution; viz: a *King can do no wrong*—*his Person is to be considered as Sacred*, and other similar disgusting absurdities—these beastly Barbarisms so shocking to common sense, and repugnant to the eternal rules of justice, strike my understanding, I say so forcibly, that there is no miracle recorded in sacred writ half so miraculous in my opinion, as that there shou'd be two men who are suffer'd to go about without bibs and bells, blockheads enough to give into 'em—but We must deal with the Animal beastly and barbarous as We find it— You are a Physician, and I believe an able one— Wou'd you venture to prescribe at once wholesome solid nutritious diet to a stomach weaken'd and contaminated by a flimsy windy and noxious course of feeding? It is the same in politicks. I am the more perswaded of the necessity of management in this article from the conversation held by all our late Virginia and Carolina Visitors. They seem to me without exception to be exactly in the whimsical state of the Prince of Liliput hobbling with one high shoe and one low one—*homines qui nec totam servitutem pati possunt, nec totam liberta-*

tem—I am apprehensive, that I have myself been too unguarded upon this subject—Poor Gates, who is as mad an enthusiast as Colonel Rumbald himself has frighten'd 'em out of their Wits—For God's sake then, let time and circumstances work—Our damn'd Tyrant of St. James's whose folly, if possible, surpasses his villany will if you give him ropes bring about the righteous event—Already the ton is amongst those, who are so hard to be wean'd from the Worship of the golden Calf, that they begin to suspect the K—— is full as bad as the worst of his Ministry, to have advanc'd such a proposition last year, wou'd have been thought treason and impiety. Next year—if you will have patience King and Tyrant will be a synonymous term as it was in the glorious epocha's of Greece—nay I am even sanguine enough to flatter myself that Nurses will soon frighten their naughty children if They do not cease crying that the King will fetch 'em away. [En attendant, I wish you wou'd keep your pen bright in its scabbard and only draw it when absolute occasion requires.]

Yours most sincerely,

I wish you wou'd write every Post. I wish you may be able to read this—I am sure I cannot—it is damn'd late and the pen execrable.

To Doctor Benjamin Rush, Philadelphia.

To ALEXANDER McDUGALL.

Camp on Winter Hill Oct^r ye 26th [1775.]

DR SIR—

You will have heard long before this of the inhuman busyness of Falmouth—the tragedy acted by these hellhounds of an execrable Ministry with a more accursed Tyrant at their head now calls out for decision—for Heaven's sake, My Dr Sir, let your City no longer hold

the honest in suspense by their shilly shally mode of conduct is this a time when whole communities are laid waste by the Dogs of War to address or suffer addresses to be presented to the delegate of an infernal Despot? can any man in his senses suppose that Tryon who cannot hold his commission by any other tenure but that of contriving by fraud or force to subvert the freedom of this Continent be dup'd by his professions? You are, it seems, afraid of your Town in the first place I do not believe that They dare fire upon it—but if it was earnestly their intention you have I think, the means of preventing it—seize by one bold stroke this Tryon and all his associates—then, assure the Capt of the Man of War that the first House He sets on fire shall be the funeral pile of his Excellency—and You ought really to execute your threats—if you do not adopt this method, I am confident you will repent it—if the seizure of his Person cannot be effected by public authority, you may work upon some glowing young Particulars to the undertaking I can solemnly assure you when the stroke is struck it will be supported and applauded by the Men whose support and applause I am persuaded, you are most ambitious and interested to obtain—I can, further assure you that in this quarter many murmurs and much discontent are already heard and manifested from its not having been done—but the intemperance of my zeal will, I am afraid, hurry me into impertinence at least using arguments of instigation with the most ardent of Patriots (for such you are most justly esteem'd) is not very consistent with modesty or decency, but the very ardor with which you are possess'd will insure my pardon—there is another report prevalent in the army not much to the advantage of New York—it is said that your People of the lower and honester class had seiz'd a number of Blankets, that your Congress restored 'em to the Officers of the Crown, you may easily conceive how unpopular and odious such a step must be—The Soldiers here starving from want of Cloathing cannot well relish a complaisance of this nature—but the higher

order of Officers seem still more shock'd—Once more, My Dr Sir, I beg you will excuse these liberties—and believe me to be most truly and sincerely yours—

CHARLES LEE.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

Camp on Winter Hill, Nov^r y^e 13th.

MY DR. RUSH,

I suspect some neglect or treachery in the Post, as I have only received one letter from you, and have wrote most constantly—the single letter I receiv'd was a very good one—the spirit of attack as your new military friend tells you has undoubtedly an advantage over the mere simple spirit of defence. Duke Ferdinand is beyond dispute a very great soldier, but if he is at the same time a Philosopher he wou'd not dictate the same measure to different Troops—if the Army before Boston had been Russians, Boston must have been ours, or the Generals ought to be hang'd—but They are not Russians and the Generals are or ought to be unexcusable—if the War continues They will meliorate and We shall act accordingly—the men (as I observ'd before) are excellent materials, but the lower order of officers are execrable. They are intriguing, factious, and dastardly—this I speak with exceptions—but the bulk deserve the epithets—Our new Army will I hope and believe be good. We purge it daily. What do you think of the proclamation? it has the air (in my opinion) of great tremor and trepidation. The Tyrants have not the courage to specify who They mean by Rebels—No man can guess at whom their thunder is levell'd—the Congress passes by unmention'd—divers People in divers parts abetted by divers unknown correspondent Rebellious traitorous Persons at home are told what? that the King is determin'd to put an end to their traitorous actions and more traitorous correspondence—in fact, if ever there was a brutum fulmen,

this is fulmen brutissimum—a guard in my division has just taken two Prisoners from Bunkers Hill; three Deserters are likewise come into Roxborough. They tell us that three or four or five Transports are arriv'd in the harbour but that the rest are beating on the coast—if so They have a blessed time of it for the North Easterly storms have been violent and without intermission. We perhaps may strike the same motto that Elizabeth did—*afflavit Deus et Dissipantur*—the Congress have now a noble field to display virtue, liberality, and ancient heroism—Methinks I see a Fabricius mounting a Rostrum in Canada, proclaiming by sound of trumpet liberty to the people. I am most sincerely rejoiced that my Friend Montgomery is the Conqueror—my virtue is mounted to that height that I am indifferent about military honor[s] myself, if the Public cause is triumphant tho' I believe We shall have field here before We have done, to shew what we are, for unless I am much deceived in General Howe he will put us to the tryal. God bless you my D^r Friend, and write to me every post.

Yours most Sincerely

C. LEE.

Apropos — We had a scurry the other day on Lechmore's Point with General Clinton and a body of his Mirmydons. Col. Thompson and his Riflers acquitted themselves most nobly—Our Friend Mifflin play'd the part of himself, that is, of a Hero.

To Doctor Benjamin Rush, Philadelphia.

FROM JAMES OTIS.

Council Chamber, November 14, 1775.

SIR :

The Council, to their great surprise, last evening were informed that a copy of a letter, lately from Ire-

land, had been taken, the writer of which mentions the name of Lee not in the most favorable point of light. It was not transcribed by the Council, nor any member thereof, nor were they privy to its being done. They think it criminal that they should have presumed to do it. They will do all in their power to prevent the spread of any copies and impressions on the minds of the people to the disadvantage of your Honor. The letter produced no one unfavorable idea of you in the minds of the Council. They are sensible that the fairest and the most unblemished character is not a sufficient shield against the attempts of malignant foes, stimulated by malice and a different interest to vilify and traduce. But, so far from that, when we consider the present state of Great Britain, and the servile sentiments of too many of the people there, that *you* were educated in the highest reverence for the rights of mankind, and the partial regard which you have discovered for the people of America, whose hearts are filled with gratitude, we are at a loss to know which is the highest evidence of your virtues—the greatness and number of your friends, or the malice and envy of your foes.

In the name and by the order of the Council :

JAMES OTIS,
President.

To General Lee.

To ROBERT MORRIS.

Camp Nov. 22^d 1775.

MY DR FRIEND.

If I omit writing to you by every post you must attribute it to the absolute impossibility arising from the hurry of business or want of matter, for my inclinations are to be eternally talking to you or thanking you for the many acts of friendship I have received from your hands—Did Hell ever spawn such a rascal as that Hite ?

How lucky it is we did not advance any sum of money to him? As I am pleased with his place I have given injunctions to Mr. Nourse to submit to his impositions if on the whole he thinks it a good purchase, if not, he is to look for another and desired for that purpose to keep the money in his hands, for I have now discarded all thoughts of returning to that abominable seat of corruption and folly my native Country. No man of common honesty and common sense can reside in it—things now wear so favorable an aspect; fortune and even the elements conspire in so wonderful a manner that we must be sav'd in spite of ourselves. The Tory Army in Boston are by all accounts of Deserters in such inconceivable distress that had we powder and our army was completed it is most probable we should get possession of the Town this winter indeed there is reason to hope that without the first of these circumstances, disaffection, mutiny and desertion of the Troops may throw it into our hands, these N. England men are a strange composition. Their commonality is undoubtedly good, but they are so defective in materials for officers that it must require time to make a real good army out of 'em—enclosed I send you the address of the Generals to the Soldiers. You must know that some Officers who are discarded from the service are suspecting of exerting themselves to dissuade the soldiers from reenlisting—to counteract their machinations was the design of this paper. I am in raptures with the addresses of your associations and Privates. I defy the world to quote performance breathing greater sentiments or replete with more solid reasoning—did ever impudence and cant match that of the Quakers, to enjoy all the blessings of liberty without contributing a single mite towards the acquiring or preservation of that blessing is a degree of iniquity which none but the disciples of Jesuitism can arrive at—You will readily excuse the shortness of this scroll, whenever I have the means of entertaining or informing you my letters shall be sine fine—Adieu my D^r Morris—my love and regards to your

fair and most sensible partner, and believe me to be most sincerely

Yours

CHARLES LEE.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

Camp on Winter Hill Dec. 9.[1775.]

MY D^R FRIEND,

I have just received the agreeable news that my purchase is compleated and on terms more grateful than expected. I once more must earnestly thank you for your activity and zeal to serve me, if I were capable to forget the obligations I have to you for a single instant I should deserve all the abuse which I find I am loaded with in letters intercepted and some of the public papers, but thank heaven, my enemies are the enemies of virtue and liberty. We now my Friend sail triumphantly before the wind. The reduction of Canada for I suppose it is reduced gives the coup de grace to the hellish junto. Montgomery and Arnold deserve statues of Gold and I hope the Congress will erect 'em. We were some time apprehensive of losing everything from the backwardness of the men in enlisting—it is supposed that the discarded officers laboured to render the soldiers disaffected, but the men really have public spirits and recruiting goes on most swimmingly. I dare say we shall have an excellent army before Spring—if we had but Powder, Boston would be ours, I think inevitably this winter—the ministerialists if we may believe the concurrent accounts of Deserters and others who have broke their Prison are in a most distressful situation and live in mortal apprehension of being daily attacked or burnt to ashes—but we have as yet not the necessary materials—for God's sake what was the meaning? or on what principles did your assembly lay that strange injunction on their delegates on the subject of independence? I do not find that the

question was ever agitated the injunction was therefore ill timed and impolitic to say no more of it—it cannot be attended with any good consequences and may have many bad ones, it indirectly confirms the charge against America of aiming at throwing off all connexion with the parent country a charge trumped up by the creatures of administration to prejudice the people at home against you—this allegation seem'd to have no foundation until the Assembly of Pennsylvania had furnished one—in fact it appears to me that your Province is most unfairly and inadequately represented—that it must be corrected and rendered more competent, tho' I know it is pragmatistical and impertinent for an alien to interfere in the legislation of a country if the People are contented with it. I cannot help wishing that your back Countries may be roused into some melioration of what I esteem so imperfect—I have written a parting letter to my friend Burgoyne who is on the point of sailing for England. You shall have a copy by the next post—Gates who is pleased to think it has great merit sends one to-morrow to Franklin—have you done anything about my three thousand pounds? Notwithstanding the late stuff called a Proclamation I am apt to believe the Bills will be accepted for a Gentleman here lately from England who was present when it was read at the Royal Exchange makes very light of it. He says it was hissed, groaned and universally despised. In short I must repeat that I believe the day is our own. The Canadian business must upset the whole system—Adieu my D^r Sir. God bless you—my respects to Mrs Morris—

Yours most sincerely
C. LEE.

TO GENERAL BURGOYNE.

Camp on Prospect Hill, Dec. 1st, 1775.

DEAR SIR,

As I am just informed you are ready to embark for England, I cannot refrain from once more trespassing on your patience. An opportunity is now presented of immortalizing yourself as the saviour of your country. The whole British empire stands tottering on the brink of ruin, and you have it in your power to prevent the fatal catastrophe; but it will admit of no delay. For heaven's sake avail yourself of the precious moment: put an end to the delusion: exert the voice of a brave, virtuous citizen; and tell the people at home, that they must immediately rescind all their impolitic, iniquitous, tyrannical, murderous acts; that they must overturn the whole frantic system, or that they are undone. You ask me, in your letter, if it is independence at which the Americans aim? I answer, No; the idea never entered a single American's head, until the most intolerable oppression forced it upon them. All they required was, to remain masters of their own property, and be governed by the same equitable laws which they had enjoyed from the first formation of the Colonies. The ties of connection which bound them to their parent country, were so dear to them, that he who would have ventured to touch them, would have been considered as the most impious of mortals; but these sacred ties, the same men, who have violated or baffled the most precious laws and rights of the people at home, dissipated, or refused to account for their treasures, tarnished the glory, and annihilated the importance of the nation: these sacred ties, I say, so dear to every American, Bute and his tory administration are now rending asunder.

You ask, whether it is the weight of taxes of which they complain? I answer, No: It is the principle they combat, and they would be guilty in the eyes of God

and men, of the present world, and all posterity, did they not reject it; for if it were admitted, they would have nothing that they could call their own; they would be in a worse condition than the wretched slaves in the West India islands, whose little peculium has ever been esteemed inviolate. But, wherefore should I dwell on this? Is not the case with Ireland the same with theirs? They are subordinate to the British empire; they are subordinate to the Parliament of Great Britain, but they tax themselves. Why, as the case is similar, do you begin with them? But you know, Mr. Burgoyne, audacious as the ministry are, they dare not attempt it. There is one part of your letter which, I confess I do not understand. If I recollect right, (for I unfortunately, have not the letter by me,) you say that if the privilege of taxing themselves is what the Americans claim, the contest is at an end. You surely cannot allude to the propositions of North. It is impossible that you should not think, with me and all mankind, that these propositions are no more or less than adding to a most abominable oppression, a more abominable insult. But, to recur to the question of Americans aiming at independence: Do any instructions of any one of the provinces to their representatives, or delegates, furnish the least ground for this suspicion? On the contrary, do they not all breathe the strongest attachment and filial piety to their parent country? But if she discards all the natural tenderness of a mother, and acts the part of a cruel step-dame, it must naturally be expected that their affections will cease; the ministry leave them no alternative, *aut serviri, aut alienari jubent*; it is in human nature; it is a moral obligation to adopt the latter. But the fatal separation has not yet taken place, and yourself, your single self, my friend, may perhaps, prevent it. Upon the ministry, I am afraid, you can make no impression; for, to repeat a hackneyed quotation,

They are in blood
Stepped in so far, that, should they wade no more,
To return would be as tedious as go o'er.

But, if you will at once break off all connections with these pernicious men ; if you will wave all consideration, but the salvation of your country, Great Britain may stand as much indebted to General Burgoyne, as Rome was to her Camillus. Do not, I entreat you, my dear Sir, think this the mad rhapsody of an enthusiast, nor the cant of a factious designing man ; for, in these colours, I am told, I am frequently painted. I swear by all that's sacred, as I hope for comfort and honour in this world, and to avoid misery in the next, that I most earnestly and devoutly love my native country ; that I wish the same happy relation to subsist for ages betwixt her and her children, which has raised the wide arch of her empire to so stupendous and enviable a height ; but at the same time I avow, that if the parliament and people should be depraved enough to support any longer the present ministry in their infernal scheme, my zeal and reverence for the rights of humanity are so much greater than my fondness for any particular spot, even the place of my nativity, that, had I any influence in the councils of America, I would advise not to hesitate a single instant, but decisively to cut the Gordian knot, now besmeared with civil blood.

This, I know, is strong emphatic language, and might pass, with men who are strangers to the flame which the love of liberty is capable of lighting up in the human breast, for a proof of my insanity ; but you, sir, unless I have mistaken you from the beginning, will conceive, that a man, in his sober senses, may possess such feelings. In my sober senses, therefore, permit me once more most earnestly to entreat and conjure you to exert your whole force, energy, and talents to stop the ministry in this their headlong career. If you labour in vain, (as, I must repeat, I think will be the case,) address yourself to the people at large. By adopting this method, I am so sanguine, as to assure myself of your success ; and your public character will be as illustrious as your personal qualities are amiable to all

who intimately know you. By your means the Colonists will long continue the farmers, planters, and shipwrights of Great Britain; but if the present course is persisted in, an eternal divorce must inevitably take place. As to the idea of subduing them into servitude, and indemnifying yourselves for the expence, you must be convinced long before this of its absurdity.

I should not, perhaps, be extravagant, if I advanced, that all the ships of the world would be too few to transport force sufficient to conquer three millions of people, unanimously determined to sacrifice every thing to liberty; but if it were possible, the victory would not be less ruinous than the defeat. You would only destroy your own strength. No revenue can possibly be exacted out of this country. The army of place-men might be encreased, but her circuitous commerce, founded on perfect freedom, which alone can furnish riches to the metropolis, would fall to the ground. But the dignity of Great Britain, it seems, is at stake. Would you, sir, if in the heat of passion you had struck a single drummer of your regiment, and afterwards discovered that you had done it unjustly, think it any forfeiture of your dignity to acknowledge the wrong? No: I am well acquainted with your disposition, you would ask him pardon at the head of your regiment.

I shall now conclude (if you will excuse the pedantry) with a sentence of Latin; *Justum est bellum quibus necessarium, et pia arma quibus nulla, nisi in armis, relinquitur spes.* I most sincerely wish you a quick and prosperous voyage, and that your happiness and glory may be equal to the idea I have of your merits, as,

I am, with the greatest truth and affection,

Yours

Major Gen. Burgoyne.

CHARLES LEE.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

Camp, Dec^r ye 12th, 1775.MY D^r RUSH,

Your letters become every day more welcome to me—as you have time therefore it is but charity to write every post, if I am not equally regular you must attribute it to impossibility arising from the necessary busyness of my station. We were here extremely uneasy for some time at the backwardness of the men in engaging for the new army, but our apprehensions on this head are now at an end—enlisting goes on most swimmingly, the zeal and alacrity of the militia who were summon'd on the supposition that our lines wou'd be degarnish'd, prognosticate well, and do much honour to these Provinces—there is certainly much public spirit in the bulk of the People & I think they merit public eulogium—the N. England Delegates I am told have lately received so many rubs that They want a cordial. I beg therefore that you will administer one to those who are of your acquaintance in my name—I never saw a finer body than this militia. We had here exhibited the other day a scene pleasant enough—Some of the Connecticutians who were home sick cou'd not be prevailed on to tarry, which means, in the New England dialect, to serve any longer. They accordingly marched off bag and baggage but in passing through the lines of other Regiments They were so horribly hiss'd groan'd at and pelted that I believe they wish'd their Aunts Grandmothers and even sweethearts to whom the day before they were so much attached at the Devils own Palace—it is said They have been scurvily treated on the road and worse by the very connexions from whom They could not bear to be separated. Your acquaintance Mr. _____ must certainly be very agreeable but I wou'd not have you pin your faith in his sleeve—I know the three Generals at Boston, as well, if not better, than he does. Howe is indisputably

the first—Clinton has been bred up in a better school than Burgoyne and has more practice, but his genius is by no means comparable. He finds fault with Howe's generalship—I make no doubt if Mr. Howe had been as perfectly well acquainted with the ground and the disposition of the Enemy as this Gentleman was afterwards, he wou'd have manag'd matters better; but as this was not possible I am confident that no man but Howe wou'd have carried the lines. What a tryal is a civil war or as I find that it is not quite decent at Philadelphia amongst your wise ones to term slaughtering of men, women & children and laying waste with fire and sword your sea coasts, a civil war—what a tryal are civil contentions? if the Ministry had not pushed affairs to their present extremity—the writer of the Farmer's letters wou'd have passed for the first of citizens, capable of leading the world—but now from your report and the report of others I am afraid the most honorable inscription on his monument must be *un passable homme du plume*—My God, why does not your whole Province arouse themselves, kick the Assembly from the seat of representation which they so horribly disgrace and set 'em to work German Town stockings for the Army—an employment manly enough for 'em. Oh, in the language of Piercy, “I cou'd brain 'em with their wives distaffs.” We have lately had in camp, two gentlemen just arriv'd from England, one of 'em, a Captain Higgins says that the Friends of America were quite shock'd at the indecision and apparent pusillanimity of America demonstrated by the last Petition to the King, who is universally allow'd by all at home to be a most perverse, obstinate and obdurate Tyrant—but the not seizing the Governors, Government's men and Tories, he says appears still more absurd and abominable—this indecision, he avers, has done infinite mischief to the Cause, that it has encouraged and enabled the Ministry to proceed, and that if we do not shew more vigor and decision our calamities will be prolong'd ad infinitum. I have lately re-

ceived a letter from Mr. Dickinson and find from some strokes of it that he has been informed of my disapprobation of his conduct—as I think it ill becomes me to be more forward in censure than other men I beg you will keep to yourself what I hint on his subject.

Adieu, My Dr. Rush

Yours

C. LEE.

If you can purchase for me a pinchbeck watch new or near new, the works good, you will much oblige me by sending it by the first possible opportunity.

TO RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Camp, December 12th, 1775.

MY DEAR FRIEND:

I have just received your letter by Mr Custis. I am heartily glad that you have sent a committee into Canada, but *inter nos*, think it might have been better chosen. Payne has certainly not the *mannieres*—which, according to Lord Chesterfield, and my observation, are so requisite to captivate the French; for Heaven's sake, my dear friend, why are you not more decisive, and wherefore are any of the seaport towns allowed to furnish the men of war with fresh meat, or even with a single carrot; this indecision will ruin us; this cursed tenderness for the seaport towns will at least prolong the war and all its calamities. It was indecision that has thrown your affairs in Virginia into their present situation; had my opinion been thought worthy of attention, Lord Dunmore would have been disarmed of his teeth and his claws. I proposed seizing Tryon and all the tories, at New York. I knew if it was moved in Congress his Excellency would be instantly apprised of it, and of course the possibility of effecting it would not be left us; in this persuasion I would have struck

the stroke, and applied afterwards to your mightiness for approbation. You will justly accuse me of self-conceit and egotism, but I have not yet done. I propose, therefore, the following measures :

First. To seize every Governour, government man, placeman, tory, and enemy to liberty, on the continent ; to confiscate their estates, or at least to lay them under heavy contributions for the publick ; their persons should be secured in some of the interior towns, as hostages for their treatment of those of our party whom the fortune of war shall throw into their hands ; they should be allowed a reasonable pension out of their fortunes for their maintenance.

Secondly. I propose that New York, be strongly garrisoned, and fortified, or destroyed.

Thirdly. That a strong flying camp, with not only an able officer at their head, but an officer who has the reputation of being able, in order to inspire the people with confidence, be kept about Hampton, York, or Williamsburgh, in Virginia ; another not quite so strong, about Alexandria ; and a third, a strong one, about Annapolis, in Maryland.

Fourth. That Charlestown, in Carolina, should be well secured.

Fifth and lastly. That if the Canadians desire it, you spare no expense in furnishing them with an army ; but above all, that you be extremely careful in the choice of officers sent to that country ; that they be not only men of strict integrity, but of a frank open address, with elevated sentiments expressed in their manners. I should think such men may be found with you more easily than in these provinces, as I find you propose in your letter, for I never saw a people so universally destitute *du l'air du monde*, as these here ; Mr Bowdoin, an invalid, is the only exception. These propositions I before offered to a member of your Congress, with one other, respecting the construction of your army, here omitted.

Recruiting goes on here more briskly than we ex-

pected; the men are strange mortals, but they have virtue, and many good qualities. Adieu, my dear friend.

Yours affectionately.

C. LEE.

[To Miss ROBINSON.]

Camp on Winter Hill, Dec. 15th 1775.

I little thought, my kind gracious Correspondent, that the happiness I had so ardently courted of receiving a few lines from the most belov'd hand of the universe, should have thrown me into any degree of distress but the embarrassment I am in how to express my gratitude really amounts to distress—the language I cou'd with the greatest energy and religion talk in, I am precluded from by reasons best known to your fair self. I wish to God I cou'd work myself up to that sublime degree of Platonic force, which my divine and incomparable master Rousseau says he attain'd with respect to his Juliet, viz: to be the friend of your person and the lover of your virtues. I shou'd then flatter myself with the hopes of being at least an inoffensive Correspondent; but this I am afraid will never be the case as long as you retain your former voice and manner. I will however make a generous effort and endeavour thro' the remainder of the letter only to use the tone of a tender, affectionate friend. Have you my D^r Friend read Shakspeare over and over again? Can you repeat any of his striking passages? Are you not in rapture with him. I beg that at least you will read a scene of him every day and get a dozen lines by heart—for heaven's sake who has favour'd you so much do not throw away too much of your time in gossiping with every Drone and Lounger who is so kind when his dinner or supper is not ready to make a sauntering house of your room—Come Damn Tom, says one, our party is not yet assembled, let us go & kill an hour with Miss Robinson

—Take my word for it my friend, this wretched character is not uncommon and women are criminal in not despising them as they deserve—the more amiable the women are who give into this indulgence the more criminal they are—Men who have no resources in their own mind, who can lounge away whole hours and not capable of admiring and tasting true beauty and feminine graces—When you have Shakspeare at your fingers ends, I wou'd recommend to you a more laborious but not less pleasant task—altho' it is a sort of solecism to call anything that is pleasant laborious, I wou'd recommend to you the perusal of Plutarch's lives, Rollins Ancient & Roman History and Fontenelle's little compendious Astronomical book, the plurality of words—it may all be accomplish'd in a winter, and yet allow you time enough to indulge your social disposition Nay it will give a zest to the pleasure of Society, that is of good Society—it may indeed add a little to your natural acuteness in distinguishing good from bad, but as you seem not to have the least tendency to arrogance, airs, or superciliousness, I imagine no harm can result from this, but that it will be rather beneficial; I believe all these books or the greater part are in one of my trunks, I beg Mr. Delany will open and rummage 'em—the greatest ambition which now remains with me is of being your Preceptor, and I shall make interest with all your relations to be appointed to that office as soon as the war is over which I am now inclin'd to think cannot be of a long continuance—the reduction of Canada is too severe a stroke for the ministry to withstand, and had we on our side but a sufficient quantity of powder I cou'd almost venture to assure you that Boston should be at your feet—the garrison we have the greatest reason to think is in the utmost distress, so great indeed that without ammunition it is more than probable that either from * or mutiny of the soldiery the gates must be open to us before Spring—I have written a parting letter to Burgoyne, which I suppose you will soon see,

* Torn out.

as I have desired it to be printed—it is in my opinion the most tolerable of my performances—but if it meets with your approbation I shall be satisfy'd—by Miss Nancy Roan's putting herself under the protection of a gentleman, I suppose you mean that she's married—if he loves her (and she appears amiable) I envy him the Protectorship—but as I am afraid it is not my lot to protect the object I love, I can only recommend to the protection of God Almighty one of the most exquisite patterns of his Workmanship for such my Dear beautiful Correspondent indisputably is, and that he may make your happiness equal to your charms is most devoutly the prayer of Yours

C LEE.

I take no notice of the Ladies, as I intend to write to 'em separately—Once more adieu—adieu—most amiable girl—Will you continue in the charitable work you have begun and bestow an another line upon me?

TO RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Camp, Dec'r ye 18th, 1775.

MY DR. FRIEND:

One of our Privateers has just taken a despatch vessel from that impious scoundrel Dunmore to Gen'l. Howe. Our General will immediately transmit to the Congress the contents. You will see his plan and the assurances he gives of subduing your Colony. As everything goes on so smoothly to the Northward and Eastward, I must repeat that Virginia is now the chief object of attention. For God's sake lose no time; send a force sufficient, before it is too late, to kill this accursed snake before all his rattles are grown. Point out to the Congress the necessity of the most vigorous exertions. You may depend upon it, that if the war is continued, Norfolk will be the Boston—that is the chief place of arms—to your enemies the next year; and it is

a place which in their hands will be infinitely more dangerous. Adieu; lose no time: crush him this winter, tho' every nerve is strain'd.

Yours

C. LEE.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

Camp January 3^d 1776.

MY DR. FRIEND,

My long silence is owing to a tour I have lately made through Rhode Island at the request of the Governor and Committee of Rhode Island in order to direct them in putting that Province in a State of defence as Newport swarms with Tories and suspected persons. I from my own authority obliged these worthies to take a most solemn oath of allegiance to the Continental Congress as the measure was necessary for the common safety—I hope it will be approved of by our Sovereign for such now must the Congress be esteemed—the Kings speech absolutely destroys all hope of reunion—I formerly and indeed not long ago look'd with some degree of horror on the scheme of separation but at present there appears no alternative—We must be Independent or Slaves. Great Britain is so sunk in corruption and stupidity that she is no longer fit to be the presiding power. I wish the same step was taken with New York as I thought indispensable at Newport—the circumstances of New York render me uneasy almost to distraction—for Heaven's sake why have you not fortified and garrison'd that City with a strong force from Connecticut Jersey and Pennsylvania? for if the enemy once take post there, we cannot paint to our imagination the magnitude of the calamities which must flow to the Continent from our amazing negligence on this article—No time, not a single instant is to be lost. For the love of God and mankind inculcate the necessity of the measure, urge and press the immediate execution, but for the present no more on public affairs. I have sent

to the Congress a memorial requesting that as my fortune is probably confiscated that they will pay off the sum I am engaged for in my Virginia purchase—if they comply (and I have no doubt of their compliance) I have referred 'em to you for the circumstances of the busyness, and I could wish that the whole money due, mortgages and all should be immediately pay'd off you will have the kindness to write to Mr. White and Mr. Nourse the moment you receive the money that the affair may be quite terminated and I become possessed of the estate clear and unencumbered as the express is ready to set out I must finish my letter only assuring you that I am eternally with the truest affection and gratitude yours

—————
C. LEE.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

January 5, 1776.

DEAR GENERAL,

The consequences of the enemy's possessing themselves of New York have appeared to me so terrible, that I have scarcely been able to sleep from apprehensions on the subject. These apprehensions daily increase. You have it in your power, at present, to prevent this dreadful event. If I do not mistake, the Congress have given you authority to take any step in that place, as well as here, which you shall think necessary for the public service; but if they have not given you expressly and literally authority with respect to the city of New York, I am confident that any measure you think right to plan and put in execution will be approved of.

I have the greatest reason to believe, from the most authentic intelligence, that the best members of the Congress expect that you would take much upon yourself; as referring every matter of importance to them is, in fact, defeating the project. We have an instance of this in the fate of the motion for seizing the person

of Mr Tryon. To you they look up for decision ; by your conduct they are to be inspired by decision. In fact, your situation is such that the salvation of the whole depends on your striking, at certain crises, vigorous strokes, without previously communicating your intention. On this principle I venture to propose the following scheme, and to offer myself for the execution.

New York must be secured ; but it will never, I am afraid, be secured by direct order of the Congress, for obvious reasons. They find themselves awkwardly situated on this head ; you must step in to their relief. I am sensible that no men can be spared from the lines in our present circumstances ; but I would propose that you should detach me into Connecticut, and lend your name for collecting a body of volunteers. I am assured that I shall find no difficulty in assembling a sufficient number for the purposes wanted. This body, in conjunction (if there should appear occasion to summon them) with the Jersey Regiment under the Command of Lord Stirling, now at Elizabethtown, will effect the security of New York, and the expulsion or suppression of that dangerous banditti of Tories, who have appeared in Long Island, with the professed intention of acting against the authority of the Congress. Not to crush these serpents, before their rattles are grown, would be ruinous.

I am assured, likewise, that the Connecticut Volunteers, who will offer themselves for the service, will expect no pay, but, at most, the expenses of their provisions and perhaps of carriages for the conveyance of their baggage. When once we have secured the place with strict fortifications, and engaged the Friends of Liberty so far that they cannot recede, purged the City and Long Island of the leading Tories, the residence of these Connecticut volunteers will be no longer necessary ; for there is no reason to doubt that the Congress will detach troops from Pennsylvania to garrison the place, although, from reasons hinted at, they may not choose to commence the operation. This manœuvre I

not only think prudent and right, but absolutely necessary to our salvation; and if it meets, as I ardently hope it will, with your approbation, the sooner it is entered upon the better. Indeed, the delay of a single day may be fatal.

I am, dear General,

Yours most respectfully,

CHARLES LEE.

INSTRUCTIONS TO MAJOR-GENERAL CHARLES LEE.

SIR,

Having undoubted intelligence of the fitting out of a fleet at Boston, and of the embarkation of troops from thence, which, from the season of the year and other circumstances, must be destined for a southern expedition; and having such information as I can rely on, that the inhabitants, or a great part of them, on Long Island in the colony of New York, are not only inimical to the rights and liberties of America, but, by their conduct and public professions, have discovered a disposition to aid and assist in the reduction of that colony to ministerial tyranny; and it is a matter of the utmost importance to prevent the enemy from taking possession of the city of New York and the North River, as they will thereby command the country, and the communication with Canada; it is of too much consequence to hazard such a post at so alarming a crisis, since we find by his Majesty's speech to Parliament, that, disregarding the petition of the united voice of America, nothing less than the total subversion of her rights will satisfy him.

You will, therefore, with such volunteers as are willing to join you, and can be expeditiously raised, repair to the city of New York; and calling upon the commanding officer of the forces of New Jersey for such assistance as he can afford, and you shall require, you are to put that city into the best posture of defence, which the season and circumstances will admit, disarming all such

persons upon Long Island and elsewhere, (and if necessary otherwise securing them,) whose conduct and declarations have rendered them justly suspected of designs unfriendly to the views of Congress.

You are, also, to inquire into the state and condition of the fortifications up the North River, and as far as shall be consistent with the orders of Congress, or not repugnant to them, to have the works guarded against surprises from a body of men, which might be transported by water near the place, and then marched in upon the back of them.

You will also endeavour to have the medicines, shirts, and blankets, now at New York, belonging to the ministerial troops, secured, and forwarded to this army. Captain Sears can give you particular information concerning them.

In all other matters relative to the execution of the general plan you are going upon, your own judgment (as it is impossible with propriety to give particular directions) and the advice of those whom you have reason to believe are hearty in the cause, must direct you; keeping always in view the declared intentions of Congress.

I am persuaded I need not recommend despatch in the prosecution of this business. The importance of it alone is a sufficient incitement. I would advise a dismissal of the volunteers, whose necessary expenses will be borne, so soon as the service will admit of it; and that you endeavour as much as possible at all times to be in readiness to join the army, if the exigency of our affairs here should call for it.

Given under my hand, at Head-Quarters, Cambridge, this 8th day of January, 1776.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

FROM JONATHAN TRUMBULL.

Lebanon, 12th January, 1776.

SIR,

I have received a Letter of the 7th instant from His Excellency General Washington, p. hand of Capt. Sears, desiring me to interpose my good Offices and Interest to encourage men to go with you, with all possible expedition on the important Business you are employed in. I called my Council, and by and with their advice issued a Proclamation for that end—and have appointed Field Officers for two Regiments, who are to select Captains and Subalterns to enlist Volunteers, with encouragement of Pay, Wages, and billeting as other Soldiers have, and to be dismissed as soon as this Service will admit.

I have ordered Capt Robert Niles, Commander of the armed Schooner Spy, to transport 400 lb Powder to New Haven, 200 lb to Norwalk, and 400 lb to Stamford. In case you have occasion for his Service to promote your design, he is ordered to follow such instructions as you may give him, and to wait your dismissal or further Orders from me. If you have no service for him, I have directed him to call upon Col^o Davenport to be informed thereof in your absence, and if not employed he is thereupon to return to New London.

I take the liberty to recommend Capt. Sears to your kind notice, to take such command as you may think proper to give him; not thinking myself well authorised to go out of the Line of Officers already Commissioned by order of our Assembly—I think him a person zealously engaged in the common cause, well acquainted in the Colony and City of New York and worthy to be employed in the Service. Wishing your Success, I am, with great Truth and Regard.

Sir, Your most humble Servant

JON^A TRUMBULL.The Hon^{ble} Major General Lee.

FROM GEORGE LUX.

Baltimore 12. Janu^y 1776.

SIR,

Your civilities to me, when at Prospect Hill, were such as I expected from the Soldier & Gentleman, and demand my warmest thanks—I hope I shall ever bear a grateful Remembrance of them. My Parents also request me to thank you for them.

I see by the Papers, that you are removed to Newport in Rhode Island, and therefore suspect, that the ministerialists, unable to bear the pressures of Want, and the Inclemencies of the Season, intend to remove from Boston, and make Rhode Island their Head Quarters, at least for some time, but of that you, who from Experience, best can penetrate the Designs of those in Power can best judge. May their success be as bad, as their cause is unjust.

The King's Speech to both Houses of Parliament at the opening of the Session clearly evinces the necessity of speedy and effectual Exertions on the Part of this Continent for the Purpose of opposing with Force of—Arms the infamous Plans adopted by a venal Ministry for subverting our most inestimable Priviledges, as all Hopes of an accommodation is now lost—America is happy in having for Generals Gentlemen experienced in military operations—

With Wishes, that America may rise superior to all oppressions, I take the liberty of subscribing myself,
Sir,

Y^r obliged Hum^e Servt.

GEO: LUX.

The Hon. Major General Lee.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

New Haven, Jan. 16. 1776.

DEAR GENERAL :

We have been so baffled by the weather, that we only arrived here last night. I believe we shall find no difficulties in procuring a sufficient body of volunteers for the New York expedition. The unhappy accounts from Canada, seem to animate these people, rather than depress. Indeed we have now occasion for exertion and decision. I am apprehensive that the Congress must be inspired by you. They have just given a strong, and I think unfortunate instance of indecision. Col. Waterbury had raised a regiment; the regiment was equipped and ready for embarkation. They were to have landed in Oyster Bay, to have attacked the tories in Long Island. Lord Stirling was to have attacked them on the other side; all this by order of Congress; when suddenly Col. Waterbury received an order to disband his regiment, and the tories are to remain unmolested till they are joined by the King's assassins.

Governour Trumbull, like a man of sense and spirit, has ordered this regiment to be re-assembled; I believe it will be ready on Sunday, the day on which I shall march from this town. I shall send immediately an express to the Congress, informing them of my situation, and at the same time conjuring them not to suffer the accursed Provincial Congress of New York, to defeat measures so absolutely necessary to salvation. The affairs of Canada, will I suppose very soon, if not instantly require a very considerable force from this Province; neither will the circumstances of New York admit of its being too much stripped of men, for which reason I should think it advisable immediately to raise some additional regiments in Massachusetts-Bay. Adieu, dear General. God prosper you, and the arms of virtue.

Yours, most sincerely.

CHARLES LEE.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Hartford, January 16th 1776.

DEAR GENERAL :

Major French whom I have met with at Hartford, is extremely solicitous for permission to return home, as he is confident that his whole fortunes depend upon his being immediately on the spot with his friends at this instant. As he is I believe a man of strict honor, his parole not to serve for a given time against the freedom of America, would be sufficient security ; and as he has a family to provide for, it would certainly be humane and charitable to indulge him, nor can I see any inconvenience which would attend the indulgence ; there may be some objections, which do not, perhaps, occur to me, but I could wish for my own part, that as so much depends upon it, he might be gratified ; however, I beg you will excuse submitting the matter to your consideration.

I am, dear General,

Your most obt. humble servant,

CHARLES LEE.

To His Excellency Genl. Washington.

TO THE PARISH OF NEW CHESHIRE.

New Haven, January ye 17, 1776

GENTLEMEN,

I am extremely happy and very much flattered with your zeal and alacrity in the Cause of your Country and readiness in putting yourselves under my command. As to the choice of your officers it is left for your discretion. I hope & dare say you will make a proper choice. You will oblige me in marching on Friday or Saturday morning for Fairfield, the place of our general Rendezvous, where I will arrange you in Battalions in a manner

the most simple, and according to my idea the best calculated for real service. I am

Gentlemen

Your most obedient servant

CHARLES LEE,

Major General

To the Parish of New Cheshire

FROM THE NEW YORK COMMITTEE OF SAFETY.

In Committee of Safety,

New York, 21st Jany. 1776.

SIR—The inhabitants of this city are much alarmed at various confident advices of your destination with a considerable body of forces for active service here. Confident however as those advices may appear to people without doors, we cannot readily credit them, as we conceive it most probable that were you preparing to execute any plan of that kind, it would be preceded by some intimations to us on the subject from the Continental Congress, General Washington or yourself. We therefore should not have troubled you with with this application, had it not been to procure such information from you as may enable us in a prudent use of it, to allay the fears of our inhabitants, who at this inclement season of the year will continue, as they have already begun, to remove their women and children, and which if continued may occasion hundreds to perish for want of shelter.

This Committee and the Congress whose place we fill in their recess, are, we flatter ourselves, as unanimously zealous in the cause of America as any representative body on the continent, so truly zealous that both the one and the other will cheerfully devote this city to sacrifice for advancing that great and important cause. But to acquit ourselves in the judgment of the Continent, which in point of public aid is deeply inter-

ested in the preservation of this metropolis, and to our constituents who expect our prudent care of their lives and properties, we think it our indispensable duty to inform you that though we have advices that Genl. Washington has been informed of the arrival of a large quantity of powder among us, we have not a sufficiency to enable you to act hostilely against the ships of war now in port; our whole quantity of public powder is less than three tons. No works are erected to annoy the enemy in their present situation. Should it be practicable at this juncture to erect hasty works for that purpose, to what shift are we to betake ourselves after our trifling supply of ammunition shall be expended? The commencement of hostilities for which we are now so unprepared will preclude the possibility of a supply even for our musketry in the ensuing campaign. The strict guard against the exportation of ammunition from the foreign ports in Europe, we have great reason to fear will cut off all hopes of supply from that quarter, as well to us as the Continental Congress. We have sent sundry adventures thither, some of which have failed; for this reason we are daily pushing adventures to the West Indies, with the article of provisions, as a necessary expedient in the present uncommon scarcity of bullion. The ships of war give no interruption to our vessels despatched on those adventures; a favour we cannot expect, should hostilities begin, and even should we be fortunate enough to oblige the ships of war to quit this port, by expending the little powder we have, an event which our most sanguine hopes cannot promise us, the attention of our enemies will effectually prevent our expected importations. For those reasons we conceive that a just regard to the public cause, and our duty to take a prudent care of the city, dictate the impropriety of provoking hostilities at present, and the necessity of saving appearances with the ships of war till at least the month of March. Though we have been unfortunate in our disappointments with respect to some of our adventures, yet be assured Sir,

we have not been idle; our intrenching tools are almost completed to a sufficient number; we are forming a magazine of provisions for 5,000 men for a month, in a place of safety, and at convenient distance from this city; we have provided ourselves with six good brass field pieces; have directed carriages to be made for our other artillery, and are raising a company of artillery for the defence of the Colony on the Continental establishment. These things when accomplished, with other smaller matters, and with the arrival of some gunpowder, the prospect of which is not unpromising, will enable us to face our enemies with some countenance; we therefore ardently wish to remain in peace for a little time, and doubt not we have assigned sufficient reasons for avoiding at present a dilemma in which the present entrance of a large body of troops into this city, will almost certainly involve us. Should you have such an entrance in design, we beg at least that the troops may halt on the western confines of Connecticut till we shall have been honoured by you with such an explanation on this important subject, as you conceive your duty may permit you to enter into with us, the grounds of which you will easily see ought to be kept an entire secret, and to assure you that,

We are, with great respect and esteem, Sir,

Your most obt. Servants,

By order of the Committee,

Major Gen'l. Lee.

FROM NICHOLAS COOKE.

Providence, January 21st 1776.

SIR

I take the Liberty to inclose to you a Copy of the Address from this Colony to the Continental Congress; and to request your Assistance in procuring a Body of Troops to be stationed in the Colony, which I think a measure absolutely necessary for the common Defence.

We are not without hopes that the Congress will take the whole Brigade into their Service, especially as the necessity arising from so powerful an Invasion of establishing the whole force we have ordered is clear and manifest—From the nature of the war, and the circumstances of the Colonies, I think every Idea of partial and colonial Defence ought to be given up. There must be a supreme superintending power to exert and direct the force of the whole for the Safety & Defence of all; otherwise the Exertions and Burthens will not only be very unequal, to the endangering of the Union upon which the welfare of America depends, but Colony after Colony may be destroyed without a chance of making Resistance. I shall only add, upon this Head, that unless the Continent defends the Colony it must be abandoned. An event that will be attended with most pernicious Consequences to the common Cause.

The Town of Newport addressed a Petition to the Congress for permission to supply the King's Ships. The Congress referred it to the General Assembly; but, at the same time our Delegates informed us that every Member who spoke in the Debate gave it as his opinion, that the Ships should be supplied with Necessaries for their own support; taking the greatest care lest through them the Common Enemy in other parts of America should obtain Provisions. In consequence of which the General Assembly have ordered that Capt. Wallace should be supplied, as you will see by the enclosed note. But as he may cannonade and even burn the Town, a discretionary Power, by a private vote, which it is designed shall be kept secret, is given to the Commander of the Forces on Rhode Island to permit supplies, in Cases of imminent Danger, until the Assembly meets on the last Monday in next month.

I am with great Sincerity and Esteem Sir,

Your most obed^t and most humble Servant

NICH^s COOKE.

Hon^{ble} General Lee.

FROM NATHANAEAL GREENE.

Prospect Hill, January 21st 1776.

DEAR GENERAL,

We are all in Mourning for the loss of the Brave General Montgomery, whose unhappy Fate is an irreparable loss to America—We are all in the dark as to the number kil'd, wounded and taken prisoners in that unfortunate attack notwithstanding General Woosters open Letter, a copy of which I suppose you have seen—General Schuyler is going to make an attack upon a Body of Tories in Tryon County and you upon Queens County—God grant you may be both successful. Three Regiments are ordered to be rais'd immediately for the Reinforcement of the Troops at Quebeck—one Regiment in this Province, one in New Hampshire, and one in Connecticut. I hear you are raising 1500 Troops for your Expedition—I hope you'll give that many headed Monster the Tory Faction a fatal wound—it is expected from your strength, spirit and Resolution. The Papers will announce to you Capt. Wallace's depredations in the Colony of Rhode Island and the severe Repulse he met with from the Troops there. We have had several Deserters out within a few days; they all agree that the scurvy prevails amongst the troops, but disagree very much as to the Mortallity of it. It has been very dull in this division since your departure—I wish you a safe and speedy return. Mr. Eustace lodges at Hobgoblin Hall, he says by your Order—should be glad to know your pleasure in the matter. He is young and fond of diversion and many ill Councillors about him—perhaps his conduct may not be so prudent as you could wish—He has been but little at my lodgings, notwithstanding I am dayly calling upon him—I rejoice to hear my friend Bird escaped—so inglorious an Exit as he had like to have made by the Eggs—I hope this will prove an useful Lesson to

him, and learn him to implicitly obey the Orders of his General for the future. Please to present my compliments to him and Mr. Palfrey—All things quiet in Camp and no new movements of the Enemy, since your departure.

I am with great Respect your most obedient & very humble Servant.

NATH. GREENE.

P.S. Please to favor me with a line from you.

To The Hon. Gen. Lee
now at or near New York.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Stamford, January 22, 1776.

SIR,

As General Washington has informed the Congress of his motives for detaching me, it is needless to trouble you upon the subject. I am, therefore, only to inform you, that I have collected a body of about 1200 men, from the Colony of Connecticut, whose zeal and ardour, demonstrated on this occasion, cannot be sufficiently praised. With this body I am marching directly to New York to execute the different purposes for which I am detached. I am sensible, Sir, that nothing can carry the air of greater presumption, than a servant's intruding his opinion, unasked, upon his master; but at the same time, there are certain seasons when the real danger of the master may not only excuse, but render laudable the servant's officiousness. I therefore flatter myself that the Congress will receive, with indulgence and lenity, the opinion I shall offer.

The scheme of disarming, simply, the Tories, seems to me, totally ineffectual; it will only embitter their minds, and add *virus* to their venom. They can, and will, always be supplied with fresh arms by the enemy.

That of seizing the most dangerous will, I apprehend from the vagueness of the instruction, be attended with some bad consequences, and can answer no good one; it opens so wide a door for partiality and prejudice, to the different Congresses and Committees on the Continent, that much discord and animosity will, probably, ensue, it being next to impossible to distinguish who are, and who are not, the most dangerous.

The plan of explaining to these deluded people the justice and merits of the American cause, is, certainly generous and humane, but I am afraid will be fruitless. They are so rivetted in their opinions, that I am persuaded should an angel descend from heaven, with his golden trumpet, and ring in their ears that their conduct was criminal, he would be disregarded. I had lately myself an instance of their infatuation, which if it is not impertinent, I will relate.

At Newport, I took the liberty, without any authority, but the conviction of the necessity, to administer a very strong oath to some of the leading tories, for which liberty I humbly ask pardon of Congress. One article of this oath was, to take up arms in defence of their country, if called upon by the voice of Congress. To this, Colonel Wanton, and others flatly refused their assent. To take arms against their sovereign, they said, was too monstrous an impiety. I asked them if they had lived at the time of the Revolution, whether they would have been revolutionists? Their answers were at first, evasive, circuitous, and unintelligible; but by fixing them down precisely to the questions, I, at length drew from them a positive confession, that no violence, no provocation on the part of the Court, could prevail upon them to act with the Continent. Such I am afraid is the creed and principles of the whole party, great and small; sense, reason, argument, and eloquence, have been expended in vain, and in vain you may still argue and reason, 'till the end of time. Even the common feelings and resentments of humanity, have not aroused them, but rather with a malignant pleasure, they have

beheld the destruction of their fellow citizens and relations. But I am running into declamation (perhaps impertinently presuming), when I ought to confine myself to the scheme I submit to your consideration.

It is, Sir, in the first place, to disarm all the manifestly disaffected, as well of the lower as of the higher class; not on the principle of putting them in a state of impotence (for this as I observed before, will not be the case) but to supply our troops with arms, of which they stand in too great need. Secondly, to appraise their estates, and oblige them to deposit at least the value of one half of their respective property, in the hands of the Continental Congress, as a security for their good behaviour. And lastly to administer the strongest oath that can be devised, to act, defensively, and offensively, in support of the common rights.

I confess that men so eaten up with bigotry, as the bulk of them appear to be will not consider themselves as bound by this oath, particularly as it is in some measure forced; they will argue that it is by no means obligatory. But if I mistake not, it will be a sort of criterion, by which you will be able to distinguish the desperate fanaticks from those who are reclaimable. The former, must of course, be secured, and carried into some interior part of the Continent, where they cannot be dangerous.

This mode of proceeding, I conceive (if any can) will be effectual; but whether it meets with the approbation or disapprobation of the Congress, I most humbly conjure them not to attribute the proposal to arrogance, self-conceit, or pragmatistical officiousness, but at worst to an intemperate zeal for the publick welfare.

Notwithstanding the apparent slimness of the authority, as I am myself convinced that it is substantial, I think it my duty to communicate a circumstance to the Congress. I have with me here, Sir, a deserter from Captain Wallace's ship, before Newport. It is necessary, previously to inform you, that this Captain Wallace has the reputation of being the most imprudent

and rash of all mortals, particularly when he is heated with wine, which, as reported, is a daily incident; that in those moments he blabs his most secret instructions, even to the common men. This deserter then informs us, that the Captain a few days ago, assembled the sailors and marines on the quarter-deck, and assured them by way of encouragement, that they were to proceed very soon to New-York, where they were to be joined by his Majesty's most loyal subjects of White Plains, Poughkeepsie, and Long Island, and at the same time bestowed abundantly his curses on the Admiral and General, for their dilatoriness and scandalous conduct, in not availing themselves sooner of the invitation they had received from these worthy gentlemen.

The Congress will make what comments they please on this information, which I must repeat, I thought it my duty to communicate. Upon the whole, Sir, you may be assured, that it is the intention of the ministerialists to take possession (and immediately) of New York. The intercepted letters, the unguarded expressions of their officers, in their interviews with ours on the lines, but above all, the manifest advantages resulting to their cause from this measure, put their intention beyond dispute.

With submission, therefore, to the wisdom of the Congress, it behooves them, I should think, not to lose a moment in securing this important post, which, if in the hands of the enemy, must cut the Continent in twain, and render it almost impossible for the Northern and Southern Colonies mutually to support each other. This is not a crisis when everything is at stake, to be over-complacent to the timidity of the inhabitants of any particular spot. I have now under my command a respectable force, adequate to the purposes of securing the place, and purging all its environs of traitors, on which subject, I shall expect with impatience, the determination of the Congress. Their orders I hope to receive before or immediately on my arrival.

This instant the enclosed express from the Provincial

Congress of New York, was delivered into my hands ; but as these gentlemen probably are not fully apprised of the danger hanging over their heads, as I have received intelligence from Camp that the fleet is sailed, and that it is necessary to urge my march, I shall proceed with one division of the forces under my command to that city. A moment's delay may be fatal.

The force I shall carry with me is not strong enough to act offensively, but just sufficient to secure the city against any immediate designs of the enemy. If this is to give umbrage, if the Governour and Captain of the man of war, are pleased to construe this step as an act of positive hostility, if they are to prescribe what number of your troops, and what number not, are to enter the city, all I can say is, that New York must be considered as the Ministers' place, and not the Continent's.

I must now, Sir, beg pardon for the length of this letter, and more so for the presumption in offering, so freely my thoughts to the Congress, from whom it is my duty simply to receive my orders, and as a servant and soldier, strictly to obey, which none can do with greater ardour and affection than

Sir,

Your most obedient humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To the Hon. John Hancock, Esq.

President of the Continental Congress.

FROM GENERAL GATES.

Cambridge, 22nd January, 1776

DEAR LEE:

The Hard Fate of poor Montgomery will, if I have any Foresight, immediately induce The Congress to cast their Eyes on You. Knox tells me, he is convinced from Schuylers conversation that He wishes to be excused acting as General, and Worcester, it is upon all

hands agreed, is too infirm for that service—inclosed is a Letter brought last night from Philadelphia by Mr. Irwin. He tells us, all goes well there—The Kings speech has had a Noble Effect in Fixing all the wavering to the cause of Freedom & America; this is the 3rd packet I have sent you it will I hope be received in course; we have had some Deserters lately, and taken four more prizes; one has a Quantity of Soldiers Cloathing, Blankets, & Hospital stores—Manly carried a large Brigg into Newbury Saturday last, we impatiently expect to know her Cargoe—as another freight from the Tower would be very acceptable, when you hear any News from Canada, let me know it, and your Opinion of our Affairs there.

I am in Haste,

Yours affectionately,

HORATIO GATES.

There is a Pamphlet come by Irwin from Philadelphia, entitled *Common Sense*—it is an excellent performance—I think our Friend Franklyn has been principally concern'd in the Composition—the Bearer also, has I fancy play'd his part.

I think with M^{rs} Gates that, you owe some small Return of Friendship to M^r Nourse, you have now a good opportunity of shewing it. M^r Nourse's eldest son, Joseph Nourse, is now just out of his time to Mr. Strettle, an old acquaintance of yours. He is a young man of an excellent character, and good accomplishments. You would do him a singular service, and lay a lasting obligation upon his father, if you recommend the young man to M^r Bob. Morris for a Clerk in his Compting house, or to be sent to the W. Indies, or elsewhere, as a Factor.

I am exceedingly anxious to know how affairs go in Canada, not a syllable since the first Express from Col. Campbell and Genl. Worcester; and many here think Worcester put the worst complexion upon his Intelligence, that he might be succoured the more expedi-

tiously—A Captain of Artillery leaves this at day-break, upon a good horse; he will be with you soon, perhaps before you receive this Letter. Smith has join'd you long ago, though you say nothing of it.

FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Cambridge, January 23, 1776.

SIR :

I received your favor of the 16th instant, and am exceedingly sorry to hear that Congress countermanded the embarkation of the two regiments intended against the Tories on Long Island. They, I doubt not, had their reasons; but to me it appears that the period is arrived, when nothing less than the most decisive and vigorous measures should be pursued. Our enemies from the other side of the Atlantick, will be sufficiently numerous; it highly concerns to have as few internal ones as possible.

As Congress seem to have altered their views in this instance, and men which went with you to Connecticut are upon a very different footing from what I expected, it might be right to give Congress the earliest notice of your proceeding, and to disband your troops as soon as you think circumstances will admit of it.

In consequence of the melancholy reverse of our affairs in Canada, an application was made to me for succour, and happy should I have been if the situation of this army could have afforded it. All I could do, was, to lay the matter before this, and the Governments of Connecticut and New Hampshire, and urge the expediency and necessity of their sending a reinforcement of three regiments there immediately. Mr Trumbull and his council of safety, had anticipated my request; the other two Colonies have adopted the measure. The three regiments are now raising, and, I would willingly hope, will arrive in time to re-instate matters in

that quarter, and give them a more agreeable aspect than they now have.

I shall be much obliged by your pressing Colonel McDougall to forward the shells mentioned in his letter of the 2d instant, as they are much wanted; and, also, to spare me some powder, if he possibly can. You know our stock of this necessary article is small and inconsiderable, and you know, too, that we have a demand for a further supply.

The progress in raising recruits for the new Army being very slow, I have applied to this Colony, Connecticut, and New Hampshire, for ten regiments of Militia, to continue in service till the 1st of April next, which they have granted me. As soon as they come in, and I can get provided with proper means, I am determined to attempt something. Of this, I would have you take no notice.

Within a few days past, several persons have come out of Boston; they all agree that General Clinton has gone upon some expedition. Some say he has between four and five hundred men; others, parts of two regiments. What his force consists of is not precisely known; but, I am almost certain he has gone with some. His destination must be south of this, and, very probably, for New York.

I thought it necessary to give you this information, that you may be on your guard, and prepared to receive him as well as you can.

I shall be glad to hear from you frequently and to be informed of any occurrences you may think material.

I am, dear Sir, with great regard, &c.

GEORGE WASHINGTON

To Major General Lee.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

Stamford, January 23^d 1776.

D^R MORRIS,

I have just received yours of the 10th and have time only to scribble a line in reply. I am in my way to N. York to anticipate the Enemy whom we apprehend have an immediate intention on the Place I have written a long and indeed presumptuous letter to the Congress. I beg you will be one of my advocates if it is taken in this light—nothing but zeal should have forc'd me upon it but their complacency to the Provincial Congress will I am afraid be in the end fatal—New York will be one day or the other the Ministry's. They play fast and loose with you in such a manner as to give you an air of extreme ridicule. Your Assembly's injunctions with respect to Independence appears every time I consider 'em more nonsensical foolish and abominable, it operates directly opposite to sound policy You ought to persuade the People at home that the damn'd King and his damn'd Ministry never had the least Ground for their assertions that you aim at independence. You ought to suffer the two branches of the house of Bourbon to flatter themselves that separation is your object that they might be more inclined to assist you with all your necessary wants instead of which these blessed injunctions have given a solid ground to the assertions of the King and Ministry which before they were destitute of and of the same time render France and Spain shy of assisting you—by the Heavenly God if you do not act more decisively we shall be ruined, decision decision ought to be our word. Are we at war or are we not? Are we not at war with the King? or with whom are we at war? do not the People of England tho' not from zeal, but from want of spirit support the Tyrant? Why are we to eternity whining about a connexion with these depraved People? in short as they now suffer their Parliament without tearing 'em to

pieces to support the Tyrant—They cannot be considered as able or worthy of remaining the presiding part of the Empire—before the late Speech and address of thanks I had some hopes but since their appearance I confess I think the knot is cut. You must no longer hobble on one high shoe and one low. When you have conquer'd I think you may then with more safety glory and advantage return to your former state of relation. the express waits

Adieu Dr Morris

C. LEE.

Did you receive my letter with regard to my memorial to the Congress? Did Mr. E. Rutledge receive it—I am afraid it miscarried.

TO THE CHAIRMAN OF THE NEW YORK COMMITTEE OF
SAFETY.

SIR,

Yesterday on the Road I had the honor of receiving yours and ought to make you a thousand apologies for not having answered it immediately, but the circumstance of being on the Road, together with the necessity of finishing some dispatches to General Washington and to the Continental Congress render'd it almost impossible. I should certainly, Sir, have apprized you of my march had I not concluded that you would have learnt it time enough from the Congress. The letter I have from the General directed to the Chairman of the Committee of Safety I was ordered to deliver with my own hand. With respect Sir, to the alarm of the Inhabitants on the Suspicion that my business was to commence active Hostilities against the Men of War in your harbour, I can assure you that they may be perfectly easy. Such never was the intention of the General, and I hope that you will believe that I never entertained a thought of transgressing the letter of my in-

structions, the motive of the General for detaining me was solely to prevent the enemy from taking post in your City, or lodging themselves in Long Island, which we have the greatest reason to think is their design; some subordinate purposes were likewise to be executed which are much more proper to be communicated by word of mouth than by writing; but I give you my word that no active service is proposed as you seem to apprehend. If the ships of war are quiet, I shall be quiet; but I declare solemnly that if they make a pretext of my presence to fire on the Town the first house set in flames by their Guns shall be the funeral pile of some of their best friends—but I believe, Sir, the Inhabitants may rest in security on this subject. I am convinced, and every man who considers a moment must be convinced that the destruction of the seaport towns would if possible be a severer stroke to the Ministry and their Instruments than to the Inhabitants themselves. The seaport Towns are the only holds they have on America. They are considered as the Pledges of servitude—the menacing destruction to 'em may be of admirable use, but the real destruction of them must extinguish all hopes of success; in compliance, Sir, with your request, I shall only carry with me into Town a force just strong enough to secure it against any designs of the enemy, until it shall please the Continental Congress to take measures for its permanent security, the main body I shall leave on the Western Frontiers of Connecticut according to your directions. I hope Sir, and persuade myself that the Committee and inhabitants can have no objection to this Plan. If Mr. Tryon and the Captains of the Ships of War are to prescribe what numbers are, and what numbers are not to enter the Town, they are absolute dictators to all intents and purposes,—the condition is too humiliating for freemen to put up with. You take pains to assure me, Sir, that your Congress and Committee are not less zealous in the cause of American Liberty than any other representative Body on the Continent. I give you my word, Sir,

that this assurance was unnecessary. I am not one of those who have entertained a bad opinion of the virtue of N. York, or made it my business to asperse them; on the contrary, I have condemn'd loudly the illiberal, impolitic and unjust reflections I have heard frequently thrown out. I should not have taken the liberty of troubling you with the opinion good or bad which an unimportant individual like myself may entertain of so respectable a Body as your Committee or Congress, had not this particular paragraph of your letter thrown the temptation in my way.

I am Sir,

Your most Obed^t & devoted Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

Stamford, 23rd Jany. 1776.

Peter Van Brugh Livingston, Esq

Chairman of the Committee of Safety.

TO COLONEL WATERBURY

Stamford, Jan'y 24, 7 o'clock, P.M.

SIR,

If you recollect I desir'd you to write to Colonel Ward requesting him not to move his Regiment from their Homes 'till further orders; but I understand from Col^o. Sears that he has not received those orders. I must beg therefore you will dispatch a messenger with these instructions.

I am Sir,

Your most Obed^t Servt.

CHARLES LEE.

To Colonel Waterbury.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Stamford, January 24th, 1776.

DEAR GENERAL :

It was unnecessary sooner to trouble you with my scrawl as I could give you no information the least interesting. I find the people through this province more alert and zealous than my most sanguine expectation. I believe I might have collected 10,000 volunteers. I take only four companies with me, and Waterbury's regiment which is so happily situated on the frontier. Ward's regiment I have ordered to remain at their respective homes until they hear further. These Connecticutians are, if possible, more eager to go out of their Country than they are to return home when they have been out for any considerable time.

Enclosed I send you my letter to the General Congress. That of the Provincial Congress of New York to me, with my answer, I hope will have your approbation.

The whigs, I mean the stout ones, are it is said very desirous that a body of troops should march and be stationed in their City: timid ones are averse, merely from the spirit of procrastination, which is the characteristic of timidity. The letter of the Provincial Congress, you will observe breathes the very essence of this spirit; it is wofully hysterical. I conclude, I shall receive the orders of the General Congress before, or immediately on my arrival, otherwise I should not venture to march into the Province, as by the late resolve every detachment of the Continental Troops is to be under the direction of the Provincial Congress in which they are—a resolve, I must say, with submission to their wisdom, fraught with difficulties and evils—it is impossible, having two sovereigns, that any business should be carried on.

Have you seen the pamphlet—*Common Sense*? I never saw such a masterly, irresistible performance. It

will, if I mistake not, in concurrence with the transcendent folly and wickedness of the ministry, give the Coup-de-grace to Great Britain. In short, I own myself convinced, by the arguments, of the necessity of separation.

Poor, brave Montgomery! But it is not a time to cry, but to revenge. God bless you, my dear Genl., and crown us with the success I am sure we merit from the goodness of our cause. My love to the ladies. I shall write a long letter to Gates, when I have time and materials.

Adieu! Yours, most affectionately,

CHARLES LEE.

To His Excellency General Washington.

FROM HENRY KNOX.

Cambridge, Jan^y. 25th 1776.

SIR,

His Excellency General Washington informs me that he has written to you in general terms respecting a quantity of shot and shells that were ordered from New York some time since also desires me to write more particularly. I do myself the honor to enclose a List of those Articles which were to have been forwarded to Camp by the Provincial Congress or Committee who sit during the recess of Congress. The reasons why they have not done it are unknown to me. The stores are at Turtle Bay, the Cannon at or near Kingsbridge excepting the 2 brass six pounders which belong to the City, and which were promised as a Loan.

If they could be put on board some Vessell & sent thro' the East River to New London or Norwich—the expence of Carting would be very much diminish'd—Altho' I brought 11 very fine brass field pieces from Ticonderoga, yet without the additional ones from New York we shall be still deficient in field artillery. They

told me at New-York that there were 300 tons of shells at Turtle Bay. By your being on the spot, Sir, you will judge whether it would be proper for any to remain at that place, and whether it would be best to forward all of them to Connecticut to be transported this way—Col^o McDougall was the person at New York with whom I confer'd and who appear'd to be the only active person there.

The General has desired me to send an Officer of Artillery—Accordingly I have ordered Capt. Badlam to join you immediately, an Officer of merit considering his experience.

I have the Honor to be with the greatest Respect,
Sir,

Your most obedient Humble Servant,

HENRY KNOX,
Col. Reg^t Artillery.

Hon. General Lee, at New York—Favor'd by Capt. Badlam.

Order'd Nov^r 27. 1775.

12	dble	fortified	Iron	4	pounders,
2			brass	six	pounders.
5	Tons	24	pound	shot,	
5	"	18		do.	
5	"	13	Inch	shells,	
10	"	10		Do.	
10	"	8		Do.	
5	"	7		Do.	

Portfire composition—Quick match—all the Carcasses.

Order'd on the 17th. Dec

500—	13	Inch	shells
200—	5	$\frac{7}{16}$.	
400—	4	$\frac{1}{2}$.	

FROM JOHN HANCOCK.

Philadelphia, Jan. 26, 1776.

SIR,

This morning I was favoured with your letter, by express, which I laid before Congress, in consequence of which they have appointed a committee of three of their members, viz: Col. Harrison M^r Lynch, and M^r Allen, immediately to repair to New York, and confer with you and the Committee of Safety of that Colony, on the subject of your letter, which supersedes the necessity of my being particular, as I must refer you to those gentlemen.

I have only to add my best wishes for your health, and that success may attend your important exertions.

I have the honor, to be, with esteem, Sir, your most obedient, humble Servant,

JOHN HANCOCK, President.

To the Honourable Major General Lee.

WILLIAM PALFREY TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Stamford, January 29, 1776.

SIR,

General Lee, being unfortunately visited with the gout or rheumatism, has directed me to enclose to your Excellency the copy of a letter he has just received, by express, from the President of the Continental Congress. General Lee would have wrote you, but the position of writing is so very painful that he hopes you will excuse him. Notwithstanding his illness, he is determined to go forward to-morrow in a litter, which he has ordered to be prepared for that purpose. He begs his compliments to Mrs. Washington and the family, to which we beg leave to add those of M^r Byrd, and your Excellency's most obedient and humble servant

WILLIAM PALFREY, Aid-de-Camp

To His Excellency General Washington

ORDERS : ETC.

Stamford, Head Quarters, January 29th 1776.

PAROLE BRADSHAW.

Colonel Sears being appointed Adjutant General, Major Abel being appointed Brigade Major, for the present expedition, they are to be considered as such. The Companies now at Horse Neck & Rye to march to New-Rochelle, & East Chester. The Companies of Colonel Waterburys, & Colonel Wards Regiments now at Stamford to take up their quarters at Horse Neck, Rye, & Marineck. The Companies which march to New-Chester, & New-Rochelle to halt 'till they receive further Orders from Col^o Waterbury who commands the whole body.

A Copy of a Resolve of the Committee of Stamford :

RES^d THAT WHEREAS the Committee of Safety for this town are apprehensive that a great part of the Provisions carried to New-York, from this Town goes into the hand of our Enemies, which to prevent, *Resolved* that no Provisions, or Produce of any kind whatsoever shall be allowed to be transported either by Land, or Water to the said Town of New-York.

A Copy of a Letter from the Committee of Correspondence of Ridgfield to the Committee of Correspondence of Stamford.

Ridgfield, January the 5th 76.

GENTLEMEN :

We receiv'd your letter of the 3^d instant informing us of the Resolution that you have come into to prevent the Ministerial Troops receiving any supply from New-York. We thank you for your early attention to an object of so much importance to the interest of the United Colonies, and shall carefully Co-operate with

you in carring of it strictly into execution as We look on it as an object of the first magnitude. We are Gentlemen, with great Truth & Regard—Your most obedient humble Serv^{ts}

PHILIP B. BEADLE,
STEPHEN SMITH,
JOHN BENEDICT.

FROM EBENEZER HAZARD.

New York, Jan. 29th 1776.

SIR,

The Post informed me on Saturday Evening, with great appearances of real anxiety, that he was fully persuaded there would be such a Disturbance in consequence of your arrival here, as would render it quite unsafe for the Post Office to be kept in this City and very seriously advised me to remove it. As I am not remarkable for credulity, I paid but little attention to him, nevertheless as it is my Duty to pay due Regard to every Hint which may tend to the security or advantage of the Office, I take the liberty of troubling you with a Line & begging the Favor of your advice, which will much oblige

Sir,

Y^r most obed^t hum^e Serv^t

EBEN. HAZARD.

FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Cambridge, January 30, 1776.

DEAR SIR :

I wrote to you the 23d instant, and then informed you that General Clinton had gone upon some expedition with four or five hundred men. There is good reason to believe that Tryon has applied for some troops, and that he would join them with a great number of

inhabitants, so that you will see the necessity of your being decisive and expeditious in your operations in that quarter.

The tories should be disarmed immediately, though it is probable that they may have secured their arms on board the King's ships, until called upon to use them against us. However, you can seize upon the persons of the principals. They must be so notoriously known, that there will be little danger of your committing mistakes; and happy should I be if the Governour could be one of them.

Since writing the above your favor of the 24th came to hand, with the sundry enclosures, which I have with attention perused, and very much approve of your conduct.

I sincerely wish that the letter you expect to receive from Congress may empower you to act conformable to your own and my sentiments on this occasion. If they should order differently we must submit, as they, doubtless, will have good reasons for what they may determine on.

The Congress desire I should send an active General to Canada. I fancy, when they made the demand that they did not think General Schuyler would continue in that station, which he has given me to understand, by some late letters from him, that he would. Should they not approve of the New York expedition, and think another General necessary for the Northern Department, it is probable they will fix on you to take the command there. I should be sorry to have you removed so far from this scene, but if the service there requires your presence, it will be a fine field for the exertion of your admirable talents.

There is nothing new here. Let me hear often from you, and believe me, &c.,

GEORGE WASHINGTON

To Major General Lee

TO ROBERT MORRIS

Stamford January 30, 1776.

MY DR MORRIS.

My Genius or Daemon whispered to me when I composed my letter and memorial to the Congress that it was not altogether right, all I can say in defence of it is that a member of the Congress of great judgment and of whose friendship I have the strongest conviction was of opinion that it wou'd be prudent and well timed, however I am extremely happy that you have not presented it and congratulate myself in having acquired two friends such as yourself and Mr Rutledge to whom I am desirous (if they will accept the office) of giving a discretionary unlimited power to superintend my fame and interests—I must intreat and indeed have no reason to doubt that you will continue your vigilance and activity—You seem to wonder that I should join in the hue and cry for independence I wrote on this subject in too great a haste to Mr Rutledge and did not explain myself fully. I was until the appearance of the King's speech and the adulatory sanguinary address from the Commons to the Tyrant a strong advocate for dependence—I thought the relation the colonies formerly stood in with the mother Country extremely calculated for their mutual happiness in short my creed in this article was honestly given in my last letter to Mr. Burgoyne—the seeds of jealousy and dissension are so visibly sown amongst the different Provinces that I am convinced the difficulties to form one great confederate Body of America will be very great. But as it appears from the inexorable bloody disposition of the King the corruption of the Parliament and the pusillanimity of the People that you must be infallibly forced into the measure. I think the sooner it is done the better—if indeed we should hear that the People of England had at length arous'd themselves from their torpor had brought the whole wicked junto to condign punishment,

brought back the Parliament to its original principles, curtailed or destroyed the pecuniary influence of the crown, and reduced the army to a less dangerous bulk—the man who will vote for Independence I shall think a very bad American—but if Great Britain is to continue this inhuman piratical murderous war, if the Tyrant is supported any longer in his diabolical measures I confess I can see no one salutary end in whining loudly after this independence—it will only discourage other powers from assisting us either directly or indirectly and give the world in general a low opinion of American spirit and American sense—Such is my opinion, but I do assure you I neither think it decent nor proper in my circumstances to be very liberal of my sentiments. I have upon the whole a very great opinion of the Congress whatever they resolve I shall with readiness and zeal assent to. A most dreadful visitation has fallen upon me, whether from exposing myself too much to the cold or whether I had it in my blood I cannot say but I am actually incapacitated from moving my legs by the gout or rheumatism, or mixture of both. I am indeed so ill that I have order'd a litter to be made for me and unless the present fortunate fall of snow enables me to stay it, in this equipage I must be conveyed to N. York—for as a Committee is detached from the Congress to meet me I think myself oblig'd to be there dead or alive. I can see no more than you can how it is possible to fortify N. York in a hurry against their shipping—but it is not so difficult to prevent them from taking post in it, which indeed was the purpose of my being order'd from Camp as we had the strongest assurance that it was the Enemy's intention. I wish to God the Provincial Congress there would be prevailed upon to move their women children and effects—their procrastination is certainly dangerous and gives rise to reports not very advantageous to 'em—do you know that the rascal Hite is going to sue me in Chancery for having bought his Estate or some conversation I held with his son when at Camp? But what this conversation was I cannot

for my soul recollect but can only remember that he professed great satisfaction at the whole tenor of my proceedings. Mr. White laughs at his menaces. My love and thanks to Rutledge.

Yours D^r Morris

C. LEE

TO THE COMMITTEE OF CONGRESS.

Stamford, 31st January, 1776.

GENTLEMEN,

I cannot recollect any incident which has given me greater distress than the present unexpected illness, as it was necessary for many reasons to have had a conference with you. I yesterday flatter'd myself from the fall of snow we had that I should have been able to have proceeded in a sledge, but this hope has abandon'd us—Tomorrow I shall attempt it in a Carriage or Litter. Nothing but an intolerable degree of pain shall stop me.

Last night I received a letter from Gen^l Washington, which informs me, that from the best intelligence, General Clinton has certainly sail'd with a body of 5 or 600 men, and he is inclin'd to think that this force is destin'd to New York or its Environs. I have luckily sent on Col^o Waterbury with his Regiment consisting of about 700 Men, with four Companies of Volunteers: this Corps I apprehend, in conjunction with Lord Stirlings, will be able to give a good account of General Clinton, unless indeed he is join'd by a much larger body of Tories, than I hope we have reason to suspect, will be the case—Colonel Waterbury is a very good Man, & has the reputation of being a spirited soldier. I have ordered him Gen^{ls} to submit the instructions he has receiv'd from me to your Consideration, and in all things to act according to your directions.

The Committee of Safety at New York sometime ago promis'd General Washington to forward to Camp

some necessary stores, ammunition & Cannon which he had requested. They have not been forwarded, the General, of course, is not a little perplex'd and chagrin'd. I have sent a List of the stores requir'd & promis'd, to Col^o McDougal. It is certainly Gentlemen necessary for the good of the service that you should exert your influence to prevent any further delay. The Cannon which were to be sent, have been indeed otherwise dispos'd of by Mr. Tryons Agents, but the shells, Carcasses, Shott, &c. are as yet in statu quo—these are absolutely and immediately wanted in Camp, without them nothing can be done. Two Brass Field Pieces were likewise to have been lent by the City of New York—if they can be spar'd they will be of very considerable service.

I am Gentlemen,

Your most ob^t hble Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

To the Hon^{ble} Mess^{rs} Harrison, Lynch & Allen,
Committee from the Continental Congress.

TO ALEXANDER McDUGALL.

Stamford, 31st January, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

As I am unexpectedly attacked by a very severe fit of the Gout or Rheumatism, or a mixture of both, which will probably prevent my seeing you as soon as I could wish, and as no time is to be lost, I am under the necessity of troubling you with this Letter. I have just rec'd a Letter from the General, & another from Col^o Knox expressing some Surprize & uneasiness from your having not yet forwarded the Shells mentioned in your letter of the 2^d Ins^t. The General likewise requests that you would spare him some Powder if possible—Col^o Knox has sent me a detail of those Articles that

should have been sent by the Provincial Congress or the Committee of Safety during the recess of that Congress. The Stores it seems are at Turtle Bay, the Cannon (those I suppose which have been so ingeniously spik'd) are at Kings Bridge, excepting two Brass six pounders belonging to the City which were promis'd as a Loan. Now Sir, if they could be put on board some vessell and sent to New London a very considerable saving would be made in the Article of Carting. I must therefore request you in the name of the General that the greater part—Indeed all if they can be spar'd of those stores, may be sent without loss of time, by the safest mode of conveyance to Camp, where they are much wanted. The following is a List of the Articles order'd Nov^r 27. 1775.

2 dble fortified Iron	4 pounders.
2 Brass	" 6 pdrs.
5 Tons	24lb. Shott.
5 Tons	18 Do.
5 Tons	13 In. Schells
10 Tons	10 do.
10 Tons	8 do
5 Tons	7 do

Port fire composition, Quick match, all the Carcasses.

Ordered on the 17. Decr.

500	13 in Shells.
200	$5\frac{1}{10}$.
400	$4\frac{1}{2}$

There is no doubt but the Cheapest mode of transporting would be by Sea—the question is whether it would be safe. If this mode is adopted you are to apply to Col^o Waterbury who will supply you with any number of men that may be wanted

I am Sir,

Your most obt. humble Servt.,

CHARLES LEE.

Col^o M^cDougal.

FROM LORD STIRLING.

Elizabeth Town, Feb. 4. 1776.

MY DEAR GENERAL :

I shall ever be happy in obeying your Commands. I hope to be with you tomorrow, & bring with me, about one half the number you mention, the other half I shall order from Brunswick and Amboy, and to follow the next day.

I am Your faithfull & Obedient
Humble Servant,

Genl. Lee.

STIRLING.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

New-York, February 5th 1776.

MY DEAR GENERAL :

I arrived here yesterday, but not without some difficulty. My disorder increased, rather than diminished, so that I was under the necessity of being carried in a litter a considerable part of the way. I consider it as a piece of the greatest good fortune that the Congress have detached a Committee to this place ; otherwise I should have made a most ridiculous figure, besides bringing upon myself the enmity of the whole Province. My hands were completely tied up from taking any steps necessary for the public service, by the late resolve of the Congress, putting every detachment of the Continental forces under the command of the Provincial Congress where such detachment is.

I should apprise you that General Clinton arrived almost at the same instant with myself. He has brought no troops with him, and pledges his honor that none are coming. He says it is merely a visit to his friend Tryon. If it is really so, it is the most whimsical piece of civility I ever heard of. He informs us that his intention is for North Carolina, where he expects five regiments from England ; that he only brought two

companies of light-infantry from Boston. This is certainly a droll way of proceeding; to communicate his full plan to the enemy is too novel to be credited.

The Congress Committee, a certain number of the Committee of Safety, and your humble servant, have had two conferences. The result of these conferences is such as will agreeably surprise you. It is, in the first place, agreed and justly, that to fortify the town against shipping is impracticable; but we are to fortify lodgments, in some commanding part of the City, for two thousand men.

We are to erect enclosed batteries, on both sides of the water, near Hellgate, which will answer the double purpose of securing the town against piracies through the Sound, and secure our communication with Long Island, now become a more capital point than ever, as it is determined to form a strong fortified camp of 3000 men in that island, immediately opposite to New York. The pass in the highlands is to be made as respectable as possible, and guarded by a battalion. In short, I think the plan judicious and complete. The two brass pieces, and other articles will be sent down as you require. You have heard of the fate of the Cannon near King's Bridge.

As I write with pain, you will excuse my abrupt conclusion.

Yours, dear General,

C. LEE.

To Genl. Washington.

P. S. My love to Gates and the rest, female and male.

FROM THE HARTFORD VOLUNTEERS.

New-York, Febry. 5th 1776.

SIR

Agreeable to your Excellency's Address to the Gentlemen inhabiting Hartford Town County and Neigh-

bourhood, wherein you mention as General Washington has the highest opinion of the virtue alacrity and spirit pervading all orders of Men in this part of America and that a Body of Volunteers are at present absolutely necessary to defeat Ministerial Designs, in a pernicious Scheme they have formed, which should they succeed it is impossible to paint to our Imagination the consequences which must attend it.

In pursuance of the above Address, the under written together with a number of other Gentlemen inhabiting Hartford Town and Neighborhood to the number of twenty four voluntarily inlisted ourselves under your Excellencys Command, and adhere to our colours for the Term of at least one month from the Time we were to quit New Haven, and immediately equipped ourselves with arms, ammuniton, &c. and mounted upon good horses proceeded to New Haven the place of rendezvous, from thence to Stamford, where we joined your Excellency, and from thence to King-bridge to execute your orders, which we comply'd with and marched to King Bridge the same day there Col^o Waterbury by order of your Excellency dismiss'd our Company, on which some of us to the number of about eight not deeming Col^o Waterbury's orders directly consistent with your Excellency's orders which you gave us the same Day and Date as those given to Colo^l Waterbury to dismiss us, repaired to the City of New York, where we have remained waiting your Excellency's further commands, and not thinking it honorable to return to Hartford &c, without waiting on your Excellency, three of us, as a Committee from those present took the liberty about the hour of ten o'clock this morning to wait upon your Excellency in order to procure a formal dismission from any further service or otherwise your further Commands. But on our arrival at Head Quarters and seeing your aid-de Camp, M^r Palfrey and M^r Adj^t. Sears, they gave us to understand that you were not at leisure to be spoken with, on which we left our compliments for your Excellency, and the gentlemen

wished us a pleasant ride home, which we took for a formal dismissal, and take the liberty to desire Capt. Ledlie one of our Committee above in our name to wait on your Excellency with our Compliments and best respects and request that your Excellency would be pleased to sign a warrant or such other Instrument as your Excellency may think proper for abating at least our expenses from Hartford to New York and from New York to Hartford. Your Excellency's compliance will oblige your most Obedient Humble Serv^t.

THOS. SEYMOUR,
H : LEDLIE,
HEZ. WYLLYS,
CALEB BULL, Junr.
WILL^m BULL,
WILL^m LAWRENCE

Dated at New York, 5th Febyr, 1776.

To His Excell'y Major General Lee.

Endorsed—"Gentlemen Horse Volunteers from Hartfor—February 5, 1776."

COLL. THOMAS SEYMOUR,	LIEUT. RETURN STRONG,
DO SAMUEL TALCOT,	PHINEA DRAKE,
CAPT. HUGH LEDLIE,	THRALL,
CAPT. BISSELL,	HEZEKIAH WILLIS,
CAPT. JAMES HOOKER,	ELISHA SKINER,
CAPT. JONA. WADSWORTH,	ELSWORTH,
CAPT. JAMES CALDWELL,	THOMAS HILDROP,
CAPT. WILLIAM BULL,	SAMUEL W. ALLEN,
WILLIAM LAWRENCE,	GEORGE LORD,
DANIEL ALCOT,	WILLIAM WADSWORTH,
CALEB BULL,	DENSLOW,
ROSWELL GRANT,	DEODAH WILLIAMS.

Expenses of 24 Gentlemen Light Horse (Volunteers)
from Hartford, under Command of His
Excell'y, Major Gen. Lee from Jan. 23 to
Jan 31st 1776. @ 54/- y^k p^r man—.... £64. 16. —

Ditto of 7 Gentlemen in N. York 5 Dy _s @ 4/- Ɔ		
day Ea.	7.—	—
Ditto 7 Horses, 5 dy. 3/- Ɔ day	5. 5.	—
Ditto of 23 Gent. Returning home to Hartford, &c @ 6/9 Ɔ d.	23. 5.	9
Errors Excepted:	£100. 6.	9
5 th Febry, 1776.		

II. LEDDIE.

FROM ALEXANDER WHITE.

Winchester, 5th February 1776.

SIR,

I sometime ago received your favor of 3rd Dec^r. I had before the receipt of that letter acquainted you with the conclusion of your troublesome business with Mr. Hite, except that I had not secured the payment of the balance of the purchase money, which was to be done on procuring a certificate from the Secretary's office that the Lands were free of Incumbrances. I have since been satisfied in that particular, so that I hope the whole transaction has been conducted in a manner that will meet with your approbation. The old Gentleman with his Family immediately left the Premises and is gone to Carolina.

I informed you that after the whole matter was agreed, and the money paid him he commenced suit against you to compel you to accept the Land which he had consented to leave out of the purchase. I enclosed you a copy of his material evidence. Of above one hundred litigious suits which within two years he has commenced or excited, I think that is the most frivolous. I anxiously look forward to that happy period when peace and tranquility shall be restored on such terms as will secure our rights and liberties on the true principles of the Constitution, and among the many blessings which will attend that desirable event, I consider the pleasure of your acquaintance as one.

But I really fear the period is remote. I cannot flatter myself that one defeat will terminate the calamities of America: Englishmen are too obstinate and Great Britain too powerful so easily to relinquish a favourite measure. We have had no distinct account of the unhappy affair at Quebec; 'tis said all our brave Virginians are killed or taken—Will not a miscarriage there have fatal effects? Please to let me hear from you.

I am Sir,

Your very humble Servant

ALEX^R WHITE.

TO JONATHAN TRUMBULL.

New York, Feb^y 7, 1776.

SIR,

The late Resolves of the Continental Congress, putting every detachment of the Continental Army immediately under the direction of the Provincial Congress or Committee of Safety where such detachments were to act, and of course the uncertainty of my being admitted into this City with the Troops under my command induc'd me to send Col^o Ward's Regiment to their respective homes and thereby to save a very considerable immediate expence to your Colony, and ultimately to the whole United Colonies; Contrary to my expectations, we are not only admitted, but it is determin'd to take strong possession of the City as well as of its most important environs—In short to put the Province in such a situation as to render any attempts of the Enemy to establish themselves in it, ineffectual. For this purpose some additional Battalions are ordered to be levied in this Province. But from the great scarcity of men, & greater of Arms, I apprehend it will be a considerable time before they can be compleated, and equipp'd in such a manner as to form a corps in whom

any great reliance can be placed. The enemy may perhaps very soon appear, and we ought immediately to be ready to receive them. I could therefore Sir, wish, that if Col^o Ward's Regiment is not already disbanded, and your Colony can spare them, that they be immediately detach'd for this place. But if it is disbanded that you would if possible, send to this place a number of volunteers, equal in number to that Regiment, compleatly arm'd & accoutred.

I am sensible, Sir, that it must be extremely teasing both to the Men & Officers, to be thus eternally order'd & counter-order'd—Marching and Counter-marching but I hope they will do me the justice to attribute it, not to any indecision or uncertainty of mind in me, but to several whimsical circumstances in our Situation which cannot at present be explain'd to 'em.

I am Sir with the greatest respect

Your honor's most obed^t & very hble Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

P. S. General Clinton arriv'd almost in the same instant with myself, he has brought no men with him, at least that we can discover, and has given his word of honor none are coming. Says it is only a friendly visit to M^r Tryon, but the fact is, I suppose he came only to reconnoitre whether the Coast was clear, and his friends the Tories ready for his reception.

The Gentlemen of the Committee of Safety for this City are with me this moment. They intreat you will without delay forward & compleat those Powder Mills which are now erecting, and as many others as you can possibly set on foot. I congratulate you on the arrival of Sixty Tons more of Salt Petre, Thirteen Tons of Powder, and Thirteen hundred small arms at Philadelphia—such an acquisition will I hope enable us to face our Enemy on more equal terms.

His Honor Governor Trumbull. p Express.

TO THE HARTFORD VOLUNTEERS.

GENERAL LEE presents his compliments to Cap^t Ledlie, that when the Company of Horse Volunteers presented themselves for the present service, he understood that it was their intention to bear their proper Expenses excepting their common allowance of Rations which were to be furnished them by the Continental Commissary. He never had the least Idea that they intended to put either the Continent or their own Province to so extraordinary an Expense. General Washington had received the strongest assurances, that any the most considerable number of Volunteers might be rais'd in Connecticut for this particular service entirely at their own charge, that even the Rations, or Ration Money would not be expected, but his Excellency thought that would be expecting too much, and therefore seem'd desirous that the Gentlemen Volunteers should be entreated to accept of their Rations or Ration Money. General Lee does not conceive that he has power or authority, or that it would be consistent with decency to sign his name to any Warrant for the payment of the Bill of Expenses sent in. He therefore begs Capt. Ledlie & the Gentlemen will excuse his Complying with the request, which he owns a good deal surprizes him.

New York, 8th Feb^y 1776.

TO THE HARTFORD VOLUNTEERS.

New York, Feb^y 8. 1776.

SIR,

The Hartford Company of Volunteers were dismiss'd entirely through a blunder, it was my intention to keep 'em, however as it is too late to undo, what has been done, It only remains that I should express the

high sense I have of their Zeal Activity and Spirit. I return 'em therefore my sincerest thanks, and formally dismiss 'em for the present from any obligation of duty.

CHARLES LEE
Major-General.

To Cap^t Ledlie.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

New York, February 9. 1776.

SIR:

A transport is this instant arrived in this harbour with troops, although it is said that General Clinton gave his honour that not a soldier was destined for this place. As we have, sir, a great deal to do, many works to throw up, Long Island to secure, and a considerable deal of duty necessary for the safety of the city, and as the four battalions ordered to be raised in this province cannot possibly be prepared for any sort of service in a very short space of time, it is requisite to provide ourselves with an adequate force immediately. It is true, the Committee of Safety (whose zeal and alacrity seem most fervent) have ordered three regiments of Minute-Men into the city; but I apprehend even this addition will not enable us to accomplish the measures resolved upon. If, Sir, a battalion of the Philadelphia Associators, or a detachment from the several battalions, amounting to the number of a complete battalion, could be spared us, they would not only be of infinite use to us, but of considerable to themselves, as it will afford them an opportunity of instructing themselves in the construction of field works, and the method of fortifying and intrenching camps. I confess I am the more solicitous of being immediately put into force, as I am extremely apprehensive that a very large body of the Ministerialists will be here in a few days, either from Boston or from England. I

think, Sir, likewise, as probably the number of troops will be increasing here every day, the Congress would do well, without loss of time, to establish an Hospital in this Colony.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect, your most humble servant

CHARLES LEE.

To the Honorable John Hancock, Esq. President of the Continental Congress.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

New York, February 9. 1776.

DR. MORRIS,

I had not time when I wrote last to talk to you on the subject of Canada. You ask how it would suit me? I give you my word my Dr. friend that wherever I can be of most service there I shall chuse to be, this you will say is a general way of talking and no answer to your particular question. I confess that the service of Canada is very flattering to my ambition and opens a most tempting field of honour—the only objection I can have to it and that is a solid one is that my present attack of the gout not only renders it impossible for me to set out immediately as I imagine the service requires but the rigor of that climate may perhaps occasion a relapse which may incapacitate me from doing any thing not only there but in any other part, this is my objection. I beg you to weigh it well—Can you spare from Philadelphia a Regiment of your Associators? If I mistake not we shall want 'em here—You know we are to lodge ourselves securely in the Town, to take post in Long Island to fortify and secure the passage of Hell Gate &c &c to accomplish these things as well as to do the necessary duties of the place, we have not more than eighteen hundred men. From

Mr Clinton's [movements] we have the strongest reason to expect a Body of the Ministerialists every day, should they find us in our present weak state we should make a sorry figure—I beg you will let me have your opinion by the return of the Post on this head. When I consider our present situation here and at home nothing gives me so much uneasiness as the uncertainty we are in with regard to the intentions of the French in the W. Indies—it is amazing that so wise a body as the Congress should sleep over so alarming a circumstance but perhaps they have not—perhaps they have proper Instruments of Observation—if the French have a powerful Fleet as well as large army, we may suppose they intend to attack our Islands, but if they have simply Battalions, we must conclude that there is a conclusion betwixt the two Courts—probably——— in his expedition to Paris has enter'd into a secret engagement to let Canada slip out of our hands into theirs, these Troops may be there for this purpose, but be this as it may it certainly is your business to be ascertained of their intention. I have just received a letter from Gates reminding me of my obligations to Mr Nourse who has been so active in my purchase. He says that there is a method of showing my gratitude by availing myself of your friendship in procuring a clerkship for him in some of your numerous Captains—He says he is a very capable young man—if such thing should be in your power and suit with your convenience you will add to the heap of obligations under which I groan—Adieu.

D^r Morris

C. LEE

My compliments to Rutledge—I shall write to him by the next post.

FROM GENERAL GATES.

Head Q^{rs} 10th Febry. 1776.

DEAR LEE,

The inclos'd is just come to my Hands, the other Letters that have come for you lately by the post, have been regularly sent by every conveyance that offer'd. The General writes to you about poor Palfrey, you will unless you are certain of providing better for him, send him of course to Head Quarters, Whitcomb as the Devil will have it has recruited his Regiment pretty tolerably for this month past. So I see no opening for Brewer, if there was, I think Palfrey had better accept of being in the Gen^{ls} Family, as that will with his talents and address, in all likelihood soon lead him to a better office. The News we have here, has already pass'd you from Philadelphia. Our post supplies nothing new. We are gaping to know where Clinton is landed, if he is not with you or in Virginia, or Carolina, he may see the West Indies before he gets back to America. We had an exceeding stormy Time, for near a Fortnight after our Intelligence tells us, he left Boston. I suspect Mr. Nourse has inclosed a Letter or Two to your Care for me—Send them by Palfrey—When you have any News worth mentioning from Europe or the Northward remember to write to me.

I am

Ever affectionately yours

HORATIO GATES.

My Compliments to The Delegates, and all Friends. Has Captain Badlam of the Artillery & Engineer Smith arrived according to Order?

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

New York, February 11, 1776.

SIR :

As the North-River is now entirely clear of ice, I thought it imprudent to suffer the cannon and other stores to remain any longer upon the Battery, and in yards at the very water-edge, from whence the ships of war might have conveyed them at their pleasure, as it would have been impossible to have obstructed their manœuvres, almost within the very muzzles of their guns; this day, therefore, I ordered the whole to be removed to the ground before the Upper Barracks; it was effected without the least opposition, or show of opposition from the ships; indeed, I even consider their menaces to fire upon the town as idle gasconades. Enclosed is a list of the pieces and their appurtenances.

The Mercury, frigate, the transport and brig are sailed; if your fleet was out, they must certainly fall into your hands.

Colonel Richmore will deliver this. I wish, sir, you would be very particular in questioning him with respect to the state of your Army, of your artillery, but above all with regard to the reputed abilities and popularity of your principal officers. I am sensible, Sir, it is a delicate subject to put an officer under the necessity of giving his opinion of the capacity of others, but when the safety of the state depends upon a true knowledge of these circumstances, all delicacy must be dispensed with; and it may be asserted that the salvation or perdition of America, in great measure depends upon the management or mismanagement of Canada. You will find Colonel Richmore a very clear headed man and intelligent soldier, and capable of giving the fullest necessary lights. He is convinced, that any number of battalions may be raised in Canada to serve out of their own country. I would submit it to the wisdom of the Congress, whether the scheme should not be immediate-

ly adopted ; it would answer a thousand good purposes, which must occur to every man. Firstly, we want men ; secondly, out of their own country, they are capable of being excellent soldiers ; but, above all, it will be a pledge of the fidelity of the whole Province ; it will engage them so far that they cannot recede.

I beg your pardon, sir, for the length, and perhaps, incoherence of this letter, for I perceive that from the want of sleep, my head is somewhat distracted. I am in hopes of walking out in a couple days, and that my head will grow clear as my feet grow strong.

I am, sir, your most obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To the Honourable John Hancock, Esq &c. &c.

P. S. I have not been able to procure (as thought and expected) an exact list of the guns and stores this night, but will send it by the post.

FROM BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

Philad.^a Feb. 11, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

The Bearer Mons^r. Arundel is directed by the Congress to repair to Gen. Schuyler, in order to be employed by him in the Artillery Service. He purposes to wait on you in his way, and has requested me to introduce him by a Line to you. He has been an officer in the French Service, as you will see by his Commissions ; and professing a Good Will to our Cause, I hope he may be useful in Instructing our Gunners and Matrosses—Perhaps he may advise in opening the nailed Cannon.

I received the enclosed the other day from an officer, Mr. Newland, who served in the two last wars, and was known by Genl. Gates who spoke well of him to me when I was at Cambridge. He is desirous now of en

tering into our service. I have advised him to wait upon you at New York.

They still talk big in England, and threaten hard; but their language is somewhat civiler, at least not quite so disrespectful to us. By degrees they may come to their senses, but too late I fancy for their Interest.

We have got in a large quantity of saltpetre 120 Ton, & 30 more expected. Powdermills are now wanting. I believe we must set to work, and make it by hand—but I still wish with you that Pikes could be introduced, and I would add bows and arrows. Those were good weapons not wisely laid aside:

1. Because a Man may shoot as truly with a Bow as with a common Musket.

2. He can discharge 4 arrows in the time of charging and discharging one Bullet.

3. His object is not taken from his view by the smoke of his own side.

4. A Flight of Arrows seen coming upon them terrifies and disturbs the Enemy's Attention to his Business.

5. An Arrow striking in any part of a Man, puts him *hors de combat* 'till 'tis extracted.

6. Bows and Arrows are more easily provided every where than Muskets & Ammunition.

Polydore Virgil speaking in one of our Battles against the French in Edward the 3rds reign mentions the great confusion the Enemy were thrown into, *sagittarum nube*, from the English; and concludes, *Est res profecto dictu mirabilis, ut tantus ac potens Exercitus a solis ferè Anglicis Sagittariis victus fuerit; adeo Anglus est Sagittipotens, & ID GENUS ARMORUM VALET.*

If so much Execution was done by Arrows when Men wore some defensive Armour, how much more might be done now that it is out of use.

I am glad you are come to New York; but I also wish you could be in Canada.

There is a kind of suspense in Men's minds here at present, waiting to see what terms will be offer'd from

England. I expect none that we can accept; and when that is generally seen we shall be more unanimous and more decisive—Then your proposed solemn League and Covenant will go better down; and perhaps most of your other strong measures adopted.

I am always glad to hear from you, but I do'nt deserve your Favours being so bad a Correspondent. My Eyes will now hardly serve me to write by Night; and these short days have been all taken up by such a variety of business, that I seldom can sit down three Minutes without Interruption.

God give you Success. I am with the greatest esteem

Yours affectionately

B. FRANKLIN.

To The Honorable Charles Lee, Esq.

Lieut. General of the Continental Army,
New York.

Pr^r Mons^r. Arundel.

TREVOR NEWLAND TO DOCTOR FRANKLIN.

[*Enclosed in the foregoing.*]

SIR,

Immediately after I had waited upon you at Philad^a I proceeded to N. York, and finding much difficulty in pursuing my Intended journey I delivered your Dispatches to Mr. Lewis, by Direction of Mr. Van B. Livingston, and wrote to you at my return acquainting therewith. I have not wrote to you so frequently as I would do Immagining that your time might be Employ'd better in matters of greater moment to y^e publick, and where publick utility is in question apologys become unnecessary, please therefore to accept the following hints from one who has seen service. I'm amazed at a ship or two laying at N. York for sometime past in open violation of y^e United Provinces. I never saw two vessels that lay in more danger were they attacked,

and they as well know it, the Asia lay along in the North River and refused to go into y^e sound, until Parker or a Sen^r Cap^t was sent with a ship to reinforce him, with positive orders from the Admiral to go in, it may also be seen by their writing to y^e Mayor, and by Parkers treatning, and bullying the Town, there is three ways of taking or destroying them, could it be kept secret, first by boarding for as y^e Asia must ground at low water, the springs upon her cabels would be of no use, and I apprehend that her lower guns could not range over the wharf when aground, therefore a few Guns with Grape shot run down upon the wharfs upon her bow & quarter, would effectually sweep and clear her decks while y^e people boarded—secondly if there was mortars or even Guns to throw combustibile matter on the decks, into y^e rigging, to stick on her sides, with grape as before to prevent extinguishment, the guns with the grape would be out of the power of her guns while aground, The 3rd and best method as I immagin, I would undertake myself with a reasonable person to command the detachment, as second in comm^d or Engineer, or Conductor of y^e works, or as I told you in any character, so that I might be servisable to y^e cause.

The method I will here lay down as well as I can, there is Long Island and Nutten Island well situated to place Guns, and I immagin three or four hundred men would be sufficient to compleat all the works that would be necessary in one night, the greatest difficulty would be to get Cannon to Nutten Island, but they might come from the Narrows, by night in flats, it would be impossible to point out either the facilitys, or difficultys of the undertaking in ye course of a letter, the greatest difficulty will be to keep it secret from the people of N. York. It occur'd to me when they went to quel the Torys upon Long Island that it would be a good time, but there might be a diversion of the like kind, and on y^e same or any other that might keep it secret from the people of Stattan Island, Long Island, and N. York, whome I look upon to be very rotten, and to have

done much hurt, if this matter is not soon put in execution, they will be reinforced, or they will fall into the N. River, but if there was a lodgement with some Guns upon Nutten Island, with the Town Battery to assist, they could not get out without running aground, as soon as the Batterys upon Long Island, and Nutten Island, begin to play there should be some of the Connecticut men, or some others, ready to run down upon the wharfs with some few guns a head and a stern, with grape, to clear the decks and fire into the ports while loading, the Batterys will have this advantage, that they can play by night if clear, this method will so harrass and disable them that they must strike quickly, or they will be boarded, when this affair is finish'd the men should Immediately march to the Narrows, and erect a battery that would keep all out, and all in, 20 Guns would sink any vessel that would dare attempt to go up properly disposed of, and would be out of the range of all shot from shipping, your Crusers would find shelter and a good harbour, had this been done last summer, our Enemies at Boston would starve e'er this, there should be a Camp formed there early in y^e spring, and two strong Forts erected with retrenchments to cover them, for you may depend upon it there will be a vigorous push made early to get up the North River, works upon each side would greatly retard and delay their opperations, and I doubt not but defeat the design of the Campaign, to attack both, they must divide their army, which would greatly harrass them, and if they wait to attack them one after another, the campaign is lost, besides the attacks made upon them at Landing within the vicinity and perhaps under cover of these forts and retrenchments, also the attacks on their rear, while they are attacking the works. In short we have everything in our favor to defeat the ensuing campaign, if we only begin in time and conduct matters properly, you want nothing but experienced officers 500 at least, but to return to y^e men of war, that, I find so much intimidates the people of this Country, is a well constructed floating Battery,

formidable and powerful in her own element at sea, no doubt, but when opposed to the land but an egg-shell, Batterys and Guns properly placed will soon silence them I will here describe as well as I can the Battery's of late made use of against shiping, the old battery's in our ports and harbours at home found almost useless as they are built, they are all built similar or like that at N. York, very low and near the water, whereby the vessel has all the power over them she could wish, not only from her great guns, but small arms, whereas quite the reverse ought to be the case, the battery's should be fixed at a distance from the water and vessel, no nearer than 200 yards if the ground will admit, from the channel or where the vessel is to anchor or sail, and upon ground high enough to be out of range of her shot, if such ground cannot be found, take the highest you can get, and sink or let in your platforms and guns upon the top or summit of the hill, the muzzles of y^e Guns as it were peeping out of the hill, thus the men will work their guns when thus situated with a facility and safety, and out of the reach of all shot, there is no ship in the world that would dare offer to attack or pass such a battery, if 20 Guns was mounted, these are y^e kind of batteries that I would propose for all attacks upon vessels, and what I would make use of upon Long Island, and Nutten Island, and tho' the land is not so high as may be wished, yet the sinking and letting in the guns in ye firm and highest ground will answer the purpose no doubt, ships fire very slow, and fire at randum, neither can it be Immagined that men can stand to their Guns, where shot and splinters is continually flying, much less level and point Guns accurately, in short they must do as the french did on board 4 sail of the Line at Lewisburgh, in a short time they must strike, or jump into y^e hold, Notwithstanding we never had more than two Guns playing upon any ship at a time—Twelve Guns would be sufficient, six upon Long Island and six upon Nutten Island, and 12 pounders would be heavy enough as the distance is but short, and less than 3^{lb} of

powder would be sufficient for a charge, there ought to be two men to each Gun, that understand loading and firing, the rest may be raw, I would immagin that Lord Stirling would be a very proper person to Comm^d the detachment, and would readily accept the command I make no doubt, the troops might keep moveing some at the Narrows, some at the ferry at York, some even might go to Jamaica, flatbush, &c, until Guns and matters are in readiness, y^e Comm^d^s officer and Engineer at the ferry, off and on, to reconnoiter the ground, and view the position of y^e Vessels, I have here thrown a few matters together in a rough maner, however I shall not Needlessly make any apology for troubling you, as the Intention is Good. I can assure you, that these hints as I call them, are no whim or production of my own but from real practice and experience which I have often seen and help'd to execute in Rivers, Lakes, and Harbours, I would not offer to impose anything of my own fraiming, and in short I have seen so much of war-fair during 28 years service, and as experience is allowed to be the best master, if I follow only that which I have seen and executed, there can be no rom left in me for Invention. I cannot dismiss the Narrows yet, tho' I need not inform you that that part should be much attended to, let the York people be Torys or what they will, the Enemy should not be allow'd to slip into the heart of the countrey, without gaining it by inches, the Narrows are central and the people thereabout disposed to be troublesome, it is a most desirable situation for an army, as ye can act either to the Eastward or Westward, together, or separate, and supplies can come from all quarters either by land or water.

My acquaintance, friends to the cause, have frequently attack'd me with respect to my Inactivity in this affair. I told them frequently that I had offer'd my services to you, and said that no doubt but I shold be call'd upon when wanted, this appeased them for some time, but at our last County meeting at Freehold, they threw out several Innuendos, purporting that I never had

offered my services, signafying that it appear'd to them Impossible or verry strange, that an experienced Officers service at such a juncture could be refused by any Prince or Potentate. I beg therefore that you'd offer my services to y^e Honble the Congress and send me something to shew that I have done so, otherways notwithstanding I belong to all their Committees and Councils (but they look upon that as trifling in a Millitary man) yet I expect to be looked upon as a rank Tory in a short time, without you send me something to shew them; they have attacked Morris violently, they look upon all who is or have been connected with Government with an eye of distrust, especially officers that is not employed. A Battery placed as before mentioned, has great power and comm^d of shipping, one shot fired in this angular manner from an eminence will do more Execution than 20 fired Horizontally, for if y^e shot strike the Vessel on one side, between wind and water, they will come out on the other side some feet below water, in short their powder room and all is in danger, nor will the men's lying flat upon the decks screen them, I have had experience of this acting as a Marine Officer on board men of war, you want as I have said before experienced officers, who have explored the Country, rivers, Lakes, and difficult passes, in short that know every inch of ground, that have drub'd and been drub'd, for drubing brings men to reason and reflexion, and will oblige them to think those that know the people on the opposite side, when and who to attack, and when not, that know when they have gain'd an advantage and how to keep it (Amhersts advice to his officers at Table, and upon all occasions was never to lose an inch of ground gained, and used to say, that a thousand gained, nay a million, would not compensate for one foot lost; he mov'd so slow and so cautiously, that he never lost an Inch, or met with a check by which he acquir'd the name of snail from y^e volatile) that know all their manoeuvres and how they carry on their works and duty both by day and by night, that

know the meaning of every tap of their drum, such as these would be thought Inestimable in any service that were opposed to England, you may remember Sir that Mr. Swan was recommended last war in your Regiment for an Adjutant because he fought the blacks in Jamaica, I can without exaggeration, (and I am sure there is none that will be hardy enough to deny it) say that there is not one officer this day in America that has seen more service than I have, both abroad and at home, during both the late wars, I have served both in horse, foot, and marines, I have acted as Engineer at several sieges, and in several other Departments not Regimental—It cannot be that they have seen more, from this reason, I know them all and the service they have seen, there is none of them much older, if any, & I am sure I went as early into the service as any of them, and I am positive that I met with as much approbation and applause from my superior officers as any man ever did upon all occasions, and yet there is nothing could prevail with me to engage again, but the present cause, my all is now at stake, the dye is thrown, I must conquer or dye. I have the honor most respectfully to be,

Your most Hum^{ble} and most obedt servant

TREVOR NEWLAND.

Stafford, 5th Feby, 1776.

P.S.—I do not know that I have the honor to be acquainted with many of the Hon^{ble} the Delegates of the Congress, I think that you and Mr. Clinton, must be y^e first and earliest acquaintance I have in that respectable body. The matter I have here proposed, I would undertake as director, or Engineer, of the Works, with a reasonable man to command the men. I wish Lord Stirling would accept it, he served the Campaign of '56 with us as Secretary. I hope you'l excuse this long Epistle, and Impute it to the Impulse I feel for the Cause.

Hon^{ble} Doct^r Franklin.

FROM THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Philadelphia, February 12, 1776.

SIR :

Your letter of the 9th instant I this morning received, and laid before Congress, who, without delay, paying that attention to it which the intelligence therein contained required, despatched an order to the Convention of New Jersey, and made application to the Committee of Safety of Pennsylvania, requesting them to send immediately to your assistance from each of their respective Colonies, detachments from the Minute-Men and Associators equal to a battalion, from each Colony. The battalion from New Jersey which lies contiguous will, I hope, be with you in two or three days. A ton of powder is also ordered to be sent forward to you, with all possible expedition. The four battalions ordered to be raised in Pennsylvania, are, I understand, in great forwardness. The Congress have given orders to have a return made of those enlisted.

That God may restore you to health, and crown your endeavours in defence of liberty with success, is the sincere and ardent prayer, of, Sir, your most humble servant

JOHN HANCOCK, President.

To Major General Lee.

P. S. The Congress will determine as soon as possible respecting an Hospital, and you shall know the result.

FROM JONATHAN TRUMBULL.

Lebanon, Febry. 12th, 1776.

S^R.

I this day Rec^d your favour of the 7th Inst. wherein you Inform of your sending back Colo. Ward's Regi-

ment, the reason and Inducements thereto, & have no doubt considering the Discouragements you then met with, but your conduct therein was Prudent and discreet. Colo. Ward on his return only dismiss'd his men 'till further order, informing them that if there was no call for their further service, they would receive pay only 'till their return to their respective homes, but if soon called on again for the same service, their Pay no doubt be continued. It gives me much pleasure that Incidents have so turned up as to convince every one of the prudence of the measure in early taking possession and getting a footing in N. York, and that you at last obtained a ready admittance there which I hope will effectually prevent the Enemy from establishing themselves in that quarter. Your desire that Colo. Ward's Reg^t be immediately detached for New York, will be most chearfully complied with, and orders were immediately dispatched to him for that purpose, and hope he will meet but very little delay as Colo. Ward was so prudent as not to give them an absolute dismissal. This Colony has the great Cause of our Country so much at heart, that no motives are wanting to induce us to grant every aid and supply in our power whenever the common cause in which we are engaged calls for them. I hope the officers and soldiers are so well apprised of the difficulties attending your marching them into N. York, and which obliged you to order and counter order and then order again as no objection will remain to their Immediately joining you at N. York, and dare say will most chearfully put themselves soon under your command there. May Heaven grant prosperity and success to our zealous endeavours, and am with respect and esteem,

Your Humble Serv^t

JONTH TRUMBULL.

Major General Lee.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

New York, February 14 [1776.]

D^R MORRIS,

Shall I trouble you to forward the enclosed—my illness is almost past—we only wait for men to set to work.

Yours,

C. LEE.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

New York, February 14. 1776.

DEAR GENERAL:

I should have written to you more constantly, but really had no means of conveying my letter. A M^r Buchanan and Tolby, bound for Head Quarters, will deliver you this. You will excuse the conciseness, as my time is short.

The Governour and Captain of war had threatened perdition to the town, if the cannon was removed from the batteries and wharves; but I ever considered their threats as a *brutum fulmen*, and even persuaded the town to be of the same way of thinking. We accordingly conveyed them to a place of safety in the middle of the day, and no cannonade ensued.

Captain Parker publishes a pleasant reason for his passive conduct. He says that it was manifestly my intention, and that of the New England men under my command, to bring down destruction on this town, so hated for their loyal principles; but that he was determined not to indulge us, so remained quiet out of spite. The people here laugh at his nonsense, and begin to despise the menaces which formerly used to throw them into convulsions. To do them justice the whole show a wonderful alacrity; and, in removing the cannon, men, and boys, of all ages, worked with

the greatest zeal and pleasure. I really believe that the generality are as well affected as any on the Continent.

The Provincial Congress have ordered in 1500 minute-men; a number equal to two battalions are coming from Pennsylvania and the Jerseys. Lord Stirling's regiment is already here, but not complete: when the major part, or a sufficient number arrive, we shall begin our works. My intention is, to pull down that part of the fort on the town side, to prevent its being converted into a citadel for the enemy, and to erect a battery on a traverse in the street, to prevent their making a lodgment in it. A redoubt and battery at the pass of Hell-gate will prevent their ships and tenders passing and repassing, to and from the Sound. We have fixed on a spot in Long Island for a retrenched camp, which I hope will render it impossible for them to get footing on that important island. As this camp can always be reinforced, it is our intention to make it so capacious as to contain four thousand men. The batteries on the pass of Hudson's River will be secured as soon as possible; some of the heavy cannon from hence, must be sent up for the purpose. It is, really, a fine train we are in possession of. You shall have a return of the guns, as well as stores, by the post.

Captain Smyth is an excellent, intelligent, active officer; and I take the liberty of recommending him to your protection. Captain Badlam, of the Artillery, is likewise a man of great merit in his way.

You must pardon me, my dear General for a liberty I have taken. You know that Sears was to collect our volunteers in Connecticut; but he thought he could not succeed, unless he had some nominal office and rank; I accordingly, most impudently by the virtue of the power deputed by you to me (which power you never deputed) appointed him Adjutant General with rank of Lieut. Colonel, for the expedition. It can have no bad consequences; the man was much tickled, and it added spurs to his head. He is a creature of

much spirit and public virtue, and ought to have his back clapped.

With respect to the Canada expedition, which you indirectly propose to me, I have only one answer to make: Wherever I can be of most service, there I should like to be. I have indeed, just at this moment one objection, which is, I am not without apprehensions that facing the cold may throw me into a relapse, so as not only to render me unfit for service there, but every where else. I am indeed much better, but extremely tender; I begin to walk; it has been a damned attack, a constant, violent fever attending it; I never eat nor slept for eight days; but my fever is passed, and I begin to eat. A week I hope will set me up. Several members of Congress have indicated a desire I should go to Canada; I have explained to them my apprehensions, but assured them most honestly of my willingness; but, in fact, unless they expedite an army, and some heavy artillery, it will be in vain to trouble their heads about a General.

Colonel Richmore, [Ritzema] who lately left Montreal, tells us, that what few troops are now there, will infallibly return home early in April. He is gone to the Congress, and I hope will give them (as he is capable) the necessary lights; but, whatever steps they take, be assured dear General, that I am with the greatest readiness, prepared to receive and execute yours and their commands.

Canada is, I confess, if I am only tolerably accounted, a glorious field, which must flatter the ambition of yours, most sincerely.

CHARLES LEE.

To General Washington.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW-YORK.

New York, Feb. 14. 1776.

SIR,

Enclosed I take the liberty of sending the case of Jean Baptiste De Gas, a Canadian, submitting to the consideration of the Provincial Congress whether it would not be proper to furnish him with a necessary sum of money to enable him to proceed to Mr Hancock, to whom he has been recommended.

Sir, as in all probability, a considerable body of troops will be stationed in this city and its environs during the present contest, I would take the liberty to propose to the Congress the establishment of a Corps of Artificers. Such an establishment is not only necessary for the different military works, but I apprehend it will answer very materially in point of economy.

There is another circumstance I must beg leave to mention: it is, Sir, to appoint some person as Commissary to receive, take care of, and be responsible for the various sorts of military stores now in our hands.

I am Sir, your most obt. Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To the President of the Provincial Congress of the
Colony of New York.

THE CASE OF JEAN BAPTISTE DE GAS, THE FRENCH
INTERPRETER.

New York, April [February] 13 1776.

General Wooster employed Jean Baptiste Dagas, the fourth day of January, as conductor and interpreter to the prisoners who were sent from Montreal to Albany. General Wooster advanced him no money, but he re-

ceived from Lieut. Cook, at Ticonderoga, twenty-two shillings, New York currency; that this is the only money he has received; that as General Montgomery had promised to recommend him to Congress for a commission in a regiment of Canadians, to be raised for the Continental service; and as General Wooster assured him he had written in his favour to Mr Hancock, he thought both his interest and his duty obliged him to proceed to Philadelphia, in order to make application in person to the gentlemen of the Congress for their favour and protection; but at Poughkeepsie he fell sick, where, having no money, he was obliged to sell part of his clothes to pay his doctor and the expenses of his living.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW YORK.

Feb. 14, two o'clock. P.M. 1776.

SIR,

I would humbly propose to the Congress not to lose a single instant in despatching a whale-boat to the Hook, to reconnoitre the fleet, whether they are friends or enemies; for should they be the latter and intend a visit to this place, we should make an awkward figure unless we are prepared for their reception

I am Sir, Your most obedient Servt,

CHARLES LEE.

RESOLUTIONS OF CONGRESS.

In Congress, February 15th 1776.

RESOLVED,—That a Committee of three, two of whom to be Members of Congress, be appointed to proceed to Canada, there to pursue such Instructions as shall be given them by Congress.

The Members chosen D^r Franklin, M^r S. Chase and M^r C. Carroll of Carrolltown.

That eight tons of powder be immediately sent to Canada for the use of the forces there.

February 17, 1776.

RESOLVED, That Major Genl. Lee be directed immediately to repair to Canada, and take upon him the command of the Army of the United Colonies in that province.

That Major General Schuyler be directed to repair, as soon as his health will permit, to New York and take the command of the Forces and conduct the military operations there; and that the President inform him by express of this arrangement and the reasons that led to it:

That it be recommended to the Convention or Committee of Safety of New York to supply General Lee with a quantity of suitable Cannon not exceeding twelve; and one or more mortars, if to be had, with balls, shells, and other necessities for the siege or assault of Quebec; and that they assist him in forwarding the same with all possible expedition:

That the Regiment of Canadians the raising of which is mentioned in Brigadier General Arnold's letter of the 12th of January last to have been set on foot by him, receive the same pay and be subject to the same regulations as the other forces employed in Canada, and be accounted part of the number designed to be raised for that service:

That the appointment of Capt. Ranslear to be deputy muster-master General of the forces in Canada, be confirmed:

That the appointment of John Halsted Esq., to be Commissary for the Army before Quebec, be confirmed:

That the Officers in the Continental Armies be enjoined to use their utmost diligence in preventing every kind of plunder; and that all who shall offend herein be punished according to the strictest discipline:

That the Resolves of Congress for encouraging sutlers to attend the Army in Canada, be published with the information that hosiery, shoes, coarse linens, soap, rum, sugar and wine are much wanted there :

That a few artificers, such as armourers, smiths, carpenters, harness-makers and wheel-wrights, with proper persons to superintend them, be forthwith sent to Canada.

Extract from the Minutes,

CHA. THOMSON,
Secretary.

By Order of the Congress,

JOHN HANCOCK,
President.

General Lee.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW YORK.

New-York, February 16th 1776.

SIR :

I have received intelligence that Mr Tryon has been guilty of most grossly abusing the indulgence shown to him ; that he has inveigled some of the Gunsmiths on board his ship, and that he is endeavouring to seduce as many as he can, with the view, undoubtedly, of distressing us in the article of arms. I could wish (as it has been thought proper to furnish this gentleman with provisions and other necessaries of life) that he should be obliged to give some security that he will not intrigue, cabal, or machinate mischief of any kind to the Continent or Province. This business of the Gunsmiths is the reason that I have pro tempore, interdicted all communication with the Governour's ship—a measure which I hope will be approved by the Congress.

I am Sir, Your most obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE.

PROCEEDINGS, ETC.

In Provincial Congress—New York
Feb^{ry} 17th 1776.

M^r Hobart and M^r. Beekman reported that they according to order had waited on Major Genl. Lee to know the source of his Information that Governor Tryon was procuring Gunsmiths from this City on Board of his Ship—That General Lee having given them the particulars of his Information, they had pursued the Enquiry to every person of whom any Information could reasonably be expected, and found that it arose from the circumstance of two journeymen Gunsmiths having some time ago left the City, the one in the last packet for England, and the other now said to be in some part of New York.

Extract from the Minutes,

JOHN M^cKESSON,
Secretary.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

New York, February 17, 1776.

SIR :

I think it my duty to inform you, that the Phoenix and Governour Tryon's ship are already out of the harbour, and that the Asia is under sail. They, most probably, have had intelligence of the danger which threatens their comrade, the Mercury, and General Clinton, from your fleet, and are sailed with an intention of attacking it. As it may be thought prudent to apprize your fleet of the circumstance, I must repeat, that I thought it my duty to send an express on the subject. The Asia ran aground opposite the Exchange; as the tides are low, we were in hopes she would not have been able to have got off this flood. In these hopes

we were preparing cartridges for some pieces of cannon, (which is not here from want of method, a very short operation) and flattered ourselves that we should have been able to have destroyed or much damaged her, but she is now, unfortunately, afloat.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect, your most obedient, humble servant

CHARLES LEE.

To the Honorable John Hancock,
President of the Continental Congress.

FROM ROBERT MORRIS.

Phil^a Febr'y. 17th, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I am four letters in your debt, dated 30th January, 6th, 9th and 14th Instant, and if you have not been able to account for my silence, I am now able to write that I have been half or two-thirds blind for three weeks past, owing to a cold and inflammation in my eyes, which thank God, I have now nearly got the better of, by abstinence, exercise, a few doses of salts and a good deal of patience, probably this cure would have been effected much sooner, but unluckily I was harassed the whole time by much public busyness, of which I do assure you, more than one mans share falls to my lot.

Nothing more need be said about your Memorial. If any circumstance turns up to render such a measure eligible we will take care of you—and in some future letter I will give you my sentiments about independency—Its subject I have thought on, and have partly made up my mind respecting it. When I wrote you respecting Canada, I considered the service in that country as most important of any now agitated. Quebec is possessed by our Enemy's, consequently the navigation of the River S^t Lawrence, will be theirs unless we dispossess them in time. If they have a free passage into

that country, they will no doubt pour in a sufficient force to compel the undetermined Canadians to take up arms against us; the Indians must join them, and the combined force of Brittain, Canada and the Savages of that country will be brought down upon the Frontiers of the Northern and Middle Colonies; a force in my opinion more formidable than that of all the British Troops they can import into America. I have long considered the possession of Canada as essential to the welfare of the United Colonies, and still continue to think so; and after the unfortunate check of our Troops at Quebec attended with so capital a loss as that of Montgomery (whose name is recorded in the annals of Fame, there to stand in conspicuous characters until time shall be no more) I repeatedly revolved in my mind who should be his successor. Your Experience as a Soldier, to say nothing of your Talents, always pointed you out, as the man. Therefore I put the question to you, expecting other Gentⁿ wou'd, *nay must* look to you for that purpose and I wished to know your mind, this day my opinion was verified, it was moved in Congress that you shou'd be appointed to the command in Canada, I took an opportunity to declare the terms of your answer to one on that subject, that you considered it your indispensable duty to go wherever you cou'd be most usefull & not valueing consequences to yourself, you wou'd acquiesce in the desires of Congress, altho' you were apprehensive the last shock your Constitution received by a complicated attack of Gout and Rheumatism, wou'd render you unfit to encounter a Northern Climate, especially as you attributed your present illness to the having been too much exposed to cold already, but as I did not pronounce you absolutely averse to this appointment, and all agreed your abilities were necessary in Canada, where the worst of the winter will be spent before you can get on the spot, they unanimously voted you for that Service, and I hope it will not be long before we are happy enough to hail you the Conqueror of Quebec. You will soon be in-

formed by letter from the President of your appointment, and the force you will have under your command, which I hope and think will be sufficient for the purpose. Whilst I am on this subject let me recommend to you a young Gentleman now in Canada, Mr John White Swift, son of John Smith late Collector of this Port; he left Quebec to avoid taking up arms against us, and Carleton has instituted a Suit against him for attempting to send us powder from thence—his Effects are all left behind in that City and I suppose will be seized—He writes me to procure him some Employment, but don't point out what. I will send him a few lines to deliver to you in Canada, which will remind you of him; and if anything offers in which you can consistently, I hope you will readily, serve him. Should any thing offer for him that depends on Congress to appoint, I will do the needful here, and will also mention him to Doctor Franklin and Mr. Chase who are appointed a Committee of Congress to go into Canada.

You are to have two Battalions from Pennsylv^a. I believe they will prove good soldiers, Col. De Haas, Lt. Col. Irwin, Major Morris, and Capt. Lu Mar of the 1st Battalion I believe are all very deserving men, and some of them have seen service before. I know but few of the other officers of that Battalion. Col. St Clair of the 2nd Battalion has seen much service; was in the King's army a Lieutenant, is a sensible, worthy man, much esteemed in Bedford County, where he is——— and has acquired considerable property; he is also much esteemed and respected here. Lieut. Col. W^m Allen you know undoubtedly he is young and inexperienced, and can only be characterized at present by the rank and distinction of his family, the goodness of his own heart and temper. I hope ambition will prompt him to acquire and perform all the duty's of his station, and to gain all the knowledge a Soldier ought to possess, so far as the General can consistently shew attention to a young Field Officer, so far I hope he will experience

your superintendency and profit by your lessons and example. Major Wood has not experience as a soldier, but he has strong natural understanding, great spirit and Bravery or I am much mistaken. I have a regard for and wish to serve him, and make no doubt he will recommend himself to you by his activity and zeal in the service. I have given you this account of these officers, both to serve them and you, as I judge it essential for a General to know as much as possible of the characters, circumstances and merits of the officers under his command; and I believe you will find in these two Battalions, the Captains and subalterns pretty generally men of some Education, capable of becoming good officers, willing to do their duty and to support good discipline; but it depends much on their Superiours what discipline is to be established amongst these troops, in my humble opinion the stricter the better; and if the Superiour keep the Inferior Officers under proper command, they from example will keep the Privates so. I hope you will not think me impertinent for intruding my opinions on a subject I am so little acquainted with, but next to the Honour and Interest of the whole United Colonies I am anxious to promote the honour & credit of this Province, and on this score you will excuse me.

You will find enclosed a letter from Mr White, and I shall forward those you sent for him and Mr Nourse, by a private hand going there in a day or two. I think you may totally disregard Mr. Hite and his threats—He certainly is a worthless fellow, or he has great injustice done to him; but the World seldom join in crying down a mans character unless he gives Cause for it.

You will doubtless have heard the various reports of Commissioners coming out to treat with us. I wish it be true, provided they come with proper Powers; but to come limited to terms inconsistent with Freedom will be doing nothing. France is certainly filling her West India Islands with troops, the ostensible reason

for doing so is that upon reconciliation between Great Britain and this Country the Great Force introduced into America during the disputes, may be employed to seize their Islands unless well prepared for defence; but I fancy their real design is to be able to take advantage whenever the event of this war, wherever opportunity offers; and I don't conceive this a proper time for this Country to make Treaty's with any Foreign Power, we don't want their assistance to defend our Country, it is only protection to our Trade that we can want from any Country in Europe, the benefit of that trade will always most readily be admitted as a full compensation for the Protection of it hereafter, altho' the Ministers of Great Britain were not satisfied with it; If we by resistance obtain proper terms reconciliation and connection with Great Britain, we want no other protection than hers. If by our own Force of Conduct, we establish an Independent Empire, notwithstanding the utmost exertions of Britain, there is not a Nation in Europe, but will be glad to treat and trade with us on our own terms: therefore I think it best to persevere in our own measures, and depend on our strength, which I believe is quite sufficient; and if so, we shall ever after hold respectable consequence in the World. But notwithstanding these Notions I am of opinion with you that we shou'd know the sentiments and dispositions of Foreign Nations, of and towards us; and you cannot doubt but measures have been taken to obtain such knowledge—a word to the wise.

Genl. Schuyler is to take your Post at New York. I think it a Command also of great importance, and its very likely the utmost exertions may be called for there in the course of this summer. Our associates were called upon to furnish a Battalion to join you—Col. Dickinson & greater numbers than were asked, turned out most cheerfully, but on Mr Clinton's departure the Congress stopped the march. I don't know how I have found time to scribble so much, for I am so much employed and hurried that you must not expect such long

letters from me often, and I have no time to copy this. I will do something for young Mr. Nourse, and am

Dear General,

Your Affectionate Friend,

ROBT MORRIS.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

New York, February 19th 1776.

DEAR GENERAL:

I am extremely happy that there is any opening for a more comfortable establishment for poor Palfrey than his present. He is a valuable and capable man, and the pittance of a simple Aid-de-Campship is wretched for a man who has a family to support. On this principle and in obedience to your commands, I shall send him to Head Quarters without delay. I must at the same time confess that the loss will be irreparable to me, particularly if I am detached to Canada, of which there is the greatest probability, as I have received letters from divers members of the Congress, expressing their wishes that I should be employed in that department. Mess^{rs} Griffin and Byrd are very good young men, but pretty much in the predicament of your Bayler. They can ride, understand, and deliver verbal orders; but you might as well set them to the task of translating an Arabick or Irish manuscript, as expect that they should, in half a day, copy a sheet of orders. However, I must bustle through the difficulties and not keep Palfrey out of the channel of a better provision. If I go to Canada, I suppose I shall be allowed Secretaries, one French and one English. I do not see how it is possible to manage matters with less. Apropos: my dear Genl., if this is to be my province, shall you take it ill if I apply for one, of my two brigadiers, either Greene or Sullivan? It is a pleasure to have some officer about us in whom we can place confidence.

The ships of war which were here have been frightened

away. The Asia lies between Nutter's and Bedloe's Island; the Dutchess of Gordon, with his excellency Governor Tryon, is under her stern; the Phoenix is stationed a league below the Narrows, the Mercury and General Clinton must inevitably fall into the hands of our fleet, unless they are fast asleep. We have taken strong hold of Hell-Gate, so that the passage betwixt Long Island and the Continent is absolutely blocked up to the enemy.

I wait for some more force, to prepare a post or retrenched encampment on Long Island, opposite to the City, for three thousand men. This is, I think a capital object; for should the enemy take possession of New York, when Long Island is in our hands, they will find it almost impossible to subsist. The Jerseys are too well manned, and Connecticut we know will not furnish them with anything. What to do with the city, I own, puzzles me; it is so encircled with deep navigable water, that whoever commands the sea must command the town. Tomorrow I shall begin to dismantle that part of the fort next the town, to prevent its being converted into a citadel. I shall barrier the principal streets, and at least if I cannot make it a continental garrison, it shall be a disputable field of battle.

Enclosed I send you a return of the good and indifferent pieces of cannon. The number of the bad (those I mean totally unfit for service) are, I believe, about sixty. As no commissary of stores has been appointed until this instant, it is impossible to give you a return of the other stores by this post, but you shall have it by the next. Lord Stirling is a great acquisition. He is a most zealous, active and accurate officer.

A captain of a ship from Cadiz, who is a very intelligent person, tells us that Lord Howe and Captain Barrington, or Admiral Barrington are appointed commissioners to propose terms to the Congress; this he had from the Consul Hardy.—What damned fools the ministers are!

How does your recruiting go on for the standing

army? Be so good as to tell Gates, to whom I shall write by the next post, that Mr. Nourse enclosed no letters for him.

If little Eustace is not provided for in your army, and I shall go to Canada, I think he had better be sent to me, and I will consign him to his Uncle.

I am got quit of my gout and fever, but remain extremely weak and tender. God preserve you, my dear General, from all disorders, at least until we have trampled Satan under our feet.

My love to Mrs. Washington and all the ladies.

Adieu! Yours most faithfully

CHARLES LEE.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW YORK.

New York, Feb. 19th 1776.

SIR—

As it is established in camp to allow all fatigue men a gill of rum each, I take the liberty to recommend to the Congress, to make the same allowance.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect

Your mo. obt. servt.

CHAS. LEE.

FROM THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Philadelphia, February 19, 1776.

SIR:

I have the honour to enclose you sundry resolutions of Congress, by which you will perceive it is the desire of Congress that you should repair to Canada and take upon you the command of the Army of the United Colonies in that Province.

I need not mention the importance of the trust reposed in you, and the happy effects it will have in securing

the liberty of America. If you should be so fortunate as to drive our enemies—the enemies of liberty and the rights of mankind—out of it, I heartily pray that the Disposer of events may grant you success equal to your merits and zeal.

As you will want battering cannon, which are not to be had in that Province, you are to apply to the Convention or Committee of Safety of New York, to whom, by this opportunity, I send the recommendation of Congress to supply you with twelve, such as you shall judge most suitable and some mortars if they have or can procure them, with balls, shells and other necessaries, and also to assist you in forwarding them.

Eight tons of powder are now on the way to Albany for the forces in Canada; and as a very considerable quantity of saltpetre is sent to the mills of Mr. Wisner and Mr. Livingston, should there be occasion for more, you will be supplied from thence.

You will readily perceive the necessity of conferring with General Schuyler, and with him consulting on the best method of having necessaries conveyed to you across the Lakes. The Congress have a full confidence that you will cooperate in securing the possession of the Lakes and mutually assisting each other, as occasion may require, and as far as in your power give mutual aid in supporting the cause of freedom and liberty.

I expect the Deputies will in a short time be ready to proceed to Canada.

I am with every sentiment of esteem, Sir, your most obedient, humble servant,

JOHN HANCOCK, President

To the Honourable Major General Lee.

P. S. Your favor respecting the departure of the ships from New York, and your conjectures as to their designs, is just come to hand, and shall be laid before Congress.

FROM JOHN ADAMS.

Philadelphia, Feb. 19, 1776.

MY DEAR SIR,

The Congress have seen such a Necessity of an able Commander in Canada, as to destine you to that most arduous service. I tremble for your health, yet I hope the Campaign will rather promote it than otherwise.

We want you at N. York—We want you at Cambridge—We want you in Virginia—But Canada seems of more Importance than any of those places, and therefore you are sent there. I wish you as many Laurells as Wolf and Montgomery reaped there, with an happier Fate. Health and long Life, after a glorious return.

But I am ashamed to go on in such a strain, when writing to you whose Time is so much better employed than in reading it, when I took up my pen only to introduce to your acquaintance a Countryman of yours, and a Citizen of the World, to whom a certain Heretical Pamphlet called Common Sense, is imputed. His name is Paine. He is travelling to N. York for his Curiosity, and wishes to see a Gentⁿ whose character he so highly respects.

A luckier, a happier Expedition than yours to N. York never was projected. The whole whig world is blessing you for it, and none of them more than

Your Friend & Servt

JOHN ADAMS

To Major General Lee,
New York.

FROM BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

Philad^a Febry. 19, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I rejoice that you are going to Canada. I hope the Gout will not have the courage to follow you into that severe Climate. I believe you will have the Number of Men you wish for: I am told there will be 2,000 more: but there are always Deficiencies.

The Bearer, Mr. Paine, has requested a Line of Introduction to you, which I give the more willingly, as I know his sentiments are not very different from yours. He is the reputed, and I think the real Author of Common Sense, a Pamphlet that has made great Impression here. I do not enlarge, both because he waits, and because I hope for the pleasure of conferring with you face to face in Canada. I will only add, that we are assured here on the part of France, that the Troops sent to the W. Indies, have no inimical views to us or our cause. It is thought they intend a war without a previous Declaration. God prosper all your undertakings, and return you with Health, Honour and happiness.

Yours most affectionately

B. FRANKLIN.

Martinico and Cape Francois by the last Advices, are now fortifying with immense Diligence and great Expense.

To The Hon^{ble} General Lee
at New York.

FROM BENJAMIN RUSH.

MY DEAR GENERAL:

Fortune seems in a good humour with you. It is not eno' that you have triumphed over external and in-

ternal Enemies at New York, but you are about to enjoy new triumphs in another part of the Continent. I tremble only at the price of Victory on the Plains of Abraham. I presage your surviving your conquests from one part of your character, and that is you have a wonderful talent of infusing your spirit into the minds of your troops. Should your blood mingle with the blood of Wolfe, Montcalm, and Montgomery, posterity will execrate the plains of Abraham to the end of time.

Your appointment to the Canada expedition gave all your friends here great pleasure. I think it is more than probable the principal force of our enemies will be sent to that quarter. Canada is dearer to the King than all the other Colonies put together, as it is the only part of the British Empire in which arbitrary power is established by law. Should that Province become the seat of the War, we shall have no reason to complain for our seacoasts and seaport towns are in a poor situation to receive our enemies. The Gulf and River St Laurence it is hoped will concur with the other elements in embarrassing them. Mr. Pitt conquered America in Germany. Who knows but Gen. Lee may conquer Britain in Canada?

I need not tell you how much pleasure it will give me to receive a few lines from you by all the Expresses you send to the Congress. I shall write to you most faithfully by the return of each of them.

Col. Thompson speaks in high terms of you in all companies.

The Bearer of this letter is Mr. Payne the celebrated Author of Common Sense.

Adieu, Yours &c
B RUSH

Philadelphia February 19, 1776.

Major General Lee, at New York.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW YORK.New York, 20th Feb. 1776.

SIR—

I am just informed that the Asia and Phoenix have seized several provision vessels from the Jerseys. I must submit it to the Congress whether the compact is not to be considered as broke, and whether it is not our duty to withhold all further supplies. For my own part the measure of suffering ourselves to be plundered and at the same time feeding our plunderers, appears a degree of lowness of spirit which reflects dishonour, and must encourage the enemy to take still greater liberties.

I am, Sir, your most obt. Servt.

CHARLES LEE.

FROM THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF NEW YORK.

In Provincial Congress,
New York, Feb. 20th 1776

SIR—

Your favour of this morning has been considered by Congress, and they are of opinion that it is totally impossible to prevent the Asia and Phoenix from supplying themselves with provisions. They have received information that the seizing of the vessels from the Jerseys is occasioned by the supplies from the agents in town being stopped, and are apprehensive, if it be continued, that the town will be reduced to the utmost distress. While the navigation of the Hudson's river is obstructed by the ice, our principal dependence for corn, provisions, fuel and hay, is from Connecticut and the Jerseys; an embargo prevents the supplies from the one, and if we provoke the Captains of the ships of war, by way of retaliation to prevent them from the

other, the inhabitants will not only be destitute, but our commissary will be incapacitated from procuring the necessary supplies for the army now in town. You will please to consider that the ships of war have it in their power to seize all the provisions that they may find afloat, by which means they will have an opportunity of supplying the enemy at Boston.

By order

Major-Genl. Lee.

TO ROBERT MORRIS.

New York Feby 20. [1776]

D^r MORRIS

You need make no apologies for your short silence I know the immensity of your busyness both of public and private nature and I think myself much obliged to you for stealing so much time to let me hear from you as frequently as you do—I only wish for the sake of the public that they may afford me sufficient forces, for a second check in that Country might be attended with fatal consequences indeed—as to what concerns myself my zeal in the cause of American Liberty supercedes all ideas of private concern. I shall obey the Congress therefore most cheerfully—it is unfortunate that Ticonderoga has been so stripped of the heavy artillery for Colonel Rittmore [Ritzema] now with you tells me that without heavy artillery there are no hopes of making an impression on Quebec—I wish the Congress would question that intelligent Officer very minutely on the State of Canada—He is capable of giving all the necessary lights. I am extremely concerned that the Congress have countermanded Dickenson and his Battalion—it was not Clinton and his few Raggamuffins we were afraid of. We had sufficient force to deal with him but as there is the greatest reason to think a great force will be early here in the Spring it was necessary to retrench a Camp in Long Island capacious enough

to contain at least three Thousand Men—it was necessary likewise to throw up many works in the city and its environs—the Committee from the Congress who were here had agreed on the necessity of this measure—I am therefore the more amazed at Colonel Dickenson's being countermanded—it defeats all our schemes and unless you send us him or some other with an equal force without delay, this important door must be left open for the enemy to enter when they please—We have here indeed some minute men but they are monstrously expensive and good for nothing—for God's sake then send 'em immediately or you will repent it—the numbers I have are so far from being capable of effecting such considerable works that they are scarcely sufficient to mark out the Ground there is a certain Doctor Fague in our army, a Frenchman, a man of great probity and understanding. He is settled in Connecticut. We place the greatest confidence in him He has from zeal acted as Surgeon to one of the Connecticut Regiments. He speaks English as well as French. I could wish If I go to Canada that the Congress would appoint him to the Hospital in that Country but as he has a very easy fortune he must be appointed at the head of it. He has the reputation of being very able in his profession. He knows Canada very well and may be of infinite use in many respects. I should consider this as a great favour if the Congress would indulge me. I am glad you have got over the disorder of your eyes but as mine begin to ake I must wish you good night Adieu

My Dr. Friend. God bless you

CHARLES LEE

P.S.

New York Febyry y^e 21st

D^R MORRIS

This is a new way of writing Postscripts but my eyes ak'd so furiously last night and the paper was so execrable that it was impossible to add another syllable

—the relation betwixt you and me is of such a nature, my Obligations to you are so great that a recommendation in the common form of any friend is an impropriety you should just give his name and describe his talents and it is both my duty and inclination to place him in the best manner I can—is this M^r Swift or Swiss (for you have scratched his name most horribly) an able Penman? for it so happens that I want a Secretary as General Washington has taken Palfrey from me. I understand that a Major General on a separate command has an handsome allowance for an secretary. I am really concerned and not a little surprised that you should express any pleasure much less expect any good from the arrival of Commissioners for my own part I think it the worst news I have heard for a long time—from such a King and such a ministry what can be offered? A bramble will be held out which the timid will please to call an Olive branch and grasp at eagerly altho' they are sure to tear their hands—Such is the villainy of the Court the accursed confirmed tyrannical disposition of the King but what is worse such is the abominable corruption and pusillanimity of the People that I look upon a reconciliation with Great Britain on secure and absolute terms to be at present a chimera as a scheme of incorporation with the Afgan Tartars or any of the interior nations of Asia. I wish all you Gentlemen who have been out of the way of such spectacles at Philadelphia had been eye witnesses only for one day of the wretchedness and sufferings of the poor People of Marblehead Cape Ann and the rest of the Coast, the scene would have inflamed your blood to a proper degree of heat. I cannot help differing with you likewise on the subject of entering into a treaty with the French, now if ever, I insist upon it, is the proper time for such a step, now when the affairs of America are in a most prosperous situation it may be done with a better grace and more security than when fortune is reversed—when mere obvious necessity drives us to it the terms can be neither so honorable

nor advantageous in fine it is an old established maxim in politicks to form treaties in the hour of real or apparent prosperity—but humanity dictates the necessity of not delaying a moment—it would prevent the effusion of all the blood which must otherwise inevitably be spilt in the ensuing Campaign—the report of such a Treaty would oblige the ministry to sheath the Sword—but you will say the treaty would divorce us forever from the Parent Country—but I consider from the date of the King's speech the address that echo's it back and still more from the last votes of Parliament this divorce has taken place to all intents and purposes I formerly was shocked with the idea but now consider all schemes of reconciliation as idle and most dangerous dreams. I am morally certain that before three months pass over your heads, you will curse your infatuation in not having [acted] with more decision—should Canada become a ministerial possession, should your Frontiers be laid waste with fire and sword and the wretched women and children be slaughtered, can you forgive yourselves when you reflect that these horrors must be attributed and attributed alone to a hankering not after a tender Parent, but a Beldame Step Mother whose every Act is cruelty, vengeance and insanity? forgive My D^r friend the heat with which I express myself but I think it would be distrust to conceal from you a single sentiment of my heart It is necessary to write a letter in form to the Congress but I wish you would petition from me for a Reg^t to be sent to this place immediately otherwise the ministerialists or rather Royalists must take possession of it. I must repeat that we have not men enow to mark out the ground much less to accomplish the works which were agreed upon as necessary by the Committee from the Continental Congress. Five thousand was the number fixed and we have not twenty five hundred minute men included. Inclosed is a proposition for raising a Company of Artificers—the terms are so reasonable and the establishment so necessary that I must intreat you will lay it

before the Congress—if they approve it—I wish they would signify their pleasure to L^d Stirling—this postscript is tolerably long. Adieu.

Yours most affectionately

C. LEE.

FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Cambridge February 22, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I fully expected by the two last posts to have received your favors, with an account of the measures you have been and are pursuing, for the defence of New York, and of such occurrences as you might have thought worthy of notice; as I did not, nor got several other letters which I expected, I cannot but suppose they have been intercepted at some of the offices, or by some accident prevented coming to my hands.

I need not mention my impatience to hear from you, and beg that you will write by every opportunity.

I am, dear sir,

&c. GEORGE WASHINGTON.

To General Lee.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

New York, February 22, 1776.

SIR :

Last night I had the honor of receiving yours, with the resolves and commands of the Congress, which I shall obey with the greatest zeal and alacrity, and all possible expedition. The confidence reposed in me is extremely flattering, and I shall labor to deserve their good opinion.

As I am yet very weak and tender, after my illness, I shall take the liberty to remain here a few days, at least till I am able to walk and ride with a tolerable

degree of ease, which, at present, I am incapable of doing; in fact, venturing upon a journey in the state I am in might risk a relapse, which might totally incapacitate me from being of any service in that part of the world or elsewhere.

The cannon ordered by the Congress to Canada shall be fitted out and despatched without loss of time; the Provincial Congress are now preparing the means. Mortars there are none, which is very unfortunate, as in the attack of towns they are absolutely necessary.

I was much disappointed, Sir, in not being joined by a battalion from Philadelphia, as I was taught to expect. I did not apply for them merely with a view of opposing Mr Clinton with the troops he should bring with him. I had sufficient, and more than sufficient force to cope with him, but it was agreed, in the conference held with the three gentlemen who were here, as a Committee from the Congress, that it would be necessary to retrench a camp in Long Island, capacious enough to contain at least three thousand men; and although it was thought impracticable to fortify the seaside of the town against shipping, it was allowed and determined to be expedient to throw up divers works in the city and its environs, in order to prevent the enemy's getting possession of it. To accomplish these works, Sir, not a small number of hands are requisite. Our present numbers are so far from being adequate to the business, that they are scarcely sufficient to mark out the works, and, at the same time, do the necessary garrison duty. As to the Minute Men, no account ought to be made of them. Had I been as much acquainted with them when they were summoned as I am at present, I should have exerted myself to prevent their coming. The expense of these gentry is most intolerable. They have, upon an average, about two men to one officer; but the expense of their subsistence is not all; the loss of powder to the publick is dreadful. They leave their homes without a grain; they expect, and must be supplied out of the publick

magazines; when they return they carry it with them. Upon the whole, Sir, I cannot help expressing my wishes, that Congress will find means of establishing one great Continental regular army, adequate to all the purposes of defence. Every consideration, that of economy as well as security, dictates the measure.

At present, we have here Lord Stirling's, Waterbury's and Ward's Battalions. Waterbury's and Ward's are only inlisted to the 12th of March. In eighteen days therefore the whole force will consist of Lord Stirling's Regiment, not quite five hundred men fit for duty. I own I tremble for this important place; I cannot help fearing that the enemy will have possession of it. I submit it to the wisdom of the Congress whether a force should not be immediately provided to prevent so fatal an event. If they depend on the four regiments ordered to be raised in this Province, they will, I am afraid, be cruelly disappointed: for, from all those I have conversed with on the subject, many months will be required for their completion, if they are ever completed. I hope you will excuse my being so diffuse with respect to New York, I thought it my duty to be particular on so important a subject.

I have a favor to ask of the Congress. Doctor Fague, who is settled at Fairfield, in Connecticut, is a French gentleman of ability, probity, and skill in his profession. He knows Canada very well; is known & esteemed there. He speaks French and English with great ease and fluency. He is extremely desirous of accompanying me. If, sir, there is a possibility of placing him in the Hospital, but in a station and rank proportioned to his pretensions, I apprehend he might not only be of great use to me, but to the publick. If the Hospital is already disposed of, I should think it worth while to appoint him to some other office.

Before I conclude, Sir, I ought to apprize you that a very considerable number of the guns we took from the Battery are absolutely unfit for service. The en-

closed is a return of those that are good, and those that may be used on occasion.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect, your most obedient servant,

CHARLES LEE.

To the Honorable John Hancock, Esq.

President of the Continental Congress.

GEN. LEE TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL
CONGRESS OF NEW YORK.

New York, February 22, 1776.

SIR,

As the carpenters must be constantly employed in various works for the public service, I take the liberty to desire the Congress will furnish, or order to be furnished, about three thousand feet of boards to construct a shed, which may enable them to work in all kinds of weather. A considerable quantity of oak timber is likewise requisite for platforms and other works—five hundred loads will not be an over quantity. The regiments here from Connecticut can turn out many carpenters, who consent to work upon much more reasonable terms than the artificers of the city. It would, I imagine, be worth while to provide, if possible, a sufficient number of tools. When the present work is done, these tools cannot be considered as an idle purchase; they will always be useful.

I am Sir, Your most obedient Servant,

CHARLES LEE.

FROM THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF NEW YORK.

In Provincial Congress, New York.
February 24. 1776.

SIR,

We are informed by a letter from Colonel Curtenius, our commissary, that Mr Hughes has demanded of him (by your command, as he says) certain Hospital stores in his custody by our order, for the use of a General Hospital.

We beg leave to inform you, Sir, that those stores were taken into the care and direction of the Congress of this colony the last summer, by order of the honorable the Continental Congress. Since that time they have been under continual guard by our directions, and that of one company at least every night, and the keys thereof in the custody of our commissary.

Necessity obliged us, though with reluctance, lately to apply some part of those stores to cover straw beds for the troops. With pleasure we lately ordered out a small part of them for the use of a few indisposed troops.

Should those stores be applied to any other use than that to which they have been devoted, give us leave to say, that it is scarcely in the power of the Continent to supply an Hospital.

To you, Sir, we need not mention the consequences. Add to this, Sir, we look upon ourselves responsible for them to the Continental Congress, and that by their own order in the premises; and under this apprehension we have hitherto acted.

We are respectfully, Sir,

Your very humble Servants.

By order

To Major General Lee.

TO BENJAMIN RUSH.

N. York Feb^{ry} y^e 25th 1776.

MY D^r RUSH

I congratulate you on the last news from England—Your Common Sense operated, I make no doubt most powerfully on the minds of the People—but it's effects are trifling comparatively with the outrageous folly insanity and villainy of the King and Ministry—their last acts have given the coup de grace to dependence—the man that now talks of reconciliation and reunion ought to be pelted at with stones by the children when he walks the streets as a common Town Fool—I think upon the principle not only of policy but humanity some treaty shou'd be immediately enter'd into with France—it would be politick, because a nation or community can never form alliances with another Power with so much grace honour and security as when its affairs are in a prosperous condition but shou'd we wait a reverse of Fortune, the proposal of an alliance would have the air of solicitation for protection—it wou'd be humane because the very report of such an alliance wou'd probably prevent the effusion of blood which must otherwise be shed in the course of the ensuing campaign—there are several other Considerations which dictate the necessity of the measure—it is true, we do not want men, but the dearth of Arms, blankets and other necessities will throw us into inconceivable distress and unless some formal treaties are entered into with those who can supply us this distress will encrease ev'ery day—your Mr. Payne din'd with me yesterday, I am much oblig'd to you for the introduction—He has genius in his eyes—his conversation has much life—I hope he will continue cramming down the throats of squeamish mortals his wholesome truths—Our friend Dickinson by his letters seems to be handsomely electrifi'd—how the devil cou'd the Congress think of employing Doctor Smith as a Panegyrist on Montgomery and his brother Martyrs—

if the Ancient custom of funeral games subsisted, as We read in Homer and Virgil, I shou'd as soon have thought of appointing old Mr. Allen to have been one of the Champions in the foot race about the Hero's tomb—such a task required not only the sensibility, sentiment and eloquence of a Rousseau but the voice action and utterance of Du Ches—Doctor Smith may have learning and ingenuity for aught I know; but I do not take him to be overflowing with sentiment—voice and utterance He certainly has none—but something too much of this. We are endeavouring here—not to fortify the Town against Ships, (for that is impossible) but by divers little works to prepare it as a disputable field of Battle, shou'd the Enemy chuse to attempt possessing themselves of the city—I have thrown down the interior part of the Fort to prevent its being converted into a Citadel by Mr. Tryon who is waiting for the arrival of an Army I suppose the Commissioners are to come at the same time I hope the Congress will order 'em to be sent to jail—I am in hopes to be well enough to set out on Wednesday—We are busy at present in fitting out some heavy cannon without which we cannot flatter ourselves with the reduction of Quebec—God grant the weather may allow us to transport 'em thither—You shall hear from me by every opportunity—on your part be constant and long in your letters altho' you cannot expect volumes from me—

I am, Dr Rush, yours most sincerely—

CHARLES LEE.

FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Cambridge, February 26, 1776.

GENERAL LEE:

I received your esteemed favor of the 14th instant, which gave me great pleasure, being impatient to hear from you. I rejoice to find that you are getting better, and could not avoid laughing at Captain Parker's rea-

sons for not putting his repeated threats into execution.

I take notice of your intended dispositions for defence, which I request you will lose no time in putting into execution, as, from many corroborating accounts I have received, the enemy seem to prepare for their departure from Boston; they have removed the two mortars from Bunker's Hill, and carried them with a great part of their heavy brass cannon on board their ships; they have taken all the topsail vessels in the harbour into service; they are ready watered and their sails bent. All this show may be but a feint, but if real, and they should come your way, I wish you may be prepared to receive them. If I find that they are in earnest and do go off, I will immediately send you a reinforcement from this camp, and, if necessary, march the main body to your assistance, as circumstances may require. I shall keep a good watch on their motions, and give you the speediest information possible.

Lechmere's Point is now very strong, and I am now sending some heavy cannon thither; the platform for a mortar is preparing to be placed in the works there; another at Lamb's Dam, and we are making the necessary disposition to possess ourselves of Dorchester Hill which must bring them out if anything will. If they do not interrupt us in that work, I shall be confirmed in my opinion that they mean to leave the town. A little time must now determine whether they are resolved to maintain their present ground, or look out for another post. I will now return to your letter.

The accounts you give of our New York brethren are very satisfactory. I should be glad to know how many men you are likely to have, that you can depend upon remaining with you. I very much fear that the sailing of Clinton will keep back those you expected from Pennsylvania. Let me hear from you upon this and everything else that concerns you as soon and as often as you possibly can. I shall pay due attention to your recommendations of Captain Smyth and Captain

Badlam. With respect to the Canada expedition, I beg leave to assure you that it was not my intention to propose your going there. I only meant what I thought would happen, that the Congress would make you that proposal. I am now of opinion that you will have work enough upon your hands where you are, and I make no doubt but your presence will be as necessary there as it would be in Canada. I am glad that Colonel Ritzema is gone to Congress, and I hope they will expedite an Army thither, not only to preserve what we have already got, but also to possess ourselves of Quebeck before it can be reinforced from Europe, or elsewhere; it is an object of such vast importance that it will be madness not to strain every sinew for effecting that purpose.—I am in some pain for our little fleet, as I am informed that the Asia and Phoenix are sailed in quest of them. You doubtless had good reasons for the appointment you mention to have made; as it is temporary, it can have no bad effect.

I am, with great regard, &c

GEORGE WASHINGTON

To General Lee.

FROM GENERAL GATES.

Head Q^{rs} 26th Feb^{ry} 1776.

DEAR GENERAL,

Last night I had the pleasure to receive yours of the 15th I am rejoic'd you have weathered this Fit of the Gout. I do'nt think you will have another this winter, if you was carefull in letting that pass off, it may be of much service to your constitution, when I mention'd Canada, I did not mean you should winter there; if you can secure the entrance into it, by getting Quebeck, and possessing it this Summer, you may leave the care of that Province to your Brigadiers for the winter to come. The General was pleased you wrote to him, as he began to think you tardy. He writes to you by

this Express. I like your intention of making the Fort an open Redoubt. I think some heavy Guns upon the South and West Sides, with good sod merlons, will make the Men of War keep aloof, it is a pretty high situation, and battering it at a distance over the lower Batteries would but have little effect. We have lately had occasions to suppose Mr Howe had thoughts of leaving Boston. The General will tell you his reasons for thinking that was intended. Clinton I am satisfied went to see how affairs were circumstanced at N. York to consult with Tryon, and to prepare the way for Howe's reception, unless the enemy repossess Canada, they cannot reinstate the King's affairs on this Continent; there is no way to recover Canada, but by the Rivers of St Laurence and Hudson. The St Laurence is not practicable until late in May. Therefore the first attempt would most assuredly be made at N. York, for these reasons I think your Hands should be strengthened as much, & as expeditiously as possible. I am afraid you are deficient in Gun Carriages, employ all the Hands you can procure to make them. I am glad you express yourself so well pleased with the Capt^s Smith & Badlam, the former has good talents, and will I hope prove as faithful as he is capable, 'ere long it will be known if I am right in my conjecture that the great body of the enemy mean to endeavour to take post at or near New-York. Should that happen to be attempted be assured we shall march with the utmost expedition to support you. I expect soon to see Palfrey in consequence of what I wrote him when I hope to hear you are in perfect health. Little Eustace is well, but nothing is done for him yet. You know the more than Scotch partiality of these folks. I have had much to do to support the lad you put into Col. Whitcomb's Regiment, they have no complaint in nature against him, but that he is too good an officer. What in the name of reason can Hite have trump up, to commence a suit in Chancery upon? Mrs Gates and I have puzzled our brains to find it out. The enclosed I desire you will

order to be immediately delivered to the Postmaster. Mrs Gates joins me in every good wish for your Health and Success.

I am ever affectionately
Yours HORATIO GATES.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW YORK.

New York, Feby. 27th 1776.

SIR—

As we have here no Continental paymaster, I am under the necessity of addressing myself to the Provincial Congress, to assist me in this article. I have a considerable party to be subsisted, and are now to be furnished with necessaries. Two thousand dollars are at least requisite. You will much oblige me therefore, Sir, in endeavoring to procure this sum. If you can make it 2500, it would be more convenient to

Sir, Your most obedt.

CHARLES LEE.

To Colo. Woodhull.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

New York, February 27. 1776.

SIR;

Since I did myself the honor of writing to you last, Messrs. Price, Walker, and Bonfield, are arrived from Canada, a circumstance which I consider as very fortunate, as they are able to give the best intelligence, and communicate the necessary lights on the measures to be adopted with respect to that country. In consequence of their representations, and as the season of the year, and precariousness of the weather, will admit of no delay, I shall, without waiting for orders from the

Congress, take the liberty to contract immediately for four thousand barrels of pork, and a considerable quantity of rum. I have likewise written to General Wooster, ordering him to purchase and grind into flour, twenty thousand bushels of wheat. I have, also, engaged a company of carpenters, on terms, as it appears to me, very reasonable. The captain is to have one dollar per diem, the men half a dollar; but they are not only to furnish their own tools, but each man is to provide himself with a gun and bayonet, and act occasionally as soldiers. Lord Stirling has, at my request, written to engage another company, on the same terms, and to consist of the same number of men, which is twenty five. As these terms are so moderate, and the time so pressing, I hope that the Congress will approve of the step. These are times when it is impossible, without great danger to the publick cause, to wait for formal instructions; but as I shall never take this liberty, unless urged by necessity, and a view to the publick service, I flatter myself I shall never incur the censure of the Congress.

There is, certainly, nothing more important, in the present circumstances of America, than giving a proper encouragement to the military spirit, inciting a military ardour, and recompensing those who have acquitted themselves with zeal and valour. On this principle, Sir, I take the liberty of recommending to the favour of the Congress Major Ogden, who was a volunteer with Colonel Arnold in his hazardous expedition, who was with him, and received a wound in the attack. This gentleman, by his absence (though he was absent in the service of his country,) has been thrown out of the way of promotion in his own Province; but as there are several vacant Lieutenant Colonelcies and Majorities in the New York battalions, I beg leave to recommend him for one of them. I have no particular connection or intimacy with the gentleman, but, merely from a motive of justice, and a conviction that it will be proper to reward men of his stamp, I venture on the recom-

mendation. By some unfortunate accident, or mistake, a considerable list of meritorious officers, who have served the campaign in Canada, are struck out of employment. It must be submitted to the justice and wisdom of the Congress, whether it will not be right to remedy a grievance before it is too late, which, neglected, may be attended with very bad consequences.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect, your most obedient, humble Servant,

CHARLES LEE.

To the Honorable John Hancock, Esq.
President of the Continental Congress.

P. S.—I find myself considerably better since my last, and hope to be able to set out in two or three days, though I must confess I leave this place in its present state with no small anxiety of mind. As there are no measures taken for its security, I tremble lest the enemy should take possession of it.

You have not favored me with an answer on the subject of Doctor Fague. The gentlemen arrived from Canada are of opinion that he might be of great service there. I should think that if some Jesuit, or religieuse of any other order, (but he must be a man of liberal sentiments, enlarged mind, and a manifested friend to civil liberty,) could be found out, and sent to Canada, he would be worth battalions to us. This thought struck me sometime ago, and I am pleased to find, from the conversation of Mr Price and his fellow travellers that the thought was very far from a wild one. Mr Carroll has a relative, who exactly answers the description.

FROM THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Philadelphia, February 28, 1776.

SIR :

Your letter of the 22nd instant has been duly received, and referred to a Committee of Congress, who have not yet reported thereupon.

As soon as the Congress have come to a determination, I shall do myself the pleasure to communicate the same to you. In the meanwhile I am directed to desire you not to set out for Canada, until you receive further orders from Congress.

I have the honour to be, Sir, your obedient, humble Servant

JOHN HANCOCK, President.

To Major General Lee

To JOSEPH REED.

N. York, Feb'ry ye 28th, 1776

MY DR. REED,—

You have given me licence to be as silent as I please, but it is a license I shall not avail myself of, for whenever I can steal a moment, You may depend upon hearing from me—Indeed there is a probability that my busyness will be so incessant and complicated that I shall not be able to converse with you as often as I cou'd wish, but I shall nevertheless confide that you will continue in your charitable design of writing every opportunity—nothing can, be assured, give me greater pleasure—Let your letters be folios.

What do the Congress intend to do with N. York when I leave it. The two Connecticut regiments, which

constitute our principal force, are only engaged 'till the twelfth of March. The Men of War will then return to their old station at the wharfs—The Provincial Congress and the inhabitants will revert to their former principles and timidity, and the first Troops who arrive from England will take quiet possession of the Place. I tremble for the event, as I see no steps taken to prevent it—The Tories on Long Island are set at liberty, on giving bonds for their good behaviour, which bonds will undoubtedly be prodigiously obligatory, when a few Regiments and Ships of War appear to assist and encourage 'em to act up to the loyal principles they have professed. This measure must and ought to be considered an act of absolute idiotism, as reconciliation and reunion with Great Britain is now as much a chimaera as incorporation with the People of Tibet. Why are not the ports at once declared free and open to all nations? We should then be regularly supplied with all the necessaries of War. Without this regular supply, I do not see how we can carry on the War. The want of arms, clothing, tents, &c., will throw us into inconceivable distress. This instant a treaty of alliance ought to be entered into with France. We can now, when our affairs have the appearance of being prosperous, enter into treaties with safety, grace, and dignity, but should we wait a reverse of fortune, we must solicit protection—we must whine in the tone of our abject British Ancestors—The Groans of the Americans—in short not only policy but humanity dictate the necessity of the measure; for the very report of such an alliance would so terrify the Tyrant and his Fiend like Ministers, that they would sheath the sword, and consequently, the effusion of blood which must otherwise be shed in the course of the ensuing Campaign would be prevented. But I shall run on all night. You stand in no need of conviction, so I shall cease preaching.

I have pulled down the interior part of the Fort, lest it shou'd be converted into a Citadel by Mr Tryon

and his Myrmidons. The Tories are damn'd mad. The Whigs are pleased of course. Adieu,

My Dr Reed, let me hear from you frequently.

I am eternally yours

CHARLES LEE.

My respects to the Wife of your Bosom.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

New York, February 29th, 1776.

DEAR GENERAL:

I am now so far recovered, though far from well, that I shall set out in a few days.

The stripping Ticonderoga so entirely of its heavy cannon is a most unfortunate circumstance, as the transportation of them from this place is a business of monstrous difficulties, expense and labor.

The Congress have as yet, not taken the least step for the security of this place. The instant I leave it, I conclude the Provincial Congress and inhabitants will relapse into their former hysterics; the men of war and Mr Tryon, will return to their old stations at the wharves, and the first regiments who arrive from England, will take quiet possession of the town and Long Island. I have written letters till I am tired on the subject, to the Congress, but have received no answer. The committee of three, who were here to confer with me agreed that it was necessary that 5,000 men should be in the place. They left us, and no notice has been taken of the affair since. Great and extensive works are resolved upon, and we have scarcely sufficient numbers to mark out the ground, much less to throw up the works. In short I know not what to make of this apathy on so important a subject.

Mess^{rs}. Price, Walker, and since them, the volunteer Melchoir, are arrived from Canada. It is very lucky,

for they can communicate all the necessary lights to the Congress, with respect to the measures which must be taken in that country. By their accounts nothing is so much wanted as artillery men. Capt. Lamb's company were all taken prisoners. I wish indeed it is necessary you should spare us a company from Boston; we cannot possibly do without them, we have none here. I entreat dear General, you would detach Captain Badlam's company. The Captain and I are now well acquainted, and agree wonderfully.

The Pennsylvania and Jersey troops who marched for Canada, are good and strong in numbers. The spirit of enlisting prevails through the whole country. I am told but cannot believe it, that the New England Delegates oppose the enlisting for a year. They say by means of a shorter engagement the whole country would be soldiers. A curious whim, this! Who the devil can fill their heads with such nonsense? I should think a letter from you to either of the Adams's would have a good effect.

I have this moment received yours of the 22nd. It is a sort of reprimand for not having more exactly informed you of the occurrences here. I do assure you, General, that I have wrote fully and frequently. It is true, I believe two posts have carried no letters from me, but I would not trouble you when I had nothing material to communicate. I shall not intrench myself behind the parade of great business, for my first business is to be attentive to my General; nor shall I make a plea for the loss of Palfrey, since whose departure I have been obliged to write with my own hand every—the most trifling note. But, in fact, though I confess I am naturally remiss, I have not neglected my duty in this point. I have suffered no safe opportunity to escape me. But enough of this.

I shall now give you a detail of what we have been doing, and in what circumstances we are. Our force including the minute men amounts to about 1,700 men. Ward's regiment, which is the stay, I have stationed in

Long Island. They are employed in making fascines, and preparing other materials for constructing three redoubts, one of which will, in great measure (in correspondence with a battery which I have sunk opposite to it in the city) secure the entrance of the East River. Waterbury's and Stirling's Regiments are quartered in the City; the former in the Upper barracks, the latter in the Lower. Two hundred minute men are likewise lodged in the town. Drake's regiment of minute men, and one company more (in all about two hundred) are stationed at Horn's Hook which commands the pass at Hell Gate. They are employed in throwing up a redoubt, to contain three hundred men. As to the town, having few hands, and the necessary duty being hard, I have been able to effect little. I have indeed thrown down the side of the fort next the town, to prevent its being covered into a citadel for the use of the enemy. It was absolutely impossible to be moulded into anything which could annoy their ships. I have likewise thrown a traverse or barrier, across the Broadway two hundred yards in the rear of the fort, with four pieces of cannon to prevent the enemy lodging themselves in the remains of the fort and repairing it. It is likewise my intention to barricade all the streets leading into the Broadway both on the right and left, to secure us against being taken in reverse. Batteries are to be erected on the eminence behind Trinity Church, to keep their ships at so great a distance as not to injure the town. As we are surrounded by navigable waters I consider enclosed works as rather dangerous; it was therefore my intention to throw up a great number of large flèches or redans, at certain distances, one behind another, so as to render it a disputable field of battle against any force. King's Bridge being a most important pass (without the command of which we could have no communication with Connecticut) I had resolved to make as strong as possible. Such were my schemes; but as the Congress have not furnished the force which I was taught to expect from Philadelphia, we have not

had it in our power to effect more than I have related, Governor Tryon and the Asia still continue betwixt Nutten's and Bedloe's Islands. It has pleased his Excellency, in violation with the compact he had made, to seize several vessels from Jersey laden with flour. It has, in return, pleased *my* Excellency to stop all provision from the city and cut off all intercourse with him—a measure, which has thrown the Mayor, Council, and Tories, into agonies. The propensity or rather rage for paying Court to this great man, is inconceivable. They cannot be weaned from him. We must put wormwood on his paps, or they will cry to suck, as they are in their second childhood.

Captain Smith has just returned from Fort Constitution. He gives a most terrible account of it. The expense of its construction has been enormous, its defects both in point of situation, laying out, finishing, &c are numerous. He has made the plan of another, which will command, as far as I can judge from it on paper, the river effectually.

I have now related, as minutely as necessary, our situation. As I shall set out very soon, it will probably be my last from this place. I must entreat, once more, dear General, that you will spare us a company of Artillery. Badlam seems rather averse on proposing it.

Adieu, dear Sir,

Yours with the greatest respect and affection.

CHARLES LEE.

FROM PHILIP SCHUYLER.

Albany, Feb^{ry} 29th 1776.

DEAR GENERAL,

Congress having ordered that I should repair to New York, to take the command there, as soon as my Health would permit, I have taken the liberty to represent to

them, that if that obstacle was immediately removed, I should not be able to leave this until the Batteaus now building at Fort George were finished, and everything got into such a train, as that your Army in Canada may not suffer for want of provisions, which it certainly will if I quit this, and you immediately go into Canada, where your presence is much, very much indeed wanted.

At a moderate calculation the provisions which we took, what was carried in, and what has since been brought there, was sufficient to the month of June, and yet they are now so nearly expended, that I have been obliged to send four hundred barrels of pork in sleds at the enormous expense of three pounds per barrel.

I have sent to Canada one eighteen and a Number of twelve pounders, with what suitable shot were left at the upper posts.

I need not observe to you, that you will stand in need of a number of Carpenters and shipwrights. I only mention it to advise you that I have fifty or more that can go off at a moment's warning. The Canadians are very indifferent workmen, and besides will not take our paper money, so that everything considered I conclude it will be best to take them from hence.

Besides the pork above mentioned, I have ordered 150 head of the largest and best stall fed cattle to be purchased, which I hope to get into Canada, whilst the Lakes are still passable on the Ice. I have so arranged matters that they will carry their own Fodder, and I hope near two hundred barrels of pork besides.

I do not know if the Cannon ordered from New York have travelling Carriages. I have wrote on the subject to the Committee to whom the Conveyance of them is intrusted; if they have not, I think I could complete them here in ten days, as I have employed a person to look out for the proper timber, and to speak to all the wheelrights in this place and its vicinity to be ready when called upon.

The Regiments to be raised for the Canada service

in the Massachusetts-Bay and Connecticut are not yet marched from thence; four Companies of the Pennsylvanians are gone on, the fifth, the only one left here, will march to-morrow; three Jersey Companies are also marched, and about one thousand from this Colony and the Massachusetts Bay, which I ordered to be raised immediately after our repulse at Quebec—As the Jersey and Pennsylvania Companies are very incomplete, I have ordered all the men which were raised by my immediate order to be engaged for the Campaign, and to remain in Canada. I imagin'd that necessity would justify this step, and I have advised Congress thereof, and pointed out the Reasons which induc'd me to it.

Three Companies of Col. Van Schaicks Regiment are nearly complete, one of them is at Fort George and the other at Ticonderoga, from whence they will move as soon as I can get a few men out of those others to be raised in this Colony to take charge of those posts; all the Troops that have hitherto come up, have been only half armed, and I am greatly distressed to furnish them, none had Mockinsons, and great numbers wanted shoes, mittins, caps, stockings, etc.

I hope the New York Convention will forward the Naval Stores I wrote for without delay; as none are to be had in Canada, and you will stand in great need of them.

General Wooster has pressed me in the most earnest manner for a supply of hard cash; with difficulty, and by giving my own security I have been able to collect about £2100, which is gone on to him. It will be well to bring up with you whatever you can procure at New York, as you will be greatly distressed in Canada without it.

Eight tons of powder are ordered up and I do not believe with what is in Canada the whole will exceed twelve—I had wrote to Congress for fifteen—You are a much better judge than I can pretend to be whether you will have a sufficiency.

Adieu, my dear General, and believe me with the
most respectful sentiments of Esteem

Your most obt & most hble Servant

PH: SCHUYLER.

The Honorable Major General Lee.

DRAFT—TO CAPTAIN PARKER.

SIR,

The removal of the Cannon and stores is in consequence of my orders solely—it is in no respect an act of the Inhabitants of the Town, nor of the Committee of Safety—I must consider therefore any Canonade upon the Town as a wanton piece of cruelty which cannot be of the least service to the cause of Tyranny in which you are engaged—retaliation is not only justifiable in the eyes of God and Man, but in our circumstances absolutely necessary—I have therefore a certain number of the most notorious instruments of ministerial villany, and who have largely by their traitorous proceedings contributed to bring down the present calamities on America, to be seized. And I solemnly declare to you, Sir, that the first house set on fire by your guns shall be the funeral pile of these Worthies.

I am, Sir, your most Obed^t Servant

CHARLES LEE.

TO MR. ROORBACK.

Head-Quarters, March the 1st

SIR—You will much oblige me, Sir, in furnishing the regiment of Ward with ten beds, which are absolutely necessary for the sick. To say the truth, it is scandalous, that so many applications should be made in vain for such a trifle as ten beds. I must, therefore,

once more desire that they may be furnished without delay.

I am Sir, yours

CHARLES LEE.
Major-General.

To Mr Roorback,
Barrack-master.

FROM GAR. ROORBACK.

New York, 1st March, 1776.

SIR—As my appointment to the office of barrack-master extends only to the city of New York, I have it not in my power to comply with your Excellency's request in regard to the supply of troops in another county, unless a special order be obtained for that purpose from the Congress.

I am, respectfully,

Your Excellency's most humble Servt.

GAR. ROORBACK, B. M.

To His Excellency Major-Genl Lee.

FROM THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Philadelphia, March 1, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

After a warm contest, occasioned by the high Estimation the Members of the Congress have of your worth and abilities, every one wishing to have you where he had most at stake, the Congress have at length determined to supercede the orders given you to proceed to Canada, and have this day come to a Resolution, that you shall take the command of the Continental forces in the Southern Department, which com-

prehends Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia.

The Congress have also appointed six new Brigadier Generals, viz, John Armstrong, William Thompson, Andrew Lewis, James Moore, Lord Stirling, and Robt. Howe, Esq. four of whom you are to command in the Southern Department, and two in the middle. By this conveyance I have forwarded the Commission for his Lordship. As soon as your health and the necessary orders you may think proper to give for putting New York in a State of Defence will permit, I have it in charge to direct that you repair to the department put under your immediate Command.

In Expectation of seeing you soon in this Place on your way, I need not add, but that I am with every Sentiment of Regard and Esteem,

Sir,

Your most obt. Servant

JOHN HANCOCK, Prest.

The Honble Major Gen^l Lee,
at New York.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

New York, March 3rd 1776.

MY DEAR GENERAL:

My destination is altered. Instead of going to Canada, I am appointed to command to the southward. There has been a great promotion of Brig^r Generals: Armstrong, Thompson, Lewis, Moore, Stirling, and Howe, are the six. Four are to serve under my orders viz: Armstrong, Lewis, Moore, and Howe. As I am the only General Officer on the Continent who can speak and think in French, I confess it would have been more prudent to have sent me to Canada, but I shall obey with alacrity, and hope with success. Griffin has resigned as he flatters himself he can do better in the Commercial line. I have in his room, appointed

one of the sons of Lewis Morris, to whom I was under a sort of engagement. Lord Stirling will take the command until the arrival of Schuyler. His Lordship is active and discreet.

In my last I gave you my plan of defence for this city and environs; but from want of men, shall be obliged to leave it in a poor condition. A regiment of associators are, I am told, ordered from Philadelphia. I likewise sent for a battalion from the Jerseys; but, on the other hand, Ward's and Waterbury's Regiments will, I suppose, according to their laudable custom, leave the place the moment their time is expired, which is the 12th of this month.

I heartily pray that you may give Mr Howe a handsome salute on his leaving Boston. I am not yet informed who is to take the command in Canada. No time, I am sure, is to be lost. As I am ordered away immediately, I must consign the affairs of New York to Lord Stirling. I think he will acquit himself well.

I have nothing material to trouble you with at present, further than to assure you that I am and ever shall be, dear General,

Yours most sincerely,

CHARLES LEE.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF
NEW YORK.

New York, March 4th, 1776.

SIR:

The letters I received last night from the Commander-in-chief and General Greene, were unfortunately, thrown into the fire; but according to my best recollection the reasons given by the General for surmising, or rather concluding, that it was the intention of the enemy to evacuate Boston, were these: That they had withdrawn their mortars and heavy cannon from Bunkers Hill and Charlestown, that their

transports were hauled into the wharves; that some people, who had left the town lately, declared that the officers' baggage was sent on board; in short, it is from every circumstance concluded by those who are before the place, and those who have lately left the place, that they are soon to abandon Boston, and that consequently, they will attempt to establish themselves here. May I, Sir, take the liberty to express my uneasiness on a subject which is more properly a matter of consideration for the Congress. The liberation of the notorious enemies of liberty and their country, on giving bonds for their good behaviour, appears to me in our present situation, extremely ill-imagined. It is so far from a security, that it is rather adding virus to their malignancy. The first body of troops that arrive will cancel these bonds. Some vigorous, decisive mode must be now adopted, of discovering on whom you may depend, on whom not. The crisis will admit of no procrastination. I cannot, therefore, help wishing for the common safety and the honor of this province in particular, that some test may be immediately offered that we may be enabled to distinguish our friends from our foes. The latter must not and cannot, be suffered to remain within your walls, to co-operate with those without in working your destruction.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect

Your most obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To Colonel Woodhull,

President of the Provincial Congress.

TO ISAAC SEARS.

N. York, March y^e 5th 1776.

SIR,

As I have received intelligence from the Commander in Chief that there is the greatest reason to expect

a considerable Army of the Enemy immediately at this place—it appears to me that I should be in the highest degree culpable to God, my Conscience, and the Continental Congress in whose Service I am engaged, shou'd I suffer at so dangerous a crisis a banditti of profess'd Foes of Liberty and their Country to remain at liberty to co-operate with and strengthen the ministerial Troops, openly in arms, or covertly, and consequently more dangerously furnish 'em with intelligence. I must desire that you will offer the enclosed tests* to every individual of whom you are to have a list—their refusal must be construed in no more or less than an avowal of their hostile intention, you are therefore immediately to seize their Persons and send 'em up without loss of time to Connecticut where they can be no longer dangerous.

I am, Sir, Yours,
CHARLES LEE, Major General.

Daniel Hulit is to be seized without any conditions being offer'd.

To Lieut. Colonel Sears,
acting Assistant Adjutant General.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

New York, March y^e 5th 1776.

SIR,

I receiv'd your commands on Sunday evening and shou'd have answered it immediately but waited for the result of an application I had made to Waterbury's and

* The following test was published at the time as the oath imposed by General Lee upon certain obnoxious persons in Rhode Island and is probably the same as that referred to in the text here, and in previous letters.

"I, —, here, in the presence of Almighty God, as I hope for ease, honor, and comfort in this world, and happiness in the world to come, most earnestly, devoutly, and religiously do swear, that I will neither directly

Ward's Regiments requesting 'em to remain here untill They can be replac'd by a certain number of Troops from Philadelphia and the Jersey's. They have unanimously consented to stay 'till the twenty fifth of this month which is a fortnight longer than the Term They were enlisted for—before the expiration of this time I am in hopes that some measures will be taken by the Congress for throwing into the City, its Environs, and Long Island a force sufficient to dispute the ground with any number of Troops we have reason to expect—not that I would imply that these two Connecticut Regiments remaining here would be able to prevent the landing and lodging themselves in the Island even five Battalions of the Enemy should They chuse to attempt it, but these two Regiments will enable us at least to lay the foundation of the necessary works, I have ordered a Regiment from the Jerseys who will be here I hope in a few days, I shall not, Sir, trouble you with a detail of our intended works as I shall have the honour of paying my respects in Person to the Congress in a very few days, for on Thursday it is my intention to set out.

I am in very little pain about the execution of what we have concerted, as it is committed to the hand of Lord Stirling, who shews much intelligence and activity,

nor indirectly assist the wicked instruments of ministerial tyranny and villany, commonly called the king's troops and navy, by furnishing them with provisions and refreshments of any kind, unless authorized by the Continental Congress or Legislature, at present established in this particular colony of Rhode Island.

“I do also swear, by the tremendous and Almighty God, that I will neither directly nor indirectly convey any intelligence, nor give any advice to the aforesaid enemies described; and that I pledge myself, if I should by any accident get knowledge of such treasons, to inform immediately the committee of safety.

“And, as it is justly allowed that when the rights and sacred liberties of a nation or community are invaded, neutrality is not less base and criminal than open and avowed hostility, I do further swear and pledge myself, as I hope for eternal salvation, that I will, whenever called upon by the voice of the Continental Congress, or by the Legislature of this particular colony under their direction, take up arms, and subject myself to military discipline in defence of the common rights and liberties of America. So help me God.”

as this place will probably be the scene of a good deal of action it would be prudent to add something to their present stock of ammunition. I find by their returns that there is in the whole Colony (that sent up to Fort Connecticut included) five ton and a half.

The numerous Body of profess'd Tories in Long Island and Statton Island with not a few within the walls of the City is a most alarming consideration, the measures adopted by the Provincial Congress obliging them to give bonds as a security for their good behaviour can answer no purpose, but that of rendering 'em more bitter and violent, the first Regiment of our Gracious Sovereigns Cut Throats which arrive here will indubitably cancel these Bonds. I am well assur'd indeed that these bonds are made a public joke of already by the worthy gentlemen who gave 'em, in short the friends to liberty are to a man convinc'd that the Tories will take arms when encouraged by the appearance of any Royal Troops, the delicacy of our situation, the dangerous crisis of affairs have therefore determin'd me to take a decisive step which alone according to my judgment, can secure us. These offer'd a test drawn up in such terms that refusal or consent to take it must be a criterion by which We may be able to distinguish these whose swords are whetted to plunge into the vitals of their Country and whose (if not drawn in defence of the Common rights) may be expected to remain quietly in their scabbards, the first I have directed to be seized without further ceremony, and should think myself highly criminal in omitting so salutary a step before it is too late—perhaps I judge wrong, if I do I must myself take the shame of being weak, rash, and precipitate, the intelligence I have receiv'd from General Washington, will at all events justify in some measure my dispensing with forms.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect,

Your most obedient humble servant

CHARLES LEE.

TO THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF NEW YORK.

New York, March 5, 1776.

SIR :

It is absolutely necessary that Col. Ward should be supplied with the necessary brush for fascines, wood for pickets, and other timber to complete the works I have directed on Long Island. It is my wish these materials should be supplied in the most easy way to the inhabitants and that the utmost justice be done them. It is impossible for me to attend to the regulation of this matter, and therefore must desire the Congress of New York will take proper measures to conduct this matter, which I doubt not will forward the service.

CHARLES LEE,
Major-Genl.

To the President of the Congress of New York.

FROM THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF NEW YORK.

In Provincial Congress, New York,
March 6th, 1776.

SIR :

We have now under consideration the case of Mr Samuel Gale, who was lately apprehended in this city by a military guard, and conveyed to Fairfield, in the Colony of Connecticut, where he now is in close confinement. We are wholly ignorant of the nature of the charge brought against him, or the cause of his commitment, and should be glad to be informed thereof, that proper steps may be taken either for his discharge or punishment.

It may not be improper to remind you, Sir, that the right of apprehending, trying, and punishing citizens

who violate the resolutions of Congress, or act inimical to the liberties of America, is by the Continental Congress, delegated to the Provincial Conventions in the respective Colonies. This right we think it our duty to insist upon, as essential to the security of our constituents. We hold ourselves ready to co-operate with you in every measure that may be thought necessary to promote the common cause of the continent, and to frustrate the arbitrary designs of a wicked Ministry; at the same time, it becomes us, as faithful guardians of the people, to protect the liberty and property of our constituents as much as possible in our present unhappy situation. We are sensible of the many difficulties you have to struggle with while commanding an undisciplined soldiery; but we flatter ourselves their irregularities will be checked upon proper information. This consideration, Sir, induces us to inform you that the Port Guards continue to fire upon the boats coming to and going from this city, for the purpose of supplying the inhabitants with provisions and other necessaries. If this practice is continued, we are apprehensive it will greatly distress the inhabitants, render it impossible to provide for the troops, and prevent our commissary from supplying the magazine we are now establishing for the Continental army—We therefore, entreat you, Sir, to give such orders to the Port Guards as will prevent such inconveniences for the future.

We are, with esteem, your obt. servts,
By Order.

To Major Gen. Lee.

TO THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF NEW YORK.

New York, March 6th 1776.

SIR—

I have just received an uncertified paper, the purport of which seems to imply that the men of war and Governor Tryon are to be supplied as formerly with

provisions. Subsequently to this order of the Provincial Congress, the Continental Congress have instructed me to put the city in the best state of defence possible. I am so unfortunate as not to be able to discover how furnishing the enemy with the necessaries of life can contribute to this end ; it certainly must open the means of their receiving every sort of intelligence which ought to be withheld from them, for I cannot myself conceive, that the oath of the port master should bind his boat's crew. It is true they are to be restrained from going on board, but I defy human cunning to prevent, (when they are once alongside) the conveyance of a letter. I must entreat, sir, that the Congress will not suppose that I am aiming at an authority superior to theirs in thus giving my opinion, and raising objections to anything they have resolved. I respect them as the true representatives of the people and proper Legislature of the Province ; but, sir, the information I have received from Cambridge, and the orders I have received from the Continental Congress, will justify me in most humbly entreating the Congress not to enjoin me to assent (so much against my conscience,) to any intercourse of any kind with Mr Tryon, who must be considered as a most dangerous enemy.

There is one thing further I would submit to the wisdom of Congress, whether it will be prudent to suffer a single man (in our present circumstances) to remain in the city who will not enter into an engagement to take up arms in the defence of the common rights. I took the liberty of a letter to you hinting a measure somewhat related to this scheme, but was not honoured with an answer.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect,

Your most obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE

P. S. I have this instant received your favour relating to Mr. Gale, who is apprehended and conveyed into Connecticut. I agree, Sir, entirely with you, that

the apprehension, trial and punishment of citizens is not my province, but of the Provincial Congress. But, irregular as it was, I had the assurance of many respectable men that he was a most dangerous man, and ought not to be suffered to remain on Long Island, where an enemy is perhaps more dangerous than in any other spot of America. However, their assurances and my opinion form no excuse, and I heartily repent that I did not refer him to you, his proper judges.

I must now inform you, Sir, that in consequence of the last instructions from the Continental Congress, to put this city and its environs in a state of defence, I have ordered Colonel Ward, as a previous measure, to secure the whole body of professed tories in Long Island. When the enemy is at our door, forms must be dispensed with; my duty to you, to the Continental Congress, and to my own conscience, have dictated the necessity of the measure. If I have done wrong, and I confess the irregularity, I must submit myself to the shame of being reputed foolish, rash, and precipitate. I must undergo the censure of the public, but I shall have the consciousness in my own breast that the most pure motives of serving the public cause, uncontaminated by pique or resentment to individuals, have urged me to the step.—There is now a ruffian under guard, one John Greg, who attempted to murder the sentinels on their posts the other night.

I beg to know your pleasure on the subject. As to the affair of the sentries firing on the boats, I never heard till this moment that they had repeated a misdemeanor so contrary to the orders they had received. I can only say that I am very sorry that my orders have been so little respected, and that if I can find out the culprits they shall be severely punished.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect,
Your most obedt. and humble servt.

CHARLES LEE.

To the President of the Provincial Congress of New York.

FROM THOMAS PALMER.

Newburgh, Ulster County Above
the Highlands, March 6, 1776.

SIR:

We this day arrived safe up the river (with the three vessels containing the cannon, shot, &c) at Newburgh-Landing, which is seventy miles from New-York.

Our passage has been attended to with much difficulty and danger, on account of cold head winds, and the river exceedingly full of ice. The vessels are now in safe harbor on the west shore; but on the landing opposite, on the east shore, the only place where the cannon must be landed, the flats are yet shut up with ice; but I conceive it practicable to cut a channel through to shore, which we shall attempt immediately; the carriages for the transporting the cannon are completed, and the horses ready to proceed as soon as the cannon can be landed. The bearer, Captain Brown, has been very useful and alert with his men, in bringing the vessels thus far safe; and as we can be supplied at this port with sufficient assistance for the further procedure with the cannon, I thought it prudent, with Captain Brown's advice, to dismiss him with his men.

I am, Sir, with due respect, your most humble servant to command

THOMAS PALMER.

To Charles Lee, Esq. &c &c

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Philadelphia, March 11, 1776.

SIR,

I beg leave to inform the Congress of my arrival, in consequence of their orders; and shall be happy if you will instruct me when, and in what manner I am to

pay my respects to them, in order to receive their further commands.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect, your most obedient humble Servant,

CHARLES LEE.

To the Hon. John Hancock, &c &c &c

REPORT ON THE DEFENCE OF NEW YORK, MARCH,
1776.*

The command of the passage of the Sound must be ours. This, I imagine, is already effected by the works thrown up at *Horn's Hook*; but as a further security, batteries and a redoubt must be erected on the other side, either on Montresor's Island, or on the continent of Long-Island, as the Engineer and succeeding General shall determine. These additional works are not solely meant to shut up to the enemy the passage through the Sound, but to secure a free, open, and easy communication to our own troops, between the continent of New York and Long-Island. As the city of New York is almost environed by navigable waters, it is undoubtedly very difficult to fortify it against a powerful sea armament; but still I am of opinion that, although troops cannot easily be prevented landing under the guns of their shipping, they may be prevented lodging themselves in it, or converting it into a great place of arms, as they have done Boston.

The East River, I am almost persuaded, may be secured in such a manner that their ships will scarcely venture into it, or at least they cannot keep their stations when in. A battery for this purpose is planned, and in some forwardness, at the foot of the Jews' Burying-Ground. To protect this battery from the

* See Journals of the Continental Congress: March 11th and 14th, 1776.

near approach of ships, (which, when close, are always supposed to be an over match for batteries level with the water, and in a low situation,) guns in barbet, placed on the heights of the Jews' Burying Ground, when in correspondence with a battery I have ordered on an opposite commanding knoll in Long-Island; will certainly be sufficient. These two fires will likewise be crossed by a third, of a very considerable range, from a work in the front of our intrenched camp on Long-Island; which work is likewise answered by a battery sunk in a cellar on the opposite wharf. Such is our plan with respect to the East-River. —

Having attentively examined the fort and great batteries under it, and considered whether they could be of any possible use to us, I am of opinion that, as ships of great burthen can approach so near the latter, it will be dangerous, if not impracticable, to support them. The fort cannot, for the same reason, be defended. But although it is not possible, in our hands, to render it a fortification of offence against the enemy, it might, in their possession, be converted into a citadel, to keep the town in subjection. These considerations have induced me to throw down the North-east and North-west Bastions, with the communicating curtain; so that, being entirely open behind, and a commanding traverse thrown across the Broadway, with three guns mounted, it is impossible for the enemy to lodge themselves in and repair the fort.

The North-River is so extremely wide and deep that it is in vain to think of any means to prevent the men-of-war commanding the navigation of it; but it does not appear to me that they have it in their power to annoy dangerously the town, much less to destroy it. It is true an accidental shell may do great mischief; but the effects of their cannon are not, I think, much to be apprehended, for there is a most fortunate ridge or eminence, which not only serves as a screen of protection for the town, but on which any number of batteries may be erected, to keep the ships at a distance.

I must observe, once for all, that New York, from its circumstances, can with difficulty be made a regular tenable fortification; but it may be made a most advantageous field of battle—so advantageous indeed, that if our people behave with common spirit, and the commanders are men of discretion, it must cost the enemy many thousands of men to get possession of it. The streets must be traversed and barricaded, so as to prevent their coming on our flanks, and three redoubts thrown up on the three eminences: Judge Jones's, Bayard's Hill, and either Lispenard's or Halderman's house, on Hudson's River. But these means are not to be confined to the town. The whole Island is said to be redoubted in certain regular steps, if I may so express it, quite to King's Bridge. These redoubts, redans, or flitches, are easily thrown up, and are no expense.

The leading roads from Hudson's River, whence the enemy can alone approach, must be obstructed to artillery. King's Bridge must be strongly fortified, to preserve the communication free and open with Connecticut, on which Province you can alone depend for succors of men; for the breadth and depth of the North-River renders the communication with Jersey too precarious.

The possession and security of Long-Island is certainly of still greater importance than New-York. I have accordingly marked out a camp, fortified by a chain of redoubts, mutually supporting each other, and which, also corresponding with the batteries on the New-York side, will prevent the enemy's entering or remaining in the East River. This camp is intended to contain four or five thousand men. Upon the whole, for the defence of Long Island and New-York, eight thousand, at least, regular troops, will be necessary.

With respect to the fort on Hudson's River, in the Highlands, I must refer the Congress to the report of Captain Smith, who was sent up to examine, and who is extremely capable to judge and advise.

I have now, in a military capacity, to the best of

my recollection, mentioned every circumstance relative to the defence and security of New York and Long-Island. But I think it my duty to observe that all these measures will be totally fruitless unless some precautions are taken with respect to the professed enemies of American liberty, nested in the very spots where they can do the greatest mischief—Queen's County and Staten-Island. The bonds they have given are too ridiculous to be mentioned. The Association they have signed they consider as forced upon them; and, consequently, null. When our troops are obliged to remain inactive from want of arms; when, from this deficiency, the Canada expedition is at a stand, and New York and Long Island left open to the invasions of the enemy, is it not a most dangerous neglect and omission, or rather unaccountable infatuation, to suffer considerable bodies of avowed foes to be possessed of arms for your destruction? What possible advantage can result from such a false delicacy? I would therefore humbly propose that the inhabitants of Staten Island should, without loss of time, be disarmed, and their arms delivered to some regiment already raised, but unfurnished with muskets.

I do not imagine that the disarming the Tories will incapacitate them from acting against us, as they can easily be supplied by the ships. I should, therefore, think it prudent to secure their children as hostages. If a measure of this kind (hard as it may appear) is not adopted, the children's children of America may rue the fatal omission.

FROM GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Head Quarters, Cambridge, March 14th 1776.

DEAR SIR:

I am indebted to you for your three several favors, which I should have acknowledged sooner, had not the great hurry and bustle we have been in for several days

past prevented. You have doubtless heard before this time of our being in possession of Dorchester Hill, which important business was executed in one night, without any loss. The enemy were thrown into the utmost consternation when they perceived the next morning, what had been effected the preceding night, and made preparations to dislodge us. Three thousand men, under the command of Lord Percy, were drafted for this service; but a very heavy storm of wind and rain frustrated their design—in my opinion the most fortunate circumstance for them, and unfortunate for us, that could have happened, as we had everything so well prepared for their reception, that I am confident we should have given a very good account of them.

I was just about to congratulate you on your appointment to the command in Canada, when I received the account that your destination was altered. As a Virginian I must rejoice at the change; but as an American, I think you would have done more essential service to the common cause in Canada. For, besides the advantage of speaking and thinking in French, an officer who is acquainted with their manners and customs and has travelled in their country must certainly take the strongest hold of their affection and confidence.

You mention nothing of the guard that went with you from hence. Mr Palfrey tells me you intend to take them with you. As it will create great confusion in the Regimental accounts, and they can be of no great service to you, I must beg you will let them remain in New-York, where they will be soon joined by their respective regiments. I am much pleased at your plans for the defence and security of New-York. What you may leave unfinished I shall order the commanding officer to complete as soon as possible. Lest the enemy should meet with favorable winds on their passage, and get there before our army, I have written to Governor Trumbull, desiring him immediately to forward two thousand men, and have also requested one thousand from the Jerseys. This, with the force already there,

I hope will be able to keep the Ministerial Army at bay until I can arrive with the main body. I most sincerely wish for your increase of health and every blessing, and am, Dear Sir,

Your most affectionate friend and hble. Servt.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

To Major Gen. Lee.

FROM ISAAC SEARS.

Jamaica, March 17, 1776.

SIR,

It is a duty that I owe to my Comman^r to acquaint him of my proceedings in execut^g the order he gave me. Yesterday afternoon I arived at Newtown, and tendered the oath to four of the grate Torries, which they swallowed as hard as if it was a four pound shot, that they ware trying to git down. On this day at 11 o'clock, I came here, whare I sent out scouting parties, and have ben able to ketch but five Torries, and they of the first rank, which swallowed the oath. The houses are so scatering it is impossible to ketch many without hosses to rid after thim. But I shall exert myself to ketch the gratest part of the ringledors, and beleve I shell effect it, but not less then five days from this time. I can asure your honor they are a set of villins in this country, and beleve the better half of them are wateing for soport and intend to take up arms against us. And it is my oppinion nothing else will do but removeing the ringledors to a place of secuerty.

From your most ob^t Hum^{le} Sir^t

ISAAC SEARS.

TO JOHN HANCOCK.

Baltimore, March y^e 21st 1776

SIR,

At the earnest desire of the gentlemen of this place I have pass'd this day in examining the works thrown up for the defence of the Town against shipping. I find 'em, according to the best judgment I am able to form, in general well concerted, and believe when they are completed, that the Town will (in military phrase) be *hors d'insult*. As I was assured at Philadelphia by the Delegates of Virginia and Carolina, that there was not a single field Engineer in their Provinces, I have ventured to engage a Mr. Massenbach, a young German, who, from the conversation I have had with him, seems to be a sufficient master of the business. I hope the Congress will approve of the step.

I must now, Sir, beg leave to express my concern that my conduct in administering an oath to the disaffected in Long Island should have brought down such a thundering stigma on my head. I myself saw and confessed the irregularity of the proceeding. There is likewise no man more sensible than myself of the necessity of bridling in time the impetuosity and license of the military. But as I had received orders from the Congress to take every step for the security of N. York, as I had reason to expect the enemy every hour, as I thought the least delay might be of the most dangerous consequence, and, above all, as I was conscious of neither being actuated by spleen, passion, caprice, nor prejudice, but merely and purely by apprehensions for the public safety, I postponed all considerations, and hazarded so irregular a measure. I confess that I expected a reprimand, but flattered myself that it might have been conveyed to me in a less severe manner than by a public resolve.—As I consider the Congress as the most respectable sovereign in the world, (indeed in my opinion it is the only legitimate one,) their public censure sinks deep in my spirits, and I sin-

cerely wish that a natural warmth of temper and (if I may so express it) an immoderate zeal for the rights and safety of this country may never hurry me a second time into any measure which may so justly merit reprehension.

I am, Sir, with the greatest respect,
Your most ob't and humble ser't,
CHARLES LEE.

To the Hon. John Hancock, Esq.

FROM JOHN EUSTACE.

New-York, March 21st 76.

MY DEAR GENERAL,

Yours and Mr Byrd's baggage, I have brought to town, and Lord Stirling has promised to have them forwarded to you immediately. I was so much set upon going to Canada, that upon hearing of your being ordered to Virginia I was quite disappointed; as I was certain that it would occasion a separation for a small space of time. The reasons I need not tell you.

As this is the case, and I am at present unprovided for I wou'd esteem it as a singular favor, if you wou'd honor me with an epistle, and let me know in what manner to proceed, as I at present look upon you as my patron. I wou'd rather remain Idle for some time than do anything without or contrary to your immediate desire. There were some cloaths of y^{rs} at the taylors, these I brought with me and your Summer Hat. This I knew you'd have occasion for in Virg^a. They will go with the rest. I have also two shoulder-knots w^{ch} I will send by the first safe opportunity.

I can with pleasure inform my good friend Otway (though I believe contrary to his expectations) that all his cloaths are here with me & will accompany yours.

All his papers I have also; these with the shoulder knots I will send by the first opportunity going immediately to Virginia.

As I expect to be honor'd with a letter by first opportunity I wou'd be glad if you wou'd let me know your Address that I may know how to direct to you. Mine is to plain Jack Eustace to y^e care of Brig. Gen. Thompson, Tory Town, alias New York.

M^{rs} Martins desires her respectful compliments to you & hopes you will excuse her for the liberty she took in enclosing a letter for my Sister to you.

That you may be crown'd with that success w^{ch} you merit is the sincere wish of your most O^{bt} & very Hum^{ble} Serv^t

J. EUSTACE.

Best Respects to Spada. No News. I shall remember your latin, "Fac Valeas, me Amas & studiose legas." God bless you.

The Hon^{ble} Major Gen^l Lee, Virginia.

FROM RICHARD HENRY LEE.

[Philadelphia, March 25, 1776.]

MY DEAR FRIEND,

I have just received your letter from Baltimore covering one for M^r Hancock. My Brother who was present in Congress when the Resolve you allude to passed, says that every Gentleman acknowledged the necessity under which you acted, and approved the measure. The precedent alone they feared, when less judgment was used. They endeavored therefore to guard against pointing at you by directing their Resolve to future occasions. As then there was no design to reflect on you, so we have concluded that the better way will be not to present the letter, but content ourselves with informing Congress of your having taken the Engineers and getting their approbation. Gen. Washington entered Boston this day sennight, the Enemy having quitted it with some precipitation, and apparent appre-

hension of being disturbed in their retreat. To prevent this, they left their works undemolished, and placed images large as life representing Soldiers on guard as usual on Bunker Hill—Our friend Sullivan first discovered the cheat. They have left 30 of their light Horse behind them almost famished, and stores to the amount of 25 or 30,000 pounds. Where they will go next, heaven knows, but we must endeavour to be prepared at all points. I this day moved in Congress and succeeded, to send an order for four battalions to be detached for Canada from Gen. Washington's Army. I am afraid we shall loose poor Gov^r Ward, who now lies dangerously ill with the small pox taken in the natural way. The Eastern Army will all be at N.Y. presently.

I sincerely wish you happy and successful because I am with great affection Yours

RICHARD HENRY LEE.

General Lee, at Williamsburg, in Virginia.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE COMMITTEE OF YORK.

In Committee of Observation for the County of York
(Pensilv^a) the 26th day of March, 1776.

Capt. Grier Commander of General Lee's Guard, having represented to this Board that a number of his Company have been seized with small pox and other disorders, and that it is thought most expedient to inoculate such of the Company, as have not had the small pox, and requesting the Committee may take charge of their arms, and use their best endeavours to procure lodgings and accomodations for the sick men. It is Resolved, That the Arms be deposited in the hands of Major Donaldson & Captain Irwin; and that this Committee use their best endeavours to procure comfortable lodgings and accommodations for the sick men.

Extract from the Minutes.

JAMES SMITH, Chairman.

ADDRESS OF VIRGINIA OFFICERS.

TO HIS EXCELLENCY MAJOR GENERAL LEE.

SIR,

Your much wished for arrival in Williamsburg* affords a pleasing opportunity, to the Officers of the Virginia Forces in this City, to express the high satisfaction they have on your appointment to the command of the Southern Department. Perfectly convinced of your great abilities as a Commander, and of your firm attachment to the cause of America, we entertain the most sanguine hopes, that the American sword has not been drawn in vain to vindicate violated rights, and in opposition to a blood thirsty King and Ministry. We shall rejoice to unite with you in this great design, and endeavour by a strict attention to the duties of our several stations, to establish American freedom on a lasting and Permanent Basis.

March 30th 1776.

 TO LIEUT. COL. FRANK EPPES.
Williamsburg, 30th March 1776.

SIR,

I must desire that on the receipt of this you will either yourself reconnoitre and examine, or order some other intelligent Officer to reconnoitre and examine the state situation and circumstances of Lord Dunmore and the people under his command, I mean with respect to the form strength and extent of his retrenchment,

* [From the Diary of Col. William Cabell, a member of the Committee of Safety in Virginia—"1776, March 28. Genl. Lee arrived in W^msburg and dined with the Committee of Safety, which was the first day of their having a full board since their institution." The papers of the day give his arrival as on the 29th "attended by Otway Byrd and Lewis Morris, Esq's, his Excellency's Aids de Camp, his Secretary, Mr. Nourse, Mons. Le Brun, Engineer, and the rest of his suite."—*Constitutional Gazette*: April 13, 1776. *Penn. Mag.* April: 1776, p. 197.]

what is the nature of the ground near it? by what means the ships and Troops are supplied with water? whether they supply themselves from one two three or several sources? whether it is practicable or impracticable to prevent their being supply'd by fortifying and possessing ourselves of the watering places?

I am Sir

Your most obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To Lieut. Col^l Eppes or Officer

Commanding the Post at Kemp's Landing Place.

FROM LIEUT. COL. FRANK EPPES.

Kemps, March 31, 1776.

SIR,

I congratulate you on your appointment and arrival, and shall immediately proceed to execute the commands I had the honor to receive this night. At present I can only say that Lord Dunmore's entrenchment is near a quarter of a mile in length, running nearly in a straight course from cove to cove, including Tucker's mills and bake house, with about two acres of land, in which they keep their hospital and exercise the blacks, whose number is between 2 and 300; these, together with about 40 Regulars of the 14th Regiment the marines of the Liverpool, Otter, and sometimes the Roebuck, and the tory Volunteers of Norfolk, who may perhaps amount to near a hundred, compose Lord Dunmore's whole force, unless you include the sailors on board a fleet of 70 or 80 sail of small Vessels, with a few large ones, whose number it is impossible to ascertain: The Fleet are furnished with water from the Distillery on one side of the river, and Tucker's mills on the other side. The former within two hundred yards of the Dunmore, and in convenient reach from the Otter, & the latter included within the intrench-

ment, and under the command of the Liverpool & Otter, who have stationed themselves in the best manner for the protection of it. The ground near it, is rather higher than the retrenchment, but has no shelter for near a half mile before you get to it, being an open old field. The depth of the ditch thro' which the water runs, is above 8 feet, the width uncertain. I cannot as yet learn the number of cannon his Lordship has mounted, nor how many men constantly reside within their lines. They are supplied with many conveniences from Portsmouth and the Western branch, and if we had not continued at this Post, the whole County of Princess Ann would have lain at their mercy, and the communication between Carolina and the fleet have been opened to the very great advantage of the latter. The scouting parties from this place have hitherto effectually prevented it on this side the River, and if the same steps had been taken on the other side, and on the western branch, they would have been reduced to greater distress than they are at present. By an entrenchment in the mouths of the cannon at the Distillery, we might perhaps greatly annoy the enemy for a while, but there is no mode of preventing it on the other side of the River, without the possession of Tucker's Mills. In short, I do not think we can prevent them from watering, with the force we have here. Besides the Liverpool, King Fisher, Otter, & Roebuck ships of [War], there are the Dunmore, the William, the Anna, ships of force, and a [great] number of armed tenders. If a raft could be privately constructed [it might] do immense mischief to the crowd of Vessels lying at Norfolk. I shall be able to give you a fuller account upon my return, which shall be with great expedition. There are many valuable effects belonging to the tory prisoners in this county; I should be glad to receive some Orders about them. In consequence of a late Act of parliament, upon which the enclosed proclamation is founded, Lord Dunmore has seized upon all the Vessels at Norfolk, whose owners are not on

board, and confiscated them to the King's use. There has been a very heavy firing yesterday and last night, I dare say above 500 cannon either in the bay or at sea; from the change of place there seems to have been a smart pursuit. I sent out a party on horseback last night, who are not yet returned.

I am, Sir, very respectfully,

Y^r most Obed^t Servant

FRANK EPPES.

To Major General Lee,
Williamsburg.

FROM RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Philadelphia, 1st April, 1776.

MY DEAR FRIEND,

I hope my former reasons for not delivering your letter to the President will meet your approbation. Since I wrote you last, the Congress has appointed two Engineers for the Southern department, M^r John Stadler, now in Virginia, and the young German Massenbach whom you took with you from Baltimore. They have also appointed Mons^r Dohicky Arundel (who I expect will deliver you this) a Captain of Artillery in the Continental service with the following resolve, "That General Lee be directed to set on foot the raising a Company of Artillery, and that it be recommended to the Convention or Committee of Safety of Virginia to appoint the other officers of said Company of Artillery." The better opinion now is, that Gen. Howe will rest awhile at Halifax, and embrace the first opportunity of pushing up to the relief of Quebec, and we are making ready to meet him there. I think the number of men already ordered for that country amounts to more than 10,000. We are informed that General Howe carried off all his American prisoners with him in chains. The people of New-York have collected and

burnt publicly every copy they could find of Plain Truth, and they have treated the Effigies of Tryon in the same manner. The arrival of 10 tons of powder and a considerable quantity of sail cloth to the Eastward is all the news we have here. Farewell my dear friend, I wish you happy, healthy, and successful.

RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Cato still continues to write nonsense, and the other Tories to forge lies about the Commissioners.

General Lee,
at Williamsburg, in Virginia.

FROM THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Philadelphia, April 1, 1776.

SIR,

The Congress having appointed Mr Dohicky Arundel Captain of an Artillery Company in the Continental Service, and directed him to repair to the Southern Department, and there to put himself under your command, I have it in charge from that body to inform you that you are directed to set on foot the raising a company of artillery. This you will endeavour to accomplish as early as possible, being very sensible the service calls for such a company, that we may be the better enabled to defend ourselves and annoy our enemies.

The Convention, or Committee of Safety of Virginia to whom I write by this conveyance, are requested to appoint the other officers of the said Company.

I have the honor to be, sir, your most obedient
and very humble servant.

JOHN HANCOCK,
President.

To the Hon. Major Gen. Lee.

TO EDMUND PENDLETON.

Williamsburg, April y^e 2nd 1776.

SIR,

I concluded that the Powder sent from Philadelphia was destin'd for this place—this at least is the proper place for it; and I do not find that any Continental Store Officers are at Fredericksburg. I suppose your Letter or directions to the Committee there will be sufficient to forward it to W^{ms}burg. You will therefore much oblige me in taking upon yourself this trouble.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect yours, &c.

CHARLES LEE.

To Edmund Pendleton, Esq.

President of the Committee of Safety.

TO COLONELS PEACHY AND MERCER.

Williamsburg April y^e 2nd 1776.

SIR,

As there is the greatest reason to conclude, (for at least it is the most natural surmise) that if the enemy arrive with considerable force, the possession of Williamsburg and York will be their first object: as the possession of these places would give an air of superiority and dignity to their arms, which in these slave countries is a matter of infinite importance; I think it necessary to take the measures necessary to defeat what I conclude will be their design. I must therefore desire that you will march your Regiment down to this place without delay.

I am Sir, your most ob^t humble servant

CHARLES LEE, Major General.

To Col^o Peachy, Richmond Court House p Express

The same word for word to Col^o Mercer, Dumfries,
p Express.

TO COLONEL CHRISTIAN.

Williamsburg, y^e 2^d April, 1776.

SIR,

I must request that you will take the trouble to reconnoitre the banks of James River in the following manner :

You will begin from the Swamp on the left of Mr. Johnson's house, which is a little to the left of Burrel's Ferry, and proceed downwards.

You are to observe and report the number of bays or landing places convenient for the disembarking Troops and Cannon.

The nature of the heights which command 'em.

Whether these landing places are at the foot of Ravines or Swamps.

Whether the Ravines are firm or boggy.

What is the length of the Ravines.

Whether the heights on the flanks of the Ravines are scarped or of tolerable easy ascent.

What sort of Country the Enemy (on the supposition they can land) are oblig'd to march through until they fall into the high common road leading to Williamsburg.

Whether it is woody or clear. If woody, what sort of wood.

What distance from one bay or landing place to another.

In short, you are to report what you think of the facility or difficulty, which they will find in landing or proceeding from any particular spot where you suppose it is possible or probable they may land to Williamsburg.

I am, Sir,

Your most ob^t humble Servant

CHARLES LEE, Major General.

To Col^o Christian.

FROM COL. WILLIAM PEACHY.

Richmond County, April 3^d 1776.

SIR,

I this moment received your's by Express, and shall forthwith proceed to give the necessary orders for collecting the Companies of this Regiment; only five have yet rendezvoused at Richmond Court House, one at Westmoreland, and one at Northumberland Court House, these seven musketry, very indifferently armed or accoutred, and no ammunition come to hand, nor have I heard of either of the Rifle Companies or the Lieutenant Colonel; The Contractor for provisions but just come, and in short everything in disorder, so that it must be several days at least before they can get in motion, but every possible Expedition shall be used in compliance with your order.

I am Sir, Your most Obedient hum^{ble} Servant
W^m PEACHY.

To Major General Lee.

FROM COL. HUGH MERCER.

Dumfries 1st April 1776.

SIR,

Agreeable to your Orders, I have enclosed a Return of the third Regiment of the Virginian Forces. As soon as Tents can be provided I intend to encamp at Alexandria for the purpose of training the Officers and men, but shall leave a proper guard here.

I have the honor &c. to be Sir &c.

HUGH MERCER.

To the Hon. Major Gen. Lee.

TO EDWARD RUTLEDGE.

Williamsburg, April y^e 3^d

MY DEAR SIR,

I have nothing of sufficient importance to trouble the Congress with, but shall teaze you with a few words; I am exactly in the same situation I expected, puzzled where to go, or fix myself from an uncertainty of the Enemies design: I can therefore only act by surmise, the general opinion is that they will aim at this part of Virginia, viz: York & Williamsburg, or that they will fix their head Quarters in North Carolina; it has been already asserted that Mr. Clinton was landed with 1500 men at Wilmington—a Letter from Brigadier Howe dated from Edenton says that it is believed but not ascertained; I wait for further Intelligence, in the meantime, I shall employ myself in rendring this place and York as inaccessible as possible, for it is my own private perswasion that they will endeavor to possess themselves of the Capitol, not only as it is really a most tempting and advantageous post from commanding two Rivers and a most abundant Country; but it would give an air of superiority and dignity to their arms, which in this Slave Country might be attended with important consequences by the impressions it would make in the minds of the Negroes. I wish we had a couple of good Regiments, more in South Carolina, it would then be perhaps hors d'insult—the apathy of this Province seems to go passibus æquis with that of some other Provinces; notwithstanding the perswasion & assurances of all the officers, that the Tories about Norfolk will most certainly repair to the Tyrant's Standard, & have proposed means of securing them, they say such means would be violent & cruel, in short, as your affairs prosper, the timidity of the senatorial part of the Continent great and small grows and extends itself: by the eternal God, unless you declare yourselves independent, establish a more certain and fixed legisla-

ture than that of a temporary courtesy of the people, you richly deserve to be enslaved, & I think it far from impossible, that it should be your lot, as without a more systematical intercourse with France and Holland, we cannot, We have not the means of carrying on the War. Adieu.

Yours

C. LEE.

To Edward Rutledge, Esq.

Member of the Continental Congress.

TO LIEUT. COLONEL EPPES.

Williamsburg y^e 4th April 1776.

SIR,

I think myself extremely obliged to you for your full, distinct, and accurate Letter, I must therefore only beg that you will immediately send me your opinion what post must be occupied & what force will be sufficient to give us the command of this Western Branch so as to prevent their procuring further supplies;—the Tory confiscated goods I think you had better forward to Suffolk: Doctor Skinner who is to be there may examine whether they contain any necessaries for the sick; He is to take of course what he thinks requisite for their use—As soon as I have finished my Plan for the security of this place and York, I intend doing myself the pleasure of visiting your Post—Could a raft be prepared for the purposes you mention?

I am Sir

Yours &c

CHARLES LEE.

To Lieut. Col^l Epps.

Kemps Landing. p Doctor Skinner.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE COUNCIL OF SAFETY OF
NORTH CAROLINA.Williamsburg April y^e 5, 1776.

SIR,

The subject of this Letter appearing to me of exceeding importance I have resolved to dispatch an Express to inform you that the Roebuck, a King's ship of forty four guns has for some time left the Capes of Virginia; and, as we hear is now lying off the bay of Delaware, with a design to intercept the Continental fleet. At Norfolk remain the Liverpool, a thirty gun Frigate: the Otter Sloop of fourteen Guns & some Tenders, together with a ship Lord Dummore on board, of little or no force, and a number of Vessels belonging to the Tories, with valuable cargoes & prizes amounting by a reasonable estimate to £140,000 sterling; if Mr. Hopkins is at Cape Fear, would it not be a good measure to inform him, how sure a prey these ships at Norfolk, with their immense treasure of Goods, arms, ammunition, & other military stores would be to him, was he to come into the Capes of Virginia? It is not probable our fleet can keep the sea much longer, a number of British Ships of war being expected soon on the American coast, this last mentioned stroke would then be a glorious conclusion; and if it should be necessary afterwards to keep in a safe harbor, by erecting a Battery at the mouth of the river leading to Norfolk, the Navy of Great Britain might be, from the nature of the Navigation, prevented from getting up. I am extremely anxious to know the state of your Province, of the State, number and quality of your Troops, any assistance which can be afforded you by this Province, as far as depends on me, you may command; I should have set out before this for your Province, but the confusion, disorder &

deficiencies of Virginia, oblige me to pass a few more days in my present Quarters.

I am, Sir, with the greatest Respect,
Your most obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE, Major General.

I forgot to mention that the Ships here are wretchedly manned.

To The Hon^{ble} The President of the Council of Safety,
North Carolina P Express.

TO GENERAL ROBERT HOWE.

Williamsburg, April y^e 5th 1776.

SIR,

I had the pleasure of receiving yours the day before yesterday, & think myself very much flattered by the good opinion you have conceived of me, I wish you may never have reason to think you have form'd it without foundation; I should have been extremely sorry had you put off your necessary jaunt to Carolina merely through attention to me. Your presence there must at this time be of the greatest importance, and I fancy it will become every day more important: my own situation is extremely disagreeable from an uncertainty of the Enemies designs. I know not where to turn me, where to fix myself. I may be in the North, when as Richard says, I should serve my sovereign in the West. I would willingly take a certain step, but from the excessive prudence and economy of this Committee of Safety am totally unprovided with the necessary materials—the distribution of their Troops is likewise a master piece—I wonder they did not carry it still further, and post one or two men by way of general security in every individual Gentleman's house. I beg Sir, should Mr. Clinton land and attempt to take post, that you will immediately inform

me by Express of his situation, circumstances and force, as likewise of the state of your Troops, Regulars, militia, &c., of their numbers and quality, of their wants and deficiencies—any assistance that we can afford you, you may depend upon; I must apprise you that we have little or no cannon, and not a single tool for Field works, how are you off in the article of entrenching Tools? you can expect no arms—You will naturally ask what I mean by assistance with these exceptions, I mean if the Enemy make your Province their object, I will immediately march myself with whatever Troops can be spared, in the mean time believe me, Sir, to be with the greatest respect

Your most Obedient humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To Brigadier Gen^l Rob^t Howe,
Edenton, No. Carolina,
P. Express.

To GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Williamsburgh, April 5, 1776.

MY DEAR GENERAL:

I most sincerely congratulate you, I congratulate the publick, on the great and glorious event of your possession of Boston. It will be a most bright page in the annals of America, and a most abominable black one in those of the Beldam Britain. Go on, my dear Genl, crown yourself with glory and establish the liberties and lustre of your country on a foundation more permanent than the Capitol Rock. My situation is just as I expected. I am afraid that I shall make a shabby figure, without any real demerits of my own. I am like a dog in a dancing school—I know not where to turn myself, where to fix myself. The circumstances of the country, intersected by navigable rivers; the uncertainty of the enemys designs and motions, who can

fly in an instant to any spot where they chose with their canvass wings, throw me or would have thrown Julius Cæsar, into this inevitable dilemma. I may be possibly be in the North, when (as Richard says) I should serve my sovereign in the West. I can only act from surmise and have a very good chance of surmising wrong. I am sorry to grate your ears with a truth, but must at all events assure you that the Provincial Congress of New York are angels of decision when compared with your countrymen—the Committee of Safety assembled at Williamsburgh. Page, Lee, Mercer, and Payne, are indeed, exceptions; but from Pendleton, Bland, the Treasurer & C^o—*libera nos Domine!*

I shall not trouble you with a detail of the army, ordnance and stores, but compendiously say that the regiments in general are very complete in numbers, the men (those that I have seen) fine; but a most horrid deficiency of arms—no intrenching tools—no guns (although the Province is well stocked) meet for service. Had I only eight eighteen pounders I would immediately, at all events, take post at Craney-Island, by which measure I should drive out the enemy, and exclude them from the finest and most advantageous port in America. I have ordered with this view, the artificers to work night and day. If I succeed I shall come in for a sprig of laurel. This essential measure might have been effected long ago, but for the same apathy and oblique squinting towards what the milk and water people call reconciliation.

The prodigiously flattering prospect opened by the appointment of Commissioners were strong arguments against the expense of gun-carriages and intrenching tools. But this is not all; they have distributed their troops in so ingenious a manner as to render every active offensive operation impossible; an equal number of their battalions are stationed on the different necks. They say, very acutely, that as the expence is equal, the security ought to be equal. I cannot help persuading myself that their object will be to take posses-

sion of Williamsburgh; not only from its temptingly advantageous situation—commanding in a great measure two fine rivers, and a country abundant in all the necessaries for an army—but the possession of the Capital would give an air of dignity and decided superiority to their arms, which in this slave country, where dominion is founded on opinion is a circumstance of the utmost importance. Perhaps I may be mistaken; but the surmise is not irrational. I have called three regiments down the country.

You will excuse, my dear General, the blots and scratches of this letter, for the post is just going out; by the next I will inform you of the steps we have taken for the security of this place. I have been desired to recommend Colonel Grayson as a man of extraordinary merit. He sets out soon to make application to the Congress for an establishment. If we have, as we must, a Continental Hospital in the Southern Department, Dr. M^c Clurg, I suppose will be the man to direct it. I need not mention his qualifications, they are so well known. I beg you will make somebody write to me from time to time; indeed, I think, I may modestly insist on Mr. Palfrey's pen being employed often in this service.

Adieu, dear General,

Yours most respectfully and sincerely

CHARLES LEE.

To Genl. Washington.

TO RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Williamsburg, April 5, 1776.

MY DEAR FRIEND,

I congratulate the public, and you, one of her best members, on the glorious event, the flight of the tyrants cut throats from Boston; although I do not know whether it is a matter of congratulation, for it appears

to me, that as our affairs grow more prosperous, the namby pamby's of the senatorial part of the continent (great and small) grow more timid and hysterical; I am sorry to say it, but your committee of safety seem to be as desperately and incurably infected with this epidemical malady as the provincial Congress of Maryland, or the quondam assembly of Pennsylvania. Your brother, Mr. Page, Payne, and I believe Mercer, are indeed exceptions. If you could be spared from the Congress, your presence might inspire vigour and wisdom. Their economy is of a piece with their wisdom and valour; to save money, we have no carriages to our guns; to save money, we have no blankets for our men, who are, from want of this essential, dying by dozens at Suffolk. Had I gun carriages, I could flatter myself with almost a certainty of driving the pirates, and shutting them out forever from the harbour of Norfolk. I have, however, ordered them to be made with all possible expedition, and then shall attempt this capital stroke. My command from the circumstances of the country being intersected by navigable waters, and the enemy being supplied with canvass to fly to any spot they chose is disagreeable. I may make a very shabby figure, without any real demerits of my own. I know not where to turn, or where to fix myself. I may as Richard the Third says, be in the west, when I should serve my sovereign in the north. I can only act from surmises, and I may surmise wrong; but I must venture, and take my measures accordingly. I am apt to think that Williamsburg and York will be their object; the possession of the first is not only most temptingly advantageous, from its command of the two rivers and a most abundant country, but its being a capital, the possession would give an air of dignity and decided superiority to their arms, which, in a slave country, is of the utmost importance. Your dominion over the black is founded on opinion; if this opinion falls, your authority is lost. On this principle I am drawing down some battalions, and shall, when I can provide entrench-

ing tools, work for the security of these places. For God's sake, why do you dawdle in the Congress so strangely? why do you not at once declare yourself a separate independent state? *I am much obliged* to you for keeping my letter in your hands, and am happy that the stigma was not levelled at me. Appropos, will you move, as my command is separate, and scarcely any letters are addressed to me, even those not written by the members of the Congress, which do not relate to public business, whilst I continue in this separate command, should be frank, for the expense is very considerable. I wish you would cuff Dr. Rush, for not writing. I expect and insist upon it. A Colonel Grayson, (whom I suppose you are acquainted with) will be soon with the Congress, to make application for some military establishment; I am desired to recommend him as a man of extraordinary merit. We must have a continental hospital in the southern department; Dr. McClurg, is, I am told, very well qualified to be at the head of it. My little German engineer is (as the New Englanders say) a nice man. But I wish I knew what pay and rank you intend him; I have hitherto supported him myself, but shall send in a bill for his nourishment. Adieu, my dear senator,

Your's, and your brother's

Most affectionately

C. LEE.

TO MAJOR HENDRICKS.

Williamsburg, April y^e 5, 1776.

SIR,

I have this day received or rather seen a return and state of your command; I most sincerely lament your deficiencies which I shall take care to supply without delay—in the meantime, I must request that you will find means of taking all the Guns from, what is called, the Fort—and if you have amongst your People any

Artificers that you will prepare Carriages for the eighteen Pounders that you will mount the twenty four. I talk I confess very much in the dark, as perhaps there are none of this description—my intelligence is so vague and uncertain that you will excuse me in instructing you to work upon what is perhaps a nonentity. You will oblige me by informing me as soon as possible what is really the number, size, and quality of these Guns, whether you have entrenching tools, and whether you have artificers and materials to execute what I have requested.

I am Sir

Your most obedient Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

To Major Hendrick,
Hampton.

TO SAMUEL PURVIANCE.

Williamsburg, April 6th 1776.

DEAR SIR,

As I know not to whom I can address this important Note, with so much propriety and assurance of success as to yourself, the crisis will not admit of ceremony & procrastination, I shall therefore irregularly address you in the language & with the spirit of one bold determined free Citizen to another, and conjure you as you value the liberties & rights of the Community of which you are a member, not to loose a moment & in my name (if my name is of consequence enough) to direct the Commanding Officer of your Troops at Annapolis immediately to seize the person of Gov^r Eden—the sin & blame be on my head. I will answer for all to y^e Congress, the justice & necessity of the measure will be best explained by the packet transmitted to you by

the Committee of Safety from this place. God Almighty give us Wisdom & vigor in this hour of trial.

Dear Sir,

Yours most affectionately

CHARLES LEE.

To Sam^l Purviance, Esq.

Chairman of the Committee,
Baltimore.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Williamsburgh, April 6th 1776.

SIR:

As the curtain is now in a great measure drawn up, by the happy interception of the letters from the Secretary of State to Governour Eden, which will be transmitted to the Congress by the Committee of Safety from this place, you will perceive, Sir, that we of all provinces, should not be deficient in the important article of powder. I submit it, therefore to your prudence, whether it will not be necessary immediately to add a few tons to our present stock. I find myself a good deal distressed for artillery men and officers. I apprehend General Washington could now without inconvenience, spare us a company from the main army. The regiments are here complete in numbers, the men fine, and the officers by all I can learn, good, but horribly deficient in arms, shoes, and blankets. The deficiency of arms, I know, is general, therefore I shall not venture to apply for them; but if blankets could possibly be procured, a multitude of lives would be saved, for the night dews in this country are very destructive. The want of gun carriages prevents my taking a certain post, the possession of which would be, in my opinion, worth a victory, in all its forms. I have ordered the artificers to work night and day, and hope it may not be too late. When I have given the instructions, and taken the measures which I think

necessary for the security of this place and York, which most probably will be the enemy's object, I shall set out for North Carolina, which we have reason to think will be the first scene of their diabolical operations. You will excuse, Sir, the blots and shortness of this letter, as the express waits.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect, your most obedient humble servant,

CHARLES LEE.

To John Hancock &c &c &c.

TO CAPTAIN TRAVERS.

Williamsburg, April y^e 6th 1776.

It is General Lee's order that the armed Vessels use their utmost endeavors to stop a brig now coming down James River, and carry her as high up the River as possible into a place of security.

CHARLES LEE,
Major General.

To Captⁿ Travers.

REPORT.

Williamsburg, April 6th, 1776.

We are of opinion that works erected on the banks of Warwicks, Creek Bay, Mulberry Island, James Town, or Brandon, will effectually prevent the Navigation of Tenders (if not Ships of War) from passing up James River at Warwicks, Creek Bay, and Mulberry Island, Vessels of any kind must pass within the distance of a mile—at each of which places Vessels may lye at about a quarter of a mile distance the shore being flabby—the land of warwick is high, that of Mulberry low and marshy—at James Town Vessels of any kind may pass within three quarters of a mile from the shore

(or rather less) and can come as nigh as fifty yards of the same, the shore of which is low and sandy, at Brandon, any kind of vessels may pass within half a mile of the shore where they may lye close to the Banks—but above either of these places a forty Gun ship has been.

We are very Respectfully &c &c

DANIEL HUTCHINS

RICHARD BARRON.

To His Excell^y Gen^l Lee.

FROM LIEUT. COL. FRANK EPPES.

Kemp's, April 6th 1776.

SIR,

Agreeably to your orders I took a party from here, and crossing the river proceeded to reconnoitre the state of the force at the mills, and have attended to the other particulars contained in your letter. From my own observations and the best intelligence I could procure, Lord Dunmore's force does not at present much exceed three hundred soldiers, the black regiment included. The blacks have had a contagious fever among them, and have lost a considerable number by it. I fancy fresh provisions are scarce, as they frequently plunder stock from the plantations near the water, and alledge necessity as the excuse. The post I now maintain is of great consequence in that particular, as our Scouts prevent them from making any incursions into the Country, and deter the Inhabitants from supplying them with provisions; and I am sorry to say too many of them seem well disposed towards his Lordship. Should this post be abandoned, the whole country would lie at his mercy, and an open communication be maintained with a large part of Carolina, by means of the north landing from whence to this place there is but eight miles land carriage. This north landing is at the head of the North River, which communicates with a great part of

Carolina, and that the most disaffected, particularly the Counties of Pasquotank and Currituck. With respect to water, the enemy have sunk three or four pumps, within their entrenchment, from whence the troops and ships are chiefly supplied. The watering places at the Distillery and Gosport are so much affected by the late fires, that the water is not used. Without the possession of the fort at the mills, we cannot prevent their watering; and if we had possession of it, we could not keep it, as we should be exposed to the whole fire of the shipping. For your better information I have enclosed an imperfect draught hastily sketched out; it will give you a general idea of the situation and form of the retrenchment. The extent of ground does not exceed four acres, enclosed within a ditch of eight or ten feet width, eight or nine feet deep, and about three hundred yards in length. The breast work is about six feet high, runs into the water at each end, and is cannon proof, appearing to be, about eight or ten feet through. I thought I discovered a second entrenchment, intended I suppose as a place of security in the night. The ground near it is rather on the descent, and affords no advantage of situation. I this moment received the favor of your commands of the fourth instant, and in answer say, that a body of 200 or 300 men posted near Brickel's at the head of the western branch about 12 miles from Portsmouth, and employed in scouting, would at present effectually prevent any supplies from that quarter. As the situation of the fleet is altered from its former position, and our force a good deal divided, and the men chiefly employed in scouting, the effecting a raft I find would be too difficult for us to attempt. There are considerable numbers of horses, cattle, and other moveables belonging to our enemies, now in the possession of tories and prisoners on parole in this County, and I have no likelihood of any [steps] being taken either to condemn or secure their effects for the Country. It has been our misfortune to behold men who have been declared enemies by the Convention,

honorably acquitted by a Committee for Norfolk County appointed to try them; particularly Robert Shedden, altho' he was taken by one of our parties, as he was going to the fleet, in company with some of the Volunteers of Lord Dunmore. We shall be very happy to be favoured with a visit from you, whenever you think proper, and shall be glad of your further directions and commands. I had like to have forgot to mention that we attempted to bring the enemy out of their entrenchment, by a smart fire upon them; but altho' we were but a hundred strong they did not chuse to venture out. I had an opportunity by this manceuvre to discover their force as before mentioned. We made the first appearance at daybreak, and kept an unsteady fire on them at different times, which occasioned an almost constant discharge of artillery thro' the whole day. By the fire from the Fort we discovered the strength of their fire arms, which I think consists of 4 or 5 cannon, and ten or a dozen partereroes and swizels. I took a valuable horse, said to have been rode express from Carolina to Lord Dunmore, and was claimed when taken by Major Bird of the Royal Regiment of Ethiopians. The horse I send to you for your further disposal. As for the other effects, we have no waggons to receive them. We are much in want of a couple of waggons and teams, as we could not, in our present situation remove, if we should even be recalled.

I hope you will be pleased to excuse the hurry with which I write, as it is at this time unavoidable. I have however endeavoured to give you the result of my enquiries and observations, and am, Sir, very respectfully

Your most obedient Servant

FRANK EPPES.

PROCEEDINGS.

At a Council of Officers held at Head Quarters, Williamsburg, by order of his Excellency Major General Charles Lee, April 6th 1776.

Present :

Col. WILLIAM WOODFORD, President

Col^l MORDECAI BUCKNER, Col^l WILLIAM CHRISTIAN.

Lieut. Col^l THOMAS ELLIOT, Lieut. Col. THOM^s BULLIT.

The Council on considering the subject matter, maturely, and after weighing the reasons, for and against the removal of the Inhabitants of this Colony, residing below the great bridge in Norfolk County, to some place or places higher up the country, are of opinion that such a removal, with all the stock in the same bounds, would be greatly for the benefit of the war. But this the Council wish not to recommend, unless proper provision could be made for these unfortunate people after their removal.

WILLIAM WOODFORD, President.

ROBERT MORRIS TO GENERAL GATES.

Phila. April 6, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I have been long in debt for your favor of the 10th February, which you'll probably think the more inexcusable as it is a letter of business. The order it contained for four hundred and twenty four Dollars has been paid and is at your Credit.

Was ever the British arms so disgraced as by Mr. How's Inglorious retreat from Boston. This wou'd at any other time or in any other cause have been a most mortifying reflection to you and me, but as things are

now circumstanced I do most sincerely congratulate you on that important Event and altho my scenes of action are in another line, I almost envy every one of you that share the glory of driving them from their den. You may depend that infinite pains has been taken and is still continued to obtain ample supplies of arms & ammunition but our enemies were before hand with us and have so guarded all avenues that, it is with the utmost hazard & difficulty we succeed, many attempts have totally failed however nothing will be left undone in this respect that can be done, the rest must be left to Fate.

I suppose you know that Doct^r Franklin Chase & two Mr. Carrols are gone to Canada, and I hope a sufficient force will be there to put Quebec under their direction for I agree in opinion with you, that Country must be ours at all events: should it fall into the hands of the enemy they will soon raise a nest of Hornets on our backs that will sting us to the quick.

We are plagued for hard money to support the war in that country and must by some means or other bring them to take our paper.

Our Friend Lee has taken possession of the Palace at W^{ms}burg, which I fancy will be not much approved of by the Gentlemen of that country, however he will soon be called for N^o Carolina—if it be true that Clinton has effected a Landing with 1500 men at Wilmington and thrown up entrenchments there. In short the scene thickens, and if our Enemies can find men we may expect to be attacked in all quarters, but to do this they must Certainly have recourse to Foreigners as they cannot meet success in the recruiting service in any of those Kingdoms.—Where the plague are these Commissioners?—if they are to come what is it that detains them? It is time we should be on a certainty and know positively whether the Libertyes of America can be established and secured by reconciliation, or whether we must totally renounce connection with Great Britain & fight our way to a total Independance. Whilst we

continue thus firmly United amongst ourselves theres no doubt but either of these points may be carried, but it seems to me, We shall quarrell about which of these roads is best to pursue unless the Commissioners appear soon and lead us into the first path, therefore I wish them to come, dreading nothing so much as even an appearance of division amongst ourselves.

I hear M^{rs} Gates is returned to N. York & thence conclude that you will soon follow. May happiness and success attend you is the sincere wish of D^r Sir

Your obd^t Serv^t.

ROB^t MORRIS.

FROM CAPT. JAMES INNES.

York, April y^e 7th. 1776.

I have the honor to inform your Excellency, that that there are at this place, two 18 pounders, two 12 pounders one 9 pounder & four 6 pounders; but unfortunately they are at present in a very unfit Condition for service. We are endeavouring to put them in the best repair we can, and hope to have them all, or as many of them as you may think proper, mounted in a few days, as we have no less than twenty six artificers belonging to the companies at this port, at present employ'd in that business—on the Gloucester shore, there are about 15 pieces of the foll^e sizes: one 24. pounder, one 12. pounder, one 9. Ditto, four 6 pounders, and eight 18 pounders; all of which are exceedingly injur'd by the salt water to which they have been exposed for many years; those I shall prove tomorrow and hope to be able to procure artificers enough from the Regiment stationed at Gloucester Court House under the command of Colonel Dangerfield to mount them in a short time. When I left Williamsburg, I omitted to bring with me any powder, supposing that it might be had at this place, but I am inform'd by the Commanding officer, that there is scarcely 100^{lbs}

in the Garrison, and for my purpose, at least, four times that quantity will be necessary for which your Excellency will be pleased to give an Order to the Keeper of the Magazine.

I remain &c. &c.

JAMES INNES.

FROM LIEUT. COLONEL READ.

Suffolk April y^e 7th 1776.

SIR,

Upon information that the Negroes in this part of the Country, stole the Boats lying in the Rivers and Creeks, and made their escape to Lord Dunmore in the Night, I detach'd twenty five men with orders to examine the different landings and coves on the Western branch of Nansemond River & Chuckatuck, to remove all the small craft they could find and place them under the care of our lower guard with positive instructions to destroy all such boats as the Owners thereof should refuse to aid in removing, or attempt to secrete; the party have just returned and bring Account that they have removed a considerable number of boats, Pettiaugers, Canoes, and punts to the guard, many of the inhabitants dragg'd off their boats & hid 'em; two or three were obstinate and their vessels were destroy'd; I am much at a loss in providing for the fourth Regiment, Col^e Stephens not being down, necessarily suspends me in directing many things that are wanting for it; we have neither quarter master, surgeons &c &c. which obliges me to trouble your Excellency, and beg your directions; the companies of musquetry that compose the fourth Regiment, by order of the Committee of Safety, are all rais'd in the adjoining Counties of this station; at best they are but indifferent men, and very few guns, and those not fit for service; your Excellency

will excuse me if I point out an unavoidable inconvenience that will arise from continuing those Companies at Suffolk, their Families and acquaintance being all around them, they take off their attention from their duty, and are eternally petitioning for leave to visit their families. I need not mention the train of mischiefs that result from raw soldiers being too near to their idle and seductive comrades. Your Excellency will favour me with any Commands that may relate to my post or Regiment.

I am with respect

Your Excellencys Ob^t humble Serv^t.

ISAAC READ.

FROM HENRY LEE, JR.

RESPECTED GENERAL,

I cannot but congratulate my country on your appointment to the supreme military command in the southern district of N. America; & believe me sincere, when I acquaint you that this event is attended with no common joy among the inhabitants of this part of Virginia. But as the subject of this letter is private, pray excuse this digression, and allow me to tender you my thanks for the facility with which you complied with my request made you by Col. F. L. Lee. At the same time I must assure you, that I shall be particularly attentive to the discharge of any office you may think proper to honour me with. I intend to repair to Head quarters immediately. In the meantime allow me to subscribe myself,

With respect & affection,

Your most ob^t H. Serv^t

HENRY LEE, Jun.

Dumfries, April 7th, 1776.

ADVERTISEMENT.

Williamsburg, 8th April, 1776.

Advertisement del^d W^m Purdie, & Hunter & Dixon to
be published in their next papers.

As General Lee must in great measure regulate the motions of the Continental Troops under his command according to the internal force of the Colony, the Committees of the different Counties are requested to send in to head Quarters a return of their minute men, with the state and condition of their Arms.

TO CAPTAIN GRIER.

Williamsburg, April y^e 8th 1776.

SIR,

It is most unfortunate that when the small pox broke out, you should have marched from York, where it did break out; as your entrance into this Province will occasion a greater alarm and consternation than would the appearance of ten thousand men from Russia, it is inconceivable how weak these people are on this subject, I must therefore desire that you will not approach the Town 'till further Orders. Cap^t Nicholas will look out for Quarters for you, in the most commodious manner he can. You must put yourself entirely under his direction.

I am Sir

Yours &c.

CHARLES LEE

TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF
VIRGINIA.Williamsburg April y^e 8th 1776.

SIR,

As not only propriety and decency, but an earnest desire to act in concert with so respectable a Body as the Committee of Safety, injoin me to lay before 'em my thoughts on some measures necessary to be taken for the defense and very being of the Colony.

After having considered the number and quality of your troops, the state and condition of your arms, artillery, & ordnance apparatus, the weakness and disadvantages you labour under from the numerous intersecting Rivers, the Multitude of your Slaves, &c., I suppose to myself that the Enemy will make this Province their immediate object, and since the defeat of their schemes in N. Carolina by Colonel Caswell, it is y^e most natural supposition, I say Sir, after having considered your strength and weakness, no circumstance appears to me so seriously alarming as the disposition and situation of the Inhabitants of the lower Counties Norfolk and Princess Ann; but that I might not rest entirely on my own opinion, I have called together some of the Field Officers who are best acquainted with that district, and they unanimously agree that it will be difficult if not impossible to secure and preserve the Province unless these Inhabitants, thus dangerously disposed, are removed from the very spot where they can do such infinite mischief. I am sensible Sir, that their removal must be attended with very considerable difficulties, and perhaps much distress to Individuals; but when the preservation & being of the Province, if not of the whole Continent are at stake, were these difficulties and distresses a thousand times greater, they must be submitted to. I am in hopes therefore that the Gentlemen of the Committee will immediately devise some means for removing these People

as well as their Stock; at least their Wives & Children should be carried into a place of security, as hostages for the good behaviour of the Husbands and Fathers. I should be extremely sorry to find myself under the necessity of destroying all their Cattle, Stores, and Granaries, and forcing the Inhabitants at the point of the bayonet from their homes, but unless their Removal can be accomplished by some other means, I shall be constrained to these harsh methods, as otherwise I cannot be answerable for the execution of the important trust committed to my hands.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect

Your most ob^t hu^{ble} Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To the Hon^{ble} the President

of the Committee of Safety.

FROM MAJOR HENDRICKS.

Hampton, 9th April, 1776.

PLEASE YOUR EXCELLENCY:

I received your favor of the 5th Inst. and have agreeable to your desire taken measures to have the cannon removed from the Fort, tho' the task will be tedious, being obliged to remove them a considerable distance back into a Creek; as I think it would be imprudent to take them off in the Road, where the Tenders are constantly plying about, and the Liverpool Frigate now lying in view—there are three six pounders, two of which have their trunnions broke off, the other pretty good, one 9 pounder, trunnions off, nine 18 pounders, two of which have their nutts broke, and one 12 pounder not good. On examining our people I find none of them have ever made any carriages or know anything about the matter; but on enquiry I find a Man in Town who says he has made many, and who

seems from his character to be capable of the task. We have no intrenching tools of any kind, or any Smiths here who are capable of making any. By Capⁿ Fitz Gerald (who hands you this) be good enough to inform me if I shall engage the man I mention to mount the guns, all the materials for which can be got here, except the Iron, which I presume can be obtained at Williamsburg. I have no news to communicate. The Enemy's Tenders always in view, and frequently carrying up prizes to Norfolk. What a pity we have no privateers to manage these pirates.

I have the Honor to be

Your most obedient H^{ble} Servant,

JAMES HENDRICKS.

To His Ex^y Major Gen^l Lee.

TO LIEUT. COLONEL READ.

Williamsburg, April 9th 1776.

SIR,

I have just received your's of April y^e 7th. and much approve of your conduct with respect to the securing the boats &c. it is indeed a most important concern and some means ought to be devised to constrain the Inhabitants to give in a return of what boats are in their possession; for this purpose perhaps it might be proper to threaten 'em, in case of non-compliance to burn their houses and destroy their stock; but you who are better acquainted with the nature of the people, than I am, will best judge how these threats would operate; it must be left therefore to your discretion. I wou'd relieve the fourth Regiment immediately, but have not as yet troops sufficient for that purpose, and at the same time for carrying on the necessary works here; the instant a sufficient number arrive, they shall march, a company of Muhlenburg's will be soon down with you; perhaps they have already reach'd you; I shall direct

one Company of the fourth (you may select which you chuse), to march up the Country as far as Smithfield: in this piece meal manner the whole may be relieved.

I am Sir,

Your most Obedient Servant

CHARLES LEE.

Lieu^t Col^o Read.

at Suffolk.

To COLONEL MUHLENBURG.

Williamsburg, April y^e 9th. 1776.

SIR,

Two Companies of your Regiment lately march'd through this Town compleat and in good order, one of which I ordered immediately down to Suffolk; the other to halt at Smithfield to guard a quantity of provisions; when the Company of your's arrives, I desire you will order one of the fourth to march up to Smithfield to relieve the other company of yours; the Company of the fourth you order to march must be left to the selection of Colonel Read I must request, Sir, that you will consult Col. Reed on the best method to be pursued in order to constrain the Inhabitants to deliver up their Boats, Canoes, &^c, as Colonel Read has been long on the spot, he must be acquainted with the nature and disposition of the People, and of course be able to judge in what manner it will be proper to proceed.

I am Sir,

With the greatest respect your most ob^t
hum^{ble} Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

To Col^l Muhlenburg

Commanding the Post at Suffolk.

FROM THE COMMITTEE OF SECRECY FOR THE PROVINCE
OF NORTH CAROLINA.

Halifax 9th April, 1776.

SIR,

The intelligence and advice in your letter to the President of the Provincial Council we consider of the utmost importance, and shall immediately dispatch a copy of it to General Moore with directions to forward it in the most safe and secret manner to Mr. Hopkins, tho' we have no intelligence of his being at Cape Fear. Inclosed we send you a copy of General Moore's last return, the general returns of the Militia are not yet compleat. The Provincial Congress now sitting have voted two additional Regiments with three companies of light Horse, over and above the three Regiments ordered to be raised in this Province by the Continental Congress. We are happy that a Gen^l of your acknowledged abilities is appointed to preside over the Military Department in this part of the Continent, and wish it may be soon in your power to visit this province.

We are with the greatest Respect,

Sir,

Your most Obed^t Servants

MATTHEW LOCK, THOMAS BURKE,

A. NASH, THOMAS JONES,

JOHN WEBB, SAM. JOHNSON,

JOHN ASHE.

*The Committee of Secrecy for the
Province of North Carolina.*

To His Excellency Major General Lee.

FROM GENERAL ROBERT HOWE.

Halifax April 10th 1776.

SIR,

I had set out for this place before the Express reached Edenton, he had therefore to follow, and came here on Sunday. The President of the Convention being unluckily out of town has detained him 'till to-day. Before I was honored with your letter, I had sent to the southward in search of Admiral Hopkins, who I heard was at Bulls Island in South Carolina, and have it much to lament that the report was not true, as I had given information of the situation of our good friend Governor Martin and the set of Infernals with him, and how easy and beneficial a conquest, the weakness of their ships, and the great quantity of military stores with which they were freighted would make them. I sympathize with you exceedingly in the anxiety you express on the uncertainty of your situation. I have for several months past been in a similar perplexity. I have also been embarrassed by the *prudence* and *economy* you speak of, and have by reiterated remonstrances endeavored to shew the absolute necessity of providing instantly every requisite material. The disposition of the troops I knew not of 'till a few days before I left Williamsburg, the excellence of it struck me forcibly. I should however have ventured an alteration, had not your arrival been momentarily expected. I beg leave, Sir, to mention to you a matter I have several times mentioned to the members of the Committee of Safety and which tho' I think of importance, they have not as I know of, attended to. The number of Rivers which water Virginia, and which in the present state of affairs, are unhappily too navigable, gives the Enemy an opportunity so as to arrange their ships as to make it difficult for us (if some method is not fallen upon) to assist our friends if attacked on the opposite side with our long fatiguing marches, and such loss of time, as might give them leisure to effect their purposes before we could

arrive. The Committee I know are building boats, but they are of the large Row Galley kind, which cannot serve us to get over in, in cases of necessity, because when ships take possession of the River, the Row Gallies for their own security will be obliged to run into Creeks, where they will be shut in and rendered useless, when we most want them. I mentioned to the Committee that a number of small Boats of the Battoe kind, which might be taken out or put into the water occasionally, and removed with the army, wherever necessary, were, in my opinion, absolutely requisite; and these Boats I have been well informed can be so constructed as to carry twenty or thirty men, and yet be moved easily and expeditiously by only two horses; and with these, I conceive no Vigilance, or activity of the Enemy would prevent our communication. If this, Sir, should appear proper, and the Committee have not taken any steps in it, your influence, would, I doubt not, prevail upon them to begin. I again beg your excuse for this liberty. I have been industrious to obtain information as to Mr. Clinton: all I can learn is, that he is at Cape Fear; that they think his numbers about 700; that he expects more troops hourly, that those he has with him land every day upon a small Island, called Battery Island, under the guns of the men of war, & too far from the shore to be annoyed: that they seem more attentive in training their men to Street firing, than to any other part of exercise; that Brigad^r General Moore wth part of his Regiment, a part of mine, and as many minute men and militia as in all make up 1800, are attending their motions; that Col. Caswell of the Craven Minute Battalion was within a few miles of Moore with 600 men, and that the militia were preparing to assist him if necessary. What farther I hear of of consequence, you shall immediately be acquainted with. I have been much plagued to get my people to continue in the service; with some management however I got many of them to enlist before I left Edenton, and L^t Col. Patten wrote me to-day that many more

have entered, and that he makes no doubt the rest will follow, as out of the 350 with him, above 250 were inlisted, but not without the positive condition, that they should have ten or twelve days furlough. This I consented to, as I thought it better than not to get them at all, and as at any rate they would be sooner embodied, & be much preferable to new raised troops; added to this, the great fatigue (so patiently endured) of a hard inclement Winter's Campaign gave them a claim to some little indulgence, and made Rest for a short time necessary to them. I am sorry to inform you that our arms are not so many or so good as I wish, nor our stock of ammunition as large, and that our cannon are few, the number I did not know, but will endeavor to be informed of. Our Convention seem intent upon procuring every requisite article, and will, I doubt not, exert every possible means. They have determined to raise three more Regular Regiments at least, and have lost all idea of expense, in the zeal of preparing for defence. They request my stay here some time longer, as they will have frequent occasion to refer to me, as to Army Regulations. How happy would it make me to see you here, both upon my own account, and upon that of the service, as I am certain your presence and the information you could give them, would both forward and perfect their operations very considerably. May I, dear Sir, expect this pleasure, and when? At any rate, let me entreat to be honored by a line, either by Post, Express, or by any other opportunity. I shall take it as a favor. I shall but in my Duty, and you may be assured it will be my inclination, to send you instant information of every circumstance of importance, & to solicit that aid you so kindly offer, and which it is probable this Country may soon find so absolutely necessary. Oblige me, Sir, by believing that I am, with the greatest Respect

Your most Obed^t humble Servant

ROBERT HOWE.

Major Genl. Lee.

FROM LIEUT. COLONEL READ.

Suffolk, April ye 10th 1776.

SIR,

Agreeable to your directions to Doctor Skinner, he is now at his place; and has diligently visited our numerous sick; his attendance was timeous, and from his Abilities I am flattered the sick Troops will derive great Relief, the goodness and care which your Excellency has shewn on this occasion, meets with the grateful thanks of your Soldiers & Officers. The Doctor encloses a List of the sick in his Letter to you, which comes under my cover, also a letter with a List of medicines to Doctor Hall: we are making, with every dispatch, conveniences for the comfort & reception of the unfortunate sick; the bulk of invalids belong to the 2d. Regiment, proceeding in a great measure from the severity of the winter, the new recruits are beginning to complain, and I am fearful, will afford too many objects for the Hospital. I have nothing new to inform your Excellency of. The enemy confine themselves with much caution within their Lines, & under the protection of their ships.

I have the honor, &c.

ISAAC READ.

To His Ex^y General Lee.

FROM GENERAL ROBERT HOWE.

SIR,

Since I wrote my other letter, a Report in appearance not improbable says, that our fleet have fallen in with Gove^r Martin, and that they have taken him; if I get a confirmation of this news you shall instantly hear of it, if you receive it any other way before I write you again, you will lay me under obligation not to let it linger a moment. As I hope your arrival

here I have taken the liberty to procure an apartment for you at M^r Thomsons, a private gentleman of great hospitality. You will therefore please to drive directly to his house. All hired lodgings and Publick Houses are taken up, and if they were not quite full, are so crowded that you would find it insupportably inconvenient and disagreeable.—Some of our people at Cape Fear have had a small brush with a party of the Enemy who ventur'd on shore, & have taken an officer and five or six men. Gen^l Moore writes me that two Batteries are erected at Wilmington of a few sixes and nines, which he thinks sufficient in all probability to keep off any ship which can come up to that Town, as there is not above ten feet water. The Enemy have burnt the House of M^r Dry, Collector of Port Brunswick, with all his furniture, &c &c &c why this wanton piece of cruelty no one can account as he is a Kings officer, and had never taken one step against Government. They have done me the honor to dis-furnish my House, as a Gentleman from that part of the country informs me heard, of chairs, tables, glasses, china and plate. All they took is suppos'd to amount to £1500—he says it is reported that they destroy'd all my Private letters & accounts, as if determined to injure me without Benefit to themselves or to their cause. I console myself with the hope I shall be up with them by and by; they were it seems prevented by a party of men from doing further mischief. I would be much obliged to you to inform me to whom in Philadelphia I had best write to procure me a good tent & other camp necessities, and give instructions as to size, &c &c &c for all my Camp apparatus must have been taken with my furniture. I beg your Excuse for this Freedom, and I am Sir, with great respect,

Your most obed^t humble Serv^t.

ROBERT HOWE.

Halifax 10th. April, 1776

FROM THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY.

Williamsburg, April y^e 10th 1776.

To the Hon^{ble} Major General Lee, Commander in Chief
of the Continental Army in the Southern District.

The Committee of Safety taking into consideration the state of this Colony, and supposing that General Lee may wish to be fully advised of all local circumstances, and with the steps that have been taken, by the General Convention of this Colony or the Committee of Safety under their appointment, respecting the Army, have thought it proper to represent that the Forces raised by the General Convention of Virginia, for the defence of this Colony, as well as the two old Regiments then rais'd, as the seven new Battalions to be raised, were by Ordinance of Convention put under the direction of this Committee, and this Board was directed to provide for them arms, ammunition, Tents, Bedding, Cloathing, Provisions and all necessaries, in such manner as the circumstances of this Country would admit. The Cloathing to be paid for by the soldiery, all the rest to be furnished at the expence of the Public.

That by a clause in this Ordinance founded on a hope, that the whole nine Battalions would be taken into Continental pay, it is ordained, "That the whole should be under the command of one Major General, two Brigadier Generals, to be appointed by Congress: & the Field and other Officers to be appointed and Commissioned by Convention with a proviso, 'That all appointments and Commissions of Convention should become void when Congress should commission the same officers or appoint another in his stead.'"

The Convention also considering the place of attack by the Enemy uncertain, and knowing the whole coast from Norfolk to Alexandria on Potowmack equally exposed, were pleased to direct the stations of the troops as follows; two Regiments on the south side of James River, two between York and James Rivers, two be-

tween York and Rappahannock Rivers, and two in the Northern Neck, with a proviso—"That on any emergency, the Committee of Safety should have power to call them from those Stations, but so soon as the exigency ceased, they should be order'd back to their respective stations."

That in pursuance of this command of Convention this Committee directed the rendezvous of the eight battalions (the ninth being raised for the sole defence of the Eastern shore) at convenient places within the districts described, leaving it to the Commanding Officers of each Battalion to station them at any place therein, they should judge best for the service. And in pursuance of the direction of Convention, this Committee made Contracts for victualling these Battalions by the Ration at an agreed price, to be furnished at the particular stations and varying in price according to the conveniency of each station. These Contractors have accordingly laid in provisions in proportion only to the number of troops allotted to such stations, & now serve all the Troops, the Congress having as yet made no provision for such purpose. The Committee have also purchased Cloathing & Necessaries to a very considerable amount, & stored them under the directions of proper persons as Commissaries of Stores at this place & at Fredericksburg at the head of Rappahannock River, a place through which all stores from the Northward must come; Central with respect to our back country, whence a considerable quantity of Linen is expected, and most convenient for supplying the two Regiments in the Northern Neck, and one on the South side of Rappahannock River. Out of these Stores the whole eight Battalions have been indiscriminately furnished with Cloathing and Necessaries, ever since it has been known that six of them have been taken upon the Continental Establishment—the latter have also been paid out of our Treasury from necessity to avoid any uneasiness, through the want of a Continental Fund here. This Committee being advised that General Lee

has been pleased to order the four Northern Battalions to this place, think it expedient to lay this short state of matters before him (wishing to refer him to the Ordinance of Convention, for his fuller information) with a view of learning from the General, how far he expects this Board should be assisting in the Departments heretofore assigned to this Committee by Convention, observing that all the Contracts for victualling the Troops must become void, so soon as the troops are finally removed from the particular Stations. And we beg leave farther to observe, that the inhabitants of this Colony in general are badly armed, & that those in particular in and about the several stations, having spared their best arms to the soldiery intended for their immediate protection, will be more exposed than ever & may be exceedingly alarmed when the troops are called at a great distance from them while the measures of the enemy, or their intended place of Attack are altogether unknown.

This Committee beg General Lee to be assured, that they place entire confidence in his great military Abilities, & sincerely congratulate the inhabitants of this Colony on his acceptance of the chief Command here; and will as far as in their power confine themselves to such a line of conduct as shall not interfere with his better judgment; & therefore will most cheerfully Co-Operate with General Lee in every thing which he may think they can be of Service, & to this end they wish to have a Conference with General Lee upon the subject matter of this representation, & upon all other Occasions when he shall judge it necessary.

Signed for, & by Order of the Committee of Safety.
JOHN PAGE, V. P.

To the Hon^{ble} Major General Lee, &c.

FROM COLONEL HUGH MERCER.

Fredericksburg, 10th April, 1776.

SIR,

In obedience to your orders of the 2d instant, my Regiment is on the march from Alexandria & Dumfries, we are much retarded by daily succeed^d Rains, which have render'd the Roads almost impassable, but will use our utmost endeavour to be soon at Williamsbourg.

Mr Nevill Commissary of Provisions for the 3rd Regiment has a quantity of Beef and Pork salted up at Alexandria: also 1500 Barrels of Flour. I have directed him to attend us with all necessary Supplies to Williamsburg. He begs to know your pleasure as to conveying the whole of his stores to that place. The Marine Department at Alexandria would probably require what he has on hand packed up, and the whole expence of waggoning so far would be saved.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your most Obedient Servant,

HUGH MERCER.

To The Hon^{ble} Major General Lee.

PROCEEDINGS.

In Committee of Safety at Williamsburg,
April xth 1776.

The Committee taking under their most serious Consideration a letter from Major General Lee, urging the necessity of removing the Inhabitants of Norfolk and Princess Anne Counties, from the Neighbourhood of our Enemy, together with several letters from the Secretary of State lately intercepted, and other Papers; and having been repeatedly informed upon oath, by every person that has escaped from Lord Dunmore's Ships and the fleet at Norfolk, that there is a constant

intercourse kept up between the Inhabitants on the Norfolk side, who furnish the Enemy with Provisions, and give Intelligence of all our measures, which conduct has been frequently experienced and complained of by the Officers at our Posts in those Counties: This Committee impressed by the foregoing and many other pregnant proofs, with a full conviction of the Inimical disposition of many of the Inhabitants in y^e Neighbourhood of our Enemy, and convinced that all others who may be well disposed, and really attached to the common cause must be exposed to the depredations of the Enemy, Do unanimously Resolve and Order that all the Inhabitants of Norfolk and Princess Anne Counties, at present residing between the Enemy and our Posts at Great Bridge and Kemps' Landing, and in a direct line from Kemp's landing to the Ocean, be immediately removed to some interior parts of this Colony, and that those who are unable to remove themselves, be assisted by the Public. And for the better effecting such removal, It is further ordered that all the live stock of the said Inhabitants be immediately taken possession of by our army, and removed to a place of Safety for the use of the owners, and such part thereof as the owners may be willing to part with, be purchased by the Commissaries for the use of the Forces, except, where it may happen to be the property of such as have already retired to, or may hereafter join Lord Dunmore.

This Committee considering the Intelligence contained in the aforementioned Letters from the Secretary of State, & reflecting on the uniform policy of the British Court, and the measures lately adopted in North Carolina, are fully convinced that our enemies are solely encouraged to make their wicked attempts upon such Colonies, wherein they can expect the best assistance from the persons disaffected to the American Cause, and are of opinion that the most likely means of securing this Colony from such attempts, will be to remove all suspicious persons beyond the Influence of the Enemy. This Board do therefore order, that all persons

within the Counties of Norfolk and Princess Anne, who have heretofore repaired to Lord Dunmore's Standard, and taken the oath prescribed by him, who thereby may have a reliance on them to aid his measures, do immediately remove themselves to some interior parts of this Colony, at least Thirty miles from the Enemy, and the better to enforce such removal, It is further ordered, that all the male Slaves of such suspected persons, above the age of Thirteen, and also the like slaves of the persons within the Limits afore described, be immediately taken into the custody and safe keeping of some Officer at our Posts in Norfolk and Princess Anne, to be conveyed to some place off Navigation, & to be returned to the Owners after they shall have settled at some secure place upon the further order of this Committee.

Resolved, that a sum of money not exceeding one thousand pounds, be advanced to Willis Riddie, James Murdaugh, and Andrew Meade, Gentlemen, or any two of them, to be applied to the assistance of such poor persons, as in their opinion may not be able to remove themselves; and the said Willis Riddick, James Murdaugh, and Andrew Meade, are hereby empowered and requested to make proper provision for these necessary purposes, and in general to superintend this important business, and be assisting in the execution thereof in the most humane manner the nature of the case will admit of. And it is earnestly recommended to all persons, who can provide Habitations for such so removing to give notice thereof in the Virginia Gazette, as speedily as possible.

JOHN PAGE, V. P.

Attest:

JOHN BECKLEY, Ass^t Clk.

TO COLONEL MERCER.

Williamsburg April y^e 10th 1776.

SIR,

When I order'd your Regiment to march down to Williamsburg, it was not my intention to strip the Northern Neck of the Troops necessary for its defence: I proposed to replace your Regiment with Col^l Dangerfield's then in the Provincial Pay: this exchange was founded on a very solid reason, for had it been necessary to march a Body out of the Province the Continental Forces alone were at my disposal—but since my Letter the whole have been put on the Continental Establishment; Dangerfield's can be march'd out of the Province therefore as well as your's; for this consideration, I must desire that you will remain with your Regiment for the defence of this district, as you are a much better judge of the manner it will be proper to station them, to answer the end proposed, than I can possibly be; for instance, whether the whole or only a part at Alexandria, I leave entirely to your good sense and discretion.

I am Sir,

Your most ob^t H^{ble} Servt

CHARLES LEE.

To Colonel Mercer,
Dumfries.

INSTRUCTIONS TO BRIGADIER GENERAL ARMSTRONG.

W^{ms}burg Ap^l y^e 10th 1776.

It has ever been the opinion of General Lee that instructions to an officer how to act in a distant command is impertinence and mere pedantry. He desires therefore Brigadier General Armstrong to use his own judg-

ment and discretion in his command: He only requires that immediately upon his arrival in South Carolina, He (General Armstrong) should make out returns of the strength, condition, and quality of the different Corps, and in general of the force of the whole Province; that he should likewise inform himself not only of the strength of Georgia, but of the politicks and disposition of the People, and transmit the substance of his information on these subjects to General Lee, directed to Brigadier General Howe in North Carolina, who will forward 'em to head Quarters wherever they happen to be. He hopes and recommends it to General Armstrong that he will be jealous of ceding an inch of ground; as in Slave Countries so much depends on opinion, and the opinion which the slaves will entertain of our superiority or inferiority, will naturally keep pace, with our maintaining or giving ground: for these reasons, Charleston must be defended with the utmost obstinacy: if the enemy appear on the coast of South Carolina, and show an intention of lodging themselves in that Province, the Brigadier is to send an express immediately to the Major General, & he is to assure the Inhabitants as an encouragement to act with vigor, that a strong force shall be immediately march'd to their assistance.

TO COLONEL MUHLENBERG.

Williamsburg April y^e 11th 1776.

SIR,

This will be delivered to you by Doctor Brown of the 2nd. Doctor Skinner must be sent up in his room to Williamsburg—I desire, Sir, you will contrive to make room for as many troops in and about Suffolk as possible. I intend in a very few days to visit your

Post, so shall not trouble you at present with any instructions.

I am Sir,

Your most ob^t Servant

CHARLES LEE.

P. S.—When you think you are strong enough in your Post at Suffolk, I desire you will detach two hundred men to post themselves near Brickels at the head of the western Branch, to prevent the Enemies procuring any supplies from that quarter: whatever cattle and horses belonging to Tories are sent to you from Col^l Eppes, you are to take charge of for y^e public Service. I must desire you will order some oats and fodder to be provided for the use of my horses, on my arrival at your post.

TO LIEUT. COLONEL EPPES.

Williamsburg April y^e 11th 1776.

SIR,

You will excuse my answering so concisely your letter of the sixth—I have ordered down two teams as you desire—I shall post two hundred men at Brickels—you must seize Robert Shedden (do'nt spare one) and the other dangerous Tories and send 'em to Williamsburg, drive y^e horses and cattle belonging to the Enemies and Tories to Suffolk; Colonel Mulenberg has orders to take charge of them; have these Rascals no blankets or bedclothes of any kind? if they have send them to the hospital at Suffolk for the use of the sick. I must now Sir, beg that you will take the pains to inform yourself, but that you will do it with the utmost secrecy (for reasons I shall hereafter give you) of the most convenient part of Norfolk and Princess Ann County for the cantoonment of a considerable body of troops, for instance two thousand men, in as compact a circle as possible; you will oblige me in pro-

viding some oats and fodder for the use of my horses, to be ready on my arrival, I hope to see you in a very few days.

I am Sir,

Your very humble Servant,

CHARLES LEE,
Major General

To Lt. Col. Eppes, Kemp's Landing.

FROM MAJOR SPOTSWOOD.

Suffolk, April 11th 1776.

HON^{BLE} SIR

L^t Hughes of the 5th Company in the 2nd Regiment, was arrested by me for refusing in presence of the whole Battalion, to do his Duty as an officer on the Parade. He was tried by a Court Martial, and ordered to make concession at the head of the Regiment, which he refused to do, and sent me word he had resigned his Commission. I then through Major Parker, informed the Gentleman that he had no right, nor should he resign without leave, nor be released from his confinement until the sentence of the Court Martial was complied with; and that, if I had arrested him unjustly there was a power above me to apply to for redress. Many of the officers joined me in opinion, that the Commanding Officer here, had a right to order another Court Martial to sit on Mr. Hughes. I immediately applied to Colonel Muhlenburg, who told me, it would give him great pleasure if I would state the matter to you; and gave for Reason why he would wish me to do so, that all his Regiment here consisted of Rifle Companies, and that if Mr. Hughes was to be acquitted, which he seems apprehensive would be the case was he to be tried again, that his officers would think as Mr. Hughes does, that all Officers Command-

ing Rifle Companies, as they were raised as—Light Infantry, that no Commanding Officer has a right to make them do parade Duty. Mr. Hughes remains still in confinement, and shall continue so, until I hear from you. This is not the first time this Gentⁿ has put on these airs. While I command here, or when I do command any set of men, I will never require anything unreasonable of them, but what I do require, I am determined shall be complied with. I am but young in military knowledge, and wish much to be in Williamsburg, where I think I could improve myself. If I have been remiss in my duty since your arrival, which I believe I have in not sending a return of the 2d Regiment up sooner, hope you'll impute it to inexperience.

I am Sir, With great Respect

Yours &c

ALEX^R SPOTSWOOD.

To Major Gen. Lee.

FROM DR. A. SKINNER.

Suffolk, April 11th 1776.

SIR,

The Situation of the Sick here is truly deplorable, distributed about the Town in little unwholesome huts. They have no one to attend to them but a soldier, who prepares their common allowance in the most coarse and uncleanly manner, nothing to lay upon but the hard floor with only a Blanket to cover themselves. The filth and nastiness of the Huts in which they are placed is sufficient to produce a pestilence, and I am greatly surprised the sick list does not amount to a much larger number, tho' by the bye you will find from the enclosed Return the number very considerable for the quantity of Troops at this post. Kemps Landing and the Bridge are I dare say in much the same situation. From the General Tendency of the disorders in this part of Vir-

ginia to Run into a putrid state I am apprehensive the approaching Summer may produce such as will be Infectious, and perhaps prove more fatal to our Troops than the sword of the Enemy, and nothing but the strictest and most minute attention to cleanliness about the Barracks or Tents, and neatness in the persons of the Soldiery can possibly prevent it. The necessity of this is a matter which our young and inexperienced officers are totally unacquainted with & inattentive to. Tho' I make no doubt they would chearfully attend to it, if put within the line of their duty or recommended to them by one they put such Implicit confidence in as I am assured they unanimously do in the present Commanding Officer of the Virginia Troops. The Colonels Muhlenbergh & Reed have procur'd me as much Orznabuggs as will make make fifty Beds & sheets which are now about and will be finish'd in five or six days. I have joiners likewise about Cradles for the Beds to stand on, and am endeavouring to procure other necessities for a Hospital on this scale which I am in hopes to complete in ten or fifteen days, if a proper house can be procured in that time. The Town affords two or three of them large enough for the purpose. But its situation which is in a sandy bottom surrounded almost with marsh and swamps render it remarkably unwholesome, besides the inconveniences always attending a Hospital nigh the Camp, but more especially in a place where infectious disorders will probably be frequent. There are likewise some houses a few miles from the Town fit for the purpose, but they are all occupied, and without particular directions I should not think myself justifiable in insisting upon them. A plantation about two miles from hence directly on the road to the Bridge has a very convenient house and large out houses fitted for the purpose. But unless the post at the Bridge is meant to be kept up, it will perhaps be expos'd to the Enemy. A surgeon and two or three mates, will be necessary to attend such an Hospital fix'd here, which might likewise receive the sick from the bridge

is such as the Regimental Surgeons will not have proper conveniences for, or such whose disorders will not make it prudent to keep in Camp. But no Surgeon whose abilities can be in the least depended upon can be prevailed to attend for less than what the Convention allow'd in the first rais'd Regiments, i, e, 10/ p. diem, 3 rations, and forage for a horse. Neither can mates be had for less than the former allowance, i, e, 5/ & 3 rations p. diem (forage for a horse was allow'd, but that perhaps might be got over with them) Doctor Ramsay one of the oldest and most respectable practitioners in Norfolk is now here, & would undertake the direction of it upon the above terms—his abilities as well as uniform attachment to & sufferings in the present contest for freedom strongly recommend him. If you should approve of him you will be pleas'd to inclose a proper authority for his taking the matter under his care with such instructions as you may think necessary. In the mean [time] I shall have every convenience for the sick prepar'd ready to be plac'd in any house either in the Town or Country as you may think best. Medicines we are very badly off for. Bark that essential Article in a warm climate we are wholly without. I have sent up to shop at W^{ms}burgh to supply our immediate wants. But the quantity there is already trifling even for that place alone. Would it not be worth the trouble of sending to Carolina to endeavour to get a part of the medicines taken by Coll^o Caswell? The quantity which is said to have been taken is considerably more than they can want immediately.

I am Respectfully

Your Excellencies most ob^t Servant

A. SKINNER.

TO RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Williamsburg, April 12. 1776.

MY DEAR FRIEND,

I am much pleased with the appointment of the Congress of the two engineers, and not less so with establishment; but at the same time am a good deal dissatisfied by an omission of the provincial Congress of Virginia in not having mentioned a company of artillery which they had already raised, and at the head of which a Captain Innis was placed; you perhaps know him, he was formerly usher of the German school here, is a man of extraordinary virtue, good sense and knowledge; the thought of discharging such men is extremely disagreeable. I hope some means may be devised of providing for him in a manner adequate to his merit. If a commissary of ordnance, is to be an established office, it would suit him, there is, I understand, to be, likewise, a commissary of musters, I would beg leave to recommend a M^r Archer, who has a most unexceptionable character, and lost his all, his household goods and slaves, in the destruction of Norfolk. These sufferers have certainly, (when qualified for the discharge of their duty) the first and most solid claim to the favour of the Congress. As I can have no jobs in view, as I have no predilections or connexions, I shall make no scruples of appointing to act, and entreating the Congress to confirm my appointments. I have myself no doubt, that the first attempt of the tyrant's mercenaries will be on Virginia. My opinion of your troops and officers, is, thank God, so good, as to put me entirely at my ease with respect to action, corps to corps. I only wish your provincial Congress and committee of safety, had taken some precautions for the security of your great navigable rivers against their piratical inundations; and in my opinion, nothing could be easier effected. Perhaps I may differ from the generality of sea-faring people; but as they have their

prejudices, and are like other professions, a *servum pecus*, I shall not give up my opinion. I would then propose fitting your rivers with twelve or eighteen oared boats, mounting a six-pounder at the head of each, fortifying the sides with occasional mantlets, musket proof, and manning them with stout volunteers, whose principle should be boarding. I am mistaken, when we are sufficiently provided with fleets of this kind, if a single tender will show itself in your rivers. I have already for experiment sake, sent out one boat, armed and principled in this manner, on a cruise, and expect with impatience the issue. The men have their cutlasses and pistols, and seemed to taste the project. I shall order twenty for each great river; the expense is trifling, and the spirit, the very principle of coming to close quarters, will inspire naturally the people with confidence in their own force and valour. Another great point I seem in a fair way of obtaining; the conciliating your soldiers to the use of spears; we had a battalion out this day; two companies of the strongest and tallest, were armed with this weapon; they were formed something like the Triarii of the Romans, in the rear of the battalions, occasionally either to throw themselves into the intervals of the line, or to form a third, second, or front rank in close order. It has a fine effect to the eye, and the men in general seemed convinced of the utility of the arrangement. In two days, I shall visit Norfolk, Suffolk and Kemp's landing.

Your's, affectionately,

CHARLES LEE.

TO THE COMMITTEE OF SECRECY OF THE PROVINCE OF
NORTH CAROLINA.

Williamsburg, April 13th 1776.

GENTLEMEN,

I had yesterday the honor of your's of the ninth; the zeal, ardor and public spirit of your Province, not

only reflect great honor on its own Character, but there is reason to think that your Example will inspire others with that vigor and decision which are alone wanting to insure victory. Your Resolution to raise a body of light horse is in my opinion most judicious, it is a species of troops without which an army is a defective and lame machine. I have proposed and urged it in this province. They talk of adopting the measure, but nothing is as yet done. I could wish, gentlemen, that your horses may be of the strongest sort, so that on pressing occasions a Dragoon may be able to carry a foot soldier behind him: I am sorry you are so deficient in powder. I have wrote to the Congress on the occasion, and hope to be able soon to supply you: as to arms, I will believe it will be impossible to procure 'em, unless you have on the frontiers a sufficient number of Rifles; for my own part, I like 'em, even better for the Battalions than Musquets—particularly if you can conciliate your men to the use of spears. I never had in my life any opinion of bayonets; my opinion may appear singular, but it is certain they never have been used tho' we hear so frequently of attacking with bayonets; for these reasons, I would propose that you should collect all the Rifles possible, after having regulated the necessary busyness of this Province, I shall pay my respects in person to your Committee, and thank 'em viva voce for the good opinion they are pleased to express of me, & I am Gentlemen

Your most ob^t hb^{le} Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

P. S. It is of the utmost importance that you provide a sufficient number of proper boats, for the transportation of Troops over your respective Rivers.

FROM COLONEL MERCER.

Fredericksburg, 14th April, 1776.

SIR,

I shall prepare in obedience to your orders of the 10th Instant, to resume my former station at Alexandria. That place from the easy access of Ships of Force to it, its containing a considerable quantity of public stores, & fitting out the principal Marine of Virginia appears to me to be the principal object, we are to attend to in defence of the frontier along the Potowmack River. Guards will also be necessary on Acquaquan, Quantico, & Patowmack Creeks. I should judge that my Regiment cannot occupy further along that Frontier without dividing us too much. Your Instructions however on this head will give me pleasure. Not having yet procured a Copy of all the Resolves of Congress I am at a loss as to many Regulations of the Army, particularly as to the pay & Rations of the Officers, the Forage allowed them, & the Hospital Stores. Also whether any allowance is made to the men on Extra Duty, and how far a Colonel of a Regiment is permitted to provide what appears to him necessary for the Service. Three Companies of my Regiment are on duty at Hampton. I hope it will be agreeable to you to order them to join us.

Some intrenching Tools purchased from Mr. Hunter for the Public, will be sent off to morrow for Williamsburg together with some Medicines belonging to the Troops. We remain very ill provided with arms: the two Companies from Fauquier have not yet joined the Regiment.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your most Obedient Servant

HUGH MERCER.

Major General Lee.

FROM GENERAL ROBERT HOWE.

Halifax, 14th April, 1776.

SIR,

I have the honour to transmit you a Resolution of the Convention of this Colony by which you will find they have determin'd to raise four new battalions of regulars, the Resolution does not contain all the officers appointed, as several others have been added by a subsequent resolve. They intend putting the militia upon as respectable a footing as possible, in short they seem to wish to prepare for those events which probably are very near at hand. Pity it is they had not been as much in earnest earlier, and had not relied almost against possibility upon that reconciliation which, had it been obtained would only have been a milder degree of slavery. I receiv'd some letters last night from Cape Fear, things remain pretty near in the same situation as when last I wrote you. Some deserters inform that the enemy are momentarily collecting considerable Reinforcements, and that they only wait the arrival of some bombs to set Wilmington on fire. I have been flattered by report with your arrival at this place every day for several days past, and even now I am told that you are certainly to be here to-morrow or the next day. I know nothing that would give more pleasure or that I more sincerely wish. I have not been able to get from this place as yet—indeed I found my presence so necessary here, and so much desir'd by the Convention, that I could not leave it, and anxious as I am to get home for a few days to secure the remains of my fortune, I have staid with less reluctance as I hoped to see you, this expectation I do not wholly relinquish even now. I am Sir, with the greatest respect,

Your most ob. hum. Serv^t

ROBERT HOWE.

FROM RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Philadelphia, 15th April, 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I have but a moment to acknowledge your last favor which gave me the pleasure of knowing you were well arrived at Williamsburg. It would seem as if Gen. Howe was yet floating on the Ocean *incertum quo fata ferant*, because the greatest part of his fleet sailed southward from Boston, and because a sloop of war came into N. York and carried Tryon out to sea, to consult we suppose. The riflemen have had a fair engagement with a small man of war for the watering place at N. York, when the former drove the latter off, and have since fortified the spring, so that they must go somewhere else for water. If it be true as reported here that S^r Peter Parker is arrived in Virginia with Troops we must look to you for news in future, and I make no doubt but we shall have good news.

Our old Commodore Hopkins has actually beaten the Glasgow in a fair fight, and Wallace with his Squadron have fled from the Rhode Island station. Capt. Barry in an armed Brig from hence has taken off the Capes of Virg^a and sent her in here, a cutter, with 8 carriage Guns belonging to the Liverpool, with one of that ships Lieutenants commanding her. He fought his tender well, not submitting until he was near sinking.

Farewell my dear friend. May you be healthy, happy, and successful.

RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Gen. Ward has resign'd his command in the Continental Army.

General Lee,

at Head Quarters in Williamsburg, Virg^a.

TO COL. HUGH MERCER.

Williamsburg April 15th 1776.

SIR,

I am extremely obliged to you for your alertness, altho' in this instance it is somewhat unlucky, as you are I suppose by this time informed that you are to remain for the defence of the Northern Neck. I shall not trouble you with any further instructions, as I can add nothing necessary to the former. Mr. Nevill's Beef, Pork, and Flour, will of course be kept at Alexandria for the use of your corps and the Marines. I could wish, Sir, you would send a return to the Adjutant General of the numbers of sailors, Watermen and ship Carpenters whom you have in your Regiment.

I am Sir,

Your most Ob^t h^{ble} Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

To Col^l Hugh Mercer.

TO MAJOR SPOTSWOOD.

Williamsb^g Ap^l 15th 1776.

SIR,

Altho' the articles of War and military ordinances of the Congress, want that precision and fullness that I cou'd wish, it is so subversive of discipline and order to suppose that an officer may be guilty of every military crime, and when he is sentenced by a Court Martial to the acknowledgment of his misdemeanor that he should be able to evade it by a simple Resignation of his Commission, that it is impossible not to approve of your sensible and spirited conduct, wth regard to Lieut. Hughes: in no armies that I am acquainted with or have read of, are the officers more at liberty, than are the private men to quit the service without

the consent of the Sovereign to whom they are engaged; I must repeat therefore that I highly approve of your conduct; as I shall in a very few days be down with you at Suffolk, when I will direct the mode of proceeding. I must desire that you will continue this Gentleman in arrest 'till my arrival—the idea hatched by some of the Rifle Companies that they are not subject to every duty of soldiers, is really a curious one, more especially, when we consider that more than one half of the Virginian Troops are composed of Riflemen; at this rate, the Musqueteers would have a blessed time of it, to make the system consistent and compleat, the latter ought to black the former's shoes, and wash their shirts: I beg you will communicate this letter to Col^l Mughlenburgh, who certainly very judiciously advised you to proceed no further in this affair, before you had consulted the Major General of the Department; in fact, no Court Martials for the tryal of Officers ought in propriety to be held (and for the future it must be an establish'd Rule) without a warrant from the Major General, or (in his absence from the Province) of the Brigadeer or other Officer Commanding.

I am Sir,

Your most Obedient Servant,

CHARLES LEE

To Major Spotswood,
Suffolk.

FROM JOHN CALVERT.

Holt's Forge, April 15th 1776.

SIR,

Agreeable to your Desire I have been to Cumberland, and taken a view of the Town & Harbour, and from their situation think they may be render'd very secure by erecting a small Battery of eight or ten Guns; as the draft of water will not admit of larger Vessels,

than Sloops of War coming up. I have also enquired of the Inhabitants in the neighbourhood, respecting timber for building the Vessels you were speaking to me about, and am informed that there is a sufficient quantity to be had at the distance of two or three miles, which may be easily brought to Cumberland by water, there is also a sufficient Quantity of Plank to be got at or near this Place, distance about Ten Miles from Cumberland, which may be carried over, likewise iron, and a smith living at the place. And if your Excellency should think proper, do believe it is a very fitting place for establishing a Shipyard, and collecting together materials for building and fitting out vessels. I am told that Ship-Carpenters may be had in Gloucester County, if you should want to set at any work immediately, as those that are in this part of the country are all engaged in the Country's service, and will be sometime. A Person acquainted with these matters might soon make a beginning, and after the vessels that are now building are finished. I imagine as many Carpenters may be had as will be wanting. Your Excellency will be pleased to command me for any further particulars, and am

Your most obedient humble Servant

JOHN CALVERT.

To His Excellency Major General Lee.

To ROBERT MORRIS.

Williamsburg April y^e 16. 1776.

MY DR MORRIS

I dare say you will excuse me tho I cannot well excuse myself in not having sent you a line since my departure from Philadelphia more particularly as I have found time to write to two of your brother senators—but as these two brothers of yours have more immediate relation to my Province I might readily make a plea of

necessity but my Obligations to you are so many that it is really a moral obligation to write to you by every post and opportunity. I am here in a damned whimsical situation as I expected—from the uncertainty of the Enemy's intention, and the nature of the Country being intersected with numerous navigable waters, from the superior advantage they have over us in being wing'd with canvass, from the number of slaves, from there being no one decided capital object to draw their force to a point—I say from all these circumstances I know not where to turn, where to fix myself. I am like a Dog in a dancing school. I may make a very shabby figure without any real demerits. In short I can only act by surmise and I may surmise wrong. I may be in the North, when as Richard the Third says, I should serve my sovereign in the West. God extricate me out of the scrape with honour to myself and health to the Community. The Troops I have seen here are in general very fine men, and compleat in numbers—the Officers I believe are good, but except the Rifflers we are horribly armed however such as we are, I shall make no scruple of offering battle to an equal number of the Enemy and really I believe I shall beat 'em for I can never persuade myself that their Regiments of wretched Recruits are a match for these marksmen, and who tho' not worked up to the highest degree of discipline are certainly soldiers, whereas those we are to combat with have no pretensions to the title. If they carry on a piratical war and can raise an insurrection of Negroes, we must apply for some Battalions to your middle Colonies and indeed I could wish you cou'd spare us three or four immediately, which as Boston is now evacuated I shou'd think very practicable—for the Army which was employed in the blockade of that place, have now their arms at Liberty—They are numerous enough both for the defence of New York and the re-enforcement of Canada. Consequently Pennsylvania is not under the necessity of detaching any part of her force for these two purpose—She may of course give her attention to

Virginia—We have not more than Five thousand Troops—the minute men and Militia have really no arms at all—Seven Battalions are expected to attack us—an infinite number of slaves are to be watched over—I leave you to judge if this force is adequate—besides we may be diverted by a false attack on N. Carolina. We may perhaps march to its defence and in our absence the Enemy who are armed with wings appear in the heart of the Province. I wish my friend you would throw out these things in Congress and prepare 'em for a formal application So much for public matters. I wish you would transmit to M^r Nourse one hundred pounds Virg. Curr. by the first opportunity for the improvement of my farm—He sends most glorious accounts of it—M^r Randolph whom the Congress appointed [deputy muster-master general for the Southern Department] has declined but begs leave to recommend in his place a M^r Yates his relation. Will you mention the affair to Colonel Lee in my name? they say M^r Yates is very capable. Adieu my dr Morris

Yours

C. LEE.

For God's sake why does your Congress continue [hesitating] in this horrible nonsensical manner? Why not at once take the step you must take soon? I consider every day's delay as the loss at least of 100,000 pds. in money, and the blood of an hundred men—What can you mean by it? You will force at last the People to attempt it without you—which must produce a noble anarchy.

TO JOHN PAGE.

Williamsburg, April y^e 16, 1776.

SIR,

The inclosed intercepted letter from Mr. Wormley to the declared Enemies of his country, is such a mani-

festation of his hostile principles and dangerous disposition, that upon the receipt of it, I thought it my duty not to lose a moment in securing his person & Papers—if your Committee had been sitting, I should of course have submitted the affair to the proper judges, but as the members were dispersed, and as the least delay might have defeated the measure, I immediately detached Major Nelson with a sufficient Party of Men to prevent this Traitor (for Traitor is not to harsh a term) from joining his associates. I have no doubt but that the Major has by this time executed his orders, and on this supposition, I entreat the Committee will give their directions what is further to be done. I am much obliged to them for their Readiness to supply the Cont^l Troops with money, and shall make the requisitions in the manner prescribed.

I am Sir, with the greatest respect

Your most obedient humble Serv^t.

CHARLES LEE.

To John Page, Esq.

V. P. of the Committee of Safety.

FROM JOHN PAGE.

Williamsburg, In Committee Ap^l 16 1776.

SIR,

The Committee of Safety have directed me to inform you that the Troops have been paid up to the 28th of February out of our Treasury, & that from that time it was expected they would be paid off by the Continental Paymaster, but that numbers of officers are daily applying to this Committee for their Pay, being unable to procure any from him; the Committee will wth Pleasure issue Warrants to such Persons, and for such sums as you may think necessary to supply the present Exigency of the army. We would wish that such requisitions should be under your Hand to prevent any

disputes or difficulties hereafter with the Continental Paymaster. The Bearer of this will require your application to us, or an order on the Paymaster.

I am Sir,

Your most Obdt. Servant,

JOHN PAGE, V. P.

To Major General Lee.

FROM JOHN PAGE.

Williamsburg, In Committee Ap^l 16th 1776.

SIR,

On Receipt of your's inclosing Mr. Wormley's Intercepted Letter, the Committee immediately took the same under their consideration, & came to the inclosed Resolution.

I have the honor to be Sir,

Your most Obt. Servant,

JOHN PAGE, V. P.

To General Lee.

Resolution inclosed in the foregoing Letter.

In Committee of Safety, at Williamsburg.
April 16th 1776.

On considering the Letter from Major General Lee, inclosing an intercepted Letter of the 4th day of April Inst. from Ralph Wormely, junior, Esquire, to John Grimes, Esq^r and examining Captⁿ William Smith, and Lieut. William Buckner of Gloucester, touching the discovery of the said inclosed Letter. The committee approve the Steps taken by General Lee, and desire that the said M^r Wormley together with such papers as may have been taken, and relate to a discovery of his

inimical Conduct against this Country be brought before this Committee as soon as may be.

JOHN PAGE, V. P.

Attest:

JOHN BECKLEY, *Ass^t. Clk.*

FROM MAJOR WILLIAM NELSON.

Gloucester Court House 16, Ap^l 1776.

SIR,

The success which attended me in the Execution of your Commands respecting Mr. Wormely the younger, has equalled my most sanguine expectation; he is now a Prisoner in his Father's house, which is surrounded by Guards, & his own person carefully and constantly watched by two sentinels chosen from among the Cadets of our Regiment. As there was a certain delicacy in the nature of this expedition, I was very nice in the choice of my detachment, & am sure it will give you pleasure to hear that while the Officers of it acted up to the most rigid line of their duty, they never lost sight of politeness & humanity. All the property of whatever kind, whether belonging to old or young Mr. Wormely, I have secured; their papers also I have locked up together, & the keys are in the care of the Captain, whom I left in command: This I was induc'd to from the impossibility to distinguish either the one or the other, so much are the Fathers & Sons Papers & Property blended. The situation of Mr. Wormley's house is such as makes me imagine that it will be necessary to reinforce the Party now there, if it is intended to stay any time. It stands on the Banks of the River Rappahanock, to the westward is a large navigable Creek within 100 yards of it, & add to this a strong & well grounded suspicion of Mr. Wormley's having a strong party in his Neighborhood, who may perhaps attempt to rescue him.

I hope to receive your further Orders by the Bearer,
& have the honor to be with the utmost respect,

Your most Ob^t humble Servant

WILLIAM NELSON.

General Lee.

FROM COL. HUGH MERCER.

Fredericksburg, 16th April, 1776.

SIR,

As several young Gentlemen of the first Family's in this Colony have engaged in the service as Cadets with a view to preferment I beg leave to request your favorable attention to the enclosed List of Cadets in my Regiment—their names are in the order in which they joined and have done duty.

I can with confidence recommend them as Gentlemen that will do honor to any Corps in the Rank of Commissioned officers. Please to inform me of the Resolves of Congress as to their pay and provisions.

Mr Hunter who is preparing a quantity of entrenching Tools would be glad to know the exact number intended for the Troops.

Our officers and men are greatly in want of their Pay. I hope it is not expected that such public stores as we receive, but have not immediate use for such as woollens for the winter cloathing are to be deducted from our present pay.

I am Sir,

Your most ob^t hum^{ble} Serv^t

HUGH MERCER.

P. S. Mr Richard Graham waits upon you with this—he is desirous of serving the Public in the Commissary Branch—no properer person give me leave to assure you can be found in this quarter of the country.

Major Gen^l Lee.

LIST OF CADETS ENTERED IN COL^O MERCERS REGIMENT.

	Time of Entering.
John Spotswood	1 st January, 1776.
George Gray	20 th
Rob ^t Randolph	26 th
Robert Peyton {	as p Certificate
George Peyton {	as p. do.
Benjn Grymes, Jun ^r . . .	10 th Febr'y.
James Muroc	12 th
Thomas Hungerford . . .	20 th
Theodorick Fitzhugh . .	26 th
David Ross	22. March.
William Robison	6 th April
William Brintt, Jun . .	7 th
Robert Baylor	8 th
Charles Reed	15 th

HUGH MERCER
Col^o.

FROM JOHN PAGE.

Williamsburg, April 17th 1776.

SIR,

The Committee of Safety have considered your favor of this date, and are of opinion that if any of Mr. Wormley's Papers are already taken, that they ought wholly to be sent up here unexamined: but if none have been taken, they decline examining any, the Intercepted Letter being in their opinion very sufficient to discover him an enemy to America, and a dangerous foe to his country. The Committee are obliged by the intelligence you communicated, and return them under cover, and enclose for your perusal, some papers just received by return of the Express lately sent to North Carolina.

For and by order of the Committee

I am with great Respect, Sir, &c.

General Lee.

JN^O PAGE, V. P.

FROM JAMES HENDRICKS.

Hampton, 18th April, 1776.

PLEASE YOUR EXCELLENCY,

I received yours p. Captn. Innis, before which I had ten of the best of the Cannon remov'd from the fort and safely landed in Town, the remainder I shall be able to get up in a few days. M^r. Hope the Artificer I sent up to you is now engaged in preparing materials for mounting as many of them as are good or as you may think proper. I have gave him as many Carpenters from the soldiery as he thinks necessary to assist him, and on diligent enquiry I have found iron sufficient for the work, and as Hope tells me they can be mounted cheaper and more expeditiously here than at Williamsburg I shall continue working at them until I have your orders to the contrary. I shall be glad to know if my returns are to be made to Head Quarters monthly or oftener—nothing of consequence has happened since I last wrote—our men are in good spirits and healthy, except a disorder called the Mumps generally keeps twenty or thirty of them from duty for a few days.

I am y^r Excellency's most obt. humble Serv^t

JAMES HENDRICKS.

His Excellency Charles Lee, Esq.

Com^r of the Southern District of North Carolina,
Wms.burg.

by Captn. Innis.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Williamsburg, April 19th 1776.

SIR,

The disagreeable uncertainty I have been in (from the circumstance of their being able to fly in their Ships from one spot to another) of the Enemies designs, have kept me at Williamsburg. It is evident

that their original intention was against North Carolina, but the apparently total overthrow of their whole scheme by Colonel Caswell's Victory makes it more probable that they will bend their force to some other quarter, whether to this Province or South Carolina it is impossible to divine. I am myself more inclined to think that this will be their object, as the numerous intersecting navigable waters present them such superior advantages, tho' at the same time I confess myself in great pain for South Carolina; the force in that Province seems alarmingly small. I wish I could afford to detach from hence at least three Battalions, but neither our numbers of men, the state and condition of our arms, nor the vast extent of this Province open to attack, will admit of the thought, if Pennsylvania could spare three or four Battalions for the defence of Virginia, Virginia or North Carolina might detach y^e same number to South Carolina, and as the Army which was employ'd in the blockade of Boston is now set at liberty, I should imagine this force might be afforded us.

We are so extremely deficient in arms that I have been under the necessity of sending an Officer into the back parts of the Country to purchase all the Rifles he can procure for the Continental Service—the arrangement I have made of arming two companies of each Battalion with Spears will render Musquets and Bayonets less necessary—and the ease I find in reconciling the men to this kind of arm is a flattering symptom of their spirit. The price of these Rifles, I am told, will be five pounds each, but as the article of cartouches and Bayonets will be saved, upon the whole, they will not be more if so expensive.

The defence and security of the Capital Rivers with their Creeks are an object of so great importance, that I have thought it necessary to direct as great a number of half gallies as possible to be constructed with the utmost expedition; but as the Carpenters and other Artificers in this country are so lazy a race of mortals that it is in vain to expect any fruits from their labors,

unless there is a coercive power over them, I thought it the surest and safest method to establish or try to establish two Companies of Carpenters on the same terms with those in the Jerseys, the measure is absolutely necessary, & I flatter myself it will prove economy.

The nature of the service here is such, the force not being collected into the one point, but scattered in fragments, that a greater number of subordinate staff Officers are requisite than in the Northern & Eastern Armies. I have therefore taken the liberty, 'till the pleasure of the Congress is further known, to appoint a few who cou'd not be dispens'd with—inclosed is a list of them.

The Committee of Safety, I find, Sir, had not apprized you of their having already raised a Company of Artillery and appointed Officers: Capⁿ Innes who was placed at the head of it, tho' he professes himself utterly ignorant of this particular branch, is a man of great zeal, capacity, and merit, and as there is a vacant majority in the 9th, or Capⁿ Fleming's Regiment, I have ventured to appoint him to act in that station, in hopes that the Congress will confirm his commission.

A body of horse is a sine qua non, in a country circumstanced like this. I take the liberty of enclosing to you an address I published to the young Gentlemen of this Colony on the subject, and wish it may meet with your approbation.

I shall make Mons^r Arundel accountable for the Sixty Dollars, but at the same time beg leave to submit to the consideration of the Congress whether the expenses of his journey should not be allowed; they amount to thirty Dollars: indeed the pay of the Artillery Officers and Engineers is so wretched that I do not see any chance of procuring men fit for the Service on the Terms, and if they are procur'd they cannot possibly subsist unless the expenses of their frequent journeys are paid, for they are obliged from the nature of their Busyness to make more journeys than other

Officers and not in Corps, but singly. I have been obliged to subsist Baron Massenburg, as likewise to furnish Capⁿ Smith who is now at York with money for his Expenses

I am Sir, With the greatest respect
Your most ob^t hum^{ble} Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

Inclosed is an affidavit transmitted from North Carolina with a Resolve of their Provincial Congress I forgot to mention that I advanced at New York to Mons^r Arundel fifteen Dollars to carry him to Philadelphia; but I shall send the Secretary as soon as possible an account of the several sums I have advanced, tomorrow I set out to visit the Post of Suffolk, Kemps Landing, the Great Bridge, &c.

ADDRESS TO THE YOUNG GENTLEMEN OF VIRGINIA.

[*Inclosed in the preceding letter.*]

As an army without Cavalry is, in all countries, a very defective machine, but in this Province circumstanced as it is, it is impossible to carry on the service with any tolerable degree of credit, without a certain proportion of this species of troops, General Lee begs leave to address himself to the young gentlemen of the different counties, entreating that they will form themselves into companies of Light Dragoons, consisting of one Captain, one Lieut. one Cornet, two sergeants, two corporals, and a Trumpet or Horn sounder. As it is intended and hoped that the whole will be composed of gentlemen volunteers, it will not be expected that they should receive any pay; but at the same time, as it is not reasonable that they should put themselves to expense of maintaining their horses, they are to be allowed rations for them as well as for themselves.

Their arms should be a short rifle carbine, a light pike, of eight feet long, and a tomahawk. Gen. Lee is confident if the young gentlemen approve and adopt this scheme they will not only do very great honor to themselves, but very important service to their country.

TO JOHN PAGE.

Williamsburg, April 19th 1776.

SIR,

As I am an entire stranger to the character, integrity and abilities of individuals, in this country, I must request the Gentlemen of the Committee will appoint or recommend positively a proper person as Commissary. He should be a man of activity without doubt, but his integrity is still more important, as he has it in his power, if inclin'd to rob the public most horribly.

I am Sir,

With the greatest respect

Your most obed^t hum^{ble} Servant

CHARLES LEE.

John Page, V. P. of the Committee.

TO DOCTOR ALEXANDER SKINNER.

Smithfield, April 21st 1776.

SIR,

You are upon your arrival at Williamsburg (after having communicated my desire to Brigadier General Lewis) to clear as much of the College for the sick as is necessary: if a part is not sufficient, the whole must be taken; but to put the Gentlemen who at present occupy any of the apartments to as little inconvenience as possible, you are to apprize them four days before you

take possession. Mr. Lindsey who Brigadier Lewis is desired to announce in Public orders as acting Purveyor, is to prepare every thing necessary for their reception and provision.

CHARLES LEE.

To Doctor A. Skinner.

To JOHN PAGE.

Smithfield, April 21st 1776.

SIR,

Capⁿ Smith of the fourth or Colonel Stephens Regiment quartered in this place is compleat in numbers, but totally unarmed. Capⁿ Emanuel Willis has a sufficient number of arms which was allotted by the Provincial Convention to his Company at present almost a non-entity, the greater part of them are enlisted in the Regular service, the Arms are therefore quite thrown away. I have taken the liberty to order Capⁿ Willis to deliver 'em to Captn Smith, which I hope your Board will approve of.

I am Sir, &^c

Your most ob^t Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

John Page, Esq.

As I intended to send up all the sick from Suffolk, I have requested G^l. Lewis to clear the College for a hospital, it is the most commodious place, and I think when so commodious a place is ready to our hands to purchase or rent would be a wanton expense on the Continent. I flatter myself it will be approved of.

FROM THOMAS BURKE.

Halifax, April 22nd, 1776.

SIR,

We think it our duty to inform you, that the body of British Troops, under the command of Cornwallis supposed to consist of three thousand men, are to land at little River about Thirty miles to the South of Cape Fear, from thence to penetrate by the lake Wiggaman, into the interior parts of this Province, expecting a junction with the disaffected Inhabitants, Highlanders, and Regulators, whose residence and influence are principally in that vicinity. The Regulators and Highlanders, notwithstanding our late success against them are by no means subdued, upon the least encouragement of receiving support, from Governor Martin and his expected Friends, We doubt not they will again be in motion: An Intestine Enemy in our bosom, a large body of British Troops expected upon our sea coast, only two Regular Regiments yet embodied for the service of this Colony, Our Militia diffused thro' a large extensive Province, and the great difficulty of drawing them to act together at a point, with a great scarcity of fire arms, are circumstances which induce us to wish for your presence here immediately, and suggest the necessity of your affording us assistance from the Province of Virginia, with all possible expedition, as the Troops from Britain are every hour expected, and in all probability are now off this Coast: Our Militia are scarce recovered from the fatigue of their last Campaign: You may however be assured, that everything may be expected from them within their Abilities, that the warmest attachment to the American Cause & true spirit can inspire. Your presence would give them great confidence, and have a happy influence upon the whole military arrangement of this Colony.

We have the honor to be, with great Respect Sir,
Your most Ob^t Humble Servant.

By Order of the Committee of Secrecy of the Congress of North Carolina.

THOMAS BURKE, Chairman.

FROM THOMAS BURKE.

Halifax, 22nd April, 1776.

SIR,

From the present critical and hazardous situation of this Colony, in expectation of a large body of Troops landing in the Southern parts of it, a great number of disaffected persons ready to move and join Governor Martin, and to relieve their Friends whom we hold as Prisoners in consequence of our late success at Moore's Creek Bridge, we have thought it absolutely necessary to send part of the Prisoners to Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia. We have so much occasion for all our armed men for other purposes as not to be able to spare many to secure our Prisoners, which without a guard will be altogether insufficient to detain the very dangerous men whom at present we have in our power. We send you a list of those intended for the several Provinces, and should you think it proper to make a different disposition of them we have no objection. We are well assured that should they be able again to make their way into the interior settlements of this Country, we have every thing to dread from them, and their personal and family influence. We must therefore request of you to co-operate with our well meant endeavours to aid us in carrying this cautionary step into execution. We propose to send them immediately via Petersbourg to Richmond, and on the road thither we flatter ourselves you will order a Body of Men to conduct them on the way to the places of their intended confinement, and to make such provision as you may think necessary. We think it proper to inform you that we have no field pieces in the Province, and have no means to procure them seasonably, but through your interposition in Virginia.

We are very happy to find that the efforts of our Colony in support of the defence of the common rights of mankind, have been thought by you to merit those sentiments which you so warmly express. We think

every thing may be expected from our people which a generous warmth and active enterprising disposition and an invincible love of liberty can impel men to perform. We are with very great esteem and regard

Sir, Your most Obt. humble Servant.

By Order of the Committee of Secrecy, War,
& Correspondence for the Congress of
North Carolina,
THOMAS BURKE, *Chairman.*

His Excellency Gen^l Lee.

ORDERS TO THE COMMANDERS OF THE SEVERAL BATTALIONS.

Virginia, April 22, 1776.

SIR :

You will please to give orders to the several officers of your regiment not to take any natives of Great Britain, or Ireland, as recruits, unless they have been some time residents in the country, and have wives and children, or unless they can bring a strong and sufficient recommendation. As this, Sir, is a matter of no small importance, a Colonel will be appointed to examine and pass all the fresh recruits; and whoever does not come under this predicament, will be thrown on the officer's hands.

By the General's orders :

THOMAS BULLITT, Dep'y Adjutant General.

FROM RICHARD HENRY LEE.

Philadelphia, 22nd April, 1776.

MY DEAR FRIEND,

I thank you heartily for your obliging favors by this and the last Post, they have made me very happy by

the good opinion you have of our officers and troops. I have no doubt they will verify upon the Enemy, when they come, your opinion of them. It always gave me much pleasure to reflect on your appointment to the Southern Department, well knowing the signal benefit and security that would result to my country therefrom. Your measures are in my opinion extremely wise and well adapted to the ends you have in view. I am sure your water manœuvres will give great security to our rivers and confidence to the people thereon, at the same time that it will distress the enemy by preventing their getting provisions. The idea entertained by some that the battalions were to be stationed here and there to defend against Cutters was very absurd, and if executed would have rendered the Regiments useless for that and for every other purpose, unless we could have prevailed on the enemy to go there only to maraude where the troops were fixed. It was certainly the idea of Congress, and it is so expressed in their resolve, that you should raise a Company of Artillery for Monsr. Arundel, and the Convention or Committee of Safety to appoint the inferior Officers—Capt. Innis's company it was never proposed to affect in any degree by this new raised Company. You will hear more of this hereafter. Your desire is complied with by a Resolve of Congress directing letters to Generals commanding in separate detachments to go post free. The pay of an Engineer under the chief is no more than twenty dollars a month, and as yet no rank is settled. Your letter to Congress concerning shoes and blankets has been considered, and a very good man is ordered to procure and forward immediately to Williamsburg 5000 blankets and as many shoes for the Troops in Virginia. Three tons of powder are likewise ordered. You may expect these ere long. The want of discipline among our Troops in Canada this winter has occasioned some disturbances in that country where a small engagement has actually happened between the country people and a party of our men in which the former were defeated.

We are taking all the means in our power to compose these unhappy differences, and hope it will be effected by our Committee, better discipline, and the large body of troops going thither. We know not yet where the mercenaries from Boston are gone unless it be to Halifax. Manly has taken one of their Transports with two capital Tories and Tory goods imported from G. B. valued at £35,000. sterlg. 2 of their Transports with provisions from England for Boston have been lately taken. You have no doubt heard how Commodore Hopkins has drubbed the Glasgow and would certainly have taken her, if he had not been so heavy with Providence stores—A Bomb Brig & 3 Tenders he did take and carry into N. London—Wallace & his little Squadron have fled from the Rhode Island Station, and left it to our Fleet. The Commodore we expect is now out on another cruise. When Sir you find anything whatever deficient about the troops, a letter from you to Congress thro' the President will be the quickest and surest way to obtain it, as happened the other day when you applied for powder, blankets, and shoes. You ask me why we hesitate in Congress. I'll tell you my friend, because we are heavily clogged with instructions from these shamefully interested Proprietary people, and this will continue until Virg^a sets the example of taking up Government, and sending peremptory Orders to their delegates to pursue the most effectual measures for the Security of America. It is most certain that the people in these Proprietary Colonies will then force the same measure, after which Adieu to Proprietary influence and timid senseless politics. You have enclosed a sensible little pamphlet on government written by Mr John Adams. 'Tis well fitted for the times, shewing that to be easy and necessary, which the unthinking people have supposed to be unnecessary and difficult. We have an account in Town that the Court of London has demanded from that of Portugal all the American property in the Portuguese dominions, and 'tis supposed this will be complied with. Every days experience still

confirms the most diabolical wickedness and violence of that execrable Court. I do most heartily wish it were in my power to attend our Convention at their coming Session—But it is impossible to leave this place, and you would think it quite improper if you were here.

Your affectionate friend

RICHARD HENRY LEE.

I am so hurried that I scarcely know what I write.

FROM THE COMMITTEE OF GLOUCESTER.

April 22^d 1776.

SIR,

It is with concern that the Committee of Gloster give you this trouble. They know how full of business your hands are, and, except on an occasion of this sort, wou'd by no means have made an addition to it. The expos'd situation of our County appears to them to merit particular attention: Surrounded almost by a large water, into which a variety of creeks and rivers (perpetually infested with tenders) lead, all of which head in the County); it is inconceivable with what facility our enemies might plunder, unless awed by the apprehension of armed men to oppose them. Our inhabitants for some years past accustomed to farming have their plantations in such condition as cannot fail to allure a set of hungry ravagers. However willing to oppose incursions of this sort, they are too much dispersed & too indifferently furnished with arms & ammunition to act with proper effect. It will at once occur to you of how great importance the possession of so fertile & well cultivated a spot wou'd be to the ministerial robbers. We wou'd not seem to affect a total insolicitude for our own safety; but we assure you, sir, that our concern for the acquisition which our enemies wou'd make by the subduction of the county, wou'd be fully equal to that of our own private sufferings. For

these reasons we request that you will not withdraw the seventh regiment from Gloster. That Regiment properly disposed & assisted on an emergency by the militia will always be sufficient to repel any force that Lord Dunmore can send against us.

Very particular attention will be paid to your letter respecting deserters, & every method taken to apprehend them.

We are Very respectfully, Sir,

Your Obed^t Serv^{ts}

The Chairman & Committee of Gloster

To the Honble Major Gen^l Lee.

W^{ms}burg.

TO COLONEL MUHLENBERG.

Suffolk, April y^e 23rd 1776.

SIR,

You are to march this night to Brickels—leave the entrenching tools under the care of the Commanding Officer of that Post, with directions to fortify as well as he is able, a Post capable of containing three hundred men.

Tomorrow you are to proceed to Portsmouth with all the Waggons; you are to post your party in such an advantageous situation, that no insult from the Enemy can be apprehended. You are to secure Shedden's & Mitchell's effects, and send 'em up immediately. You are to secure the persons of Jarvis, Muter, Mitchel, as well as their effects; Mrs. Grimes with her effects are likewise immediately to be sent up. You are to procure the best intelligence, what men are on board Lord Dunmore's fleet, who have families at Portsmouth, the wives and Children of these men are to be sent up to Suffolk immediately. You are to apprise the rest of

the Inhabitants that they must quit Portsmouth in five Days; that Waggon's shall be allowed for their Beds, Cloaths, and absolute necessary cooking utensils; their Tables, Chairs, and other Cooking Utensils cannot be carried off at the public Expense.

All the Negroes capable of bearing Arms to be secured immediately, & sent up to Suffolk. Mr. Bownas & Companies property is to be collected and brought out of their present dangerous situation.

You are to order any detachment you shall meet with from Colonel Epps's Corps immediately to return to their Command.

CHARLES LEE,
Major General

To Colonel Muhlenburg.

TO GENERAL JAMES MOORE.

Suffolk, April y^e 23^d 1776.

SIR,

I am at present occupied in clearing the Country of the Tories, my perplexity with respect to the Enemies real designs is you may easily conceive very considerable—since the overthrow of their plans by Colonel Caswell's victory. I cannot perswade myself that your Province will be their aim, but rather this or South Carolina—I am apt to think that their appearance at Cape Fear is rather a feint; however, I may be mistaken. Indeed I can alone act from surmise—if any further circumstances give you reason to believe that they really intend to make an impression in your Province, I beg you will inform me of it. You will likewise send me a minute detail of your strength and your weakness; in what you are abundant, in what you are deficient. I will myself immediately join you, and

bring with me, what force you require and I can procure.

I am Sir,

Your most obedient humble Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

Brigadier General Moore

p. Express.

TO GENERAL ROBERT HOWE.

Suffolk, April 23rd. 1776.

SIR,

I am at present &c. (as the foregoing to General Moore) I beg you will inform me of it—You will likewise send or bring me (for I have this instant heard you are on your way) a minute detail in what you are abundant, in what you are deficient; if their intentions appear to be really against North Carolina, I shall march without delay, and bring with me what force is required and I can possibly procure. I wish I may fall in with you soon, both for the public service, and my own gratification in making an acquaintance with Mr. Howe.

I am Sir,

Your most Obedient Humble Servt.

CHARLES LEE.

To Brigadier General Howe.

TO GENERAL ANDREW LEWIS.

Suffolk, April y^e 24th 1776

Dⁿ GENERAL,

You will on receipt of this order two hundred men from Williamsbourg to Petersburg, Richmond or further, until they meet the Prisoners now on their march from North Carolina—the Committee will instruct you

how to dispose of them—I must desire likewise, that you will write to Colonel Mercer, to send a body to receive those who are to be sent to Maryland & Pennsylvania: Colonel Mercer must be ordered by you that if any Troops arrive from Pennsylvania, to march down his Regiment to Williamsbourg, and leave a Battalion of the Pennsylvanians, to occupy his present post.

I am D^r General, Yours

CHARLES LEE.

To Brigadier General Lewis.

P. S. The rest of the Pennsylvanians must march towards Hanover County.

I forgot to desire you to replace these two hundred, detached from you, with the same number from Dangerfields; if the Pennsylvanians are very desirous (which will probably be the case) of serving together, Colonel Mercer's may remain where they are, & the whole Pennsylvanians march down.

TO JOHN PAGE.

Suffolk, April 24th 1776.

SIR,

You will perceive by the Express from North Carolina that a number of Prisoners of whom I enclose you a List are on their march for your Frontiers. I have ordered General Lewis to detach from Williamsbourg two hundred men to meet them. You are the best judges whether the places destined for them are proper; will alter 'em, or confine 'em, at your discretion—the want of able Surgeons in your Army is a most serious consideration—I would refer it to the Wisdom of your Board, whether it will not be necessary to add something out of the Provincial purse, to make it worth their while to accept the Continental allowance. I find it much too low at least for this part of the world, and

I dare not propose to Congress an augmentation of their Salary as they would be obliged for the sake of one Province to augment the pay of the whole. I am in so great a haste, that I can only subscribe myself,

Sir, your most obed^t humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

To John Page, Esq, V. P. of the Committee of Safety.

To THOMAS BURKE.

Suffolk, April 24th, 1776.

SIR,

I have just received yours of the 22d and have only time to scribble a line in return for your Favour.

I have ordered two hundred men to march towards your Province to receive the prisoners.

We have not at present men sufficient to be spared from this Province to join your army; but I expect soon, some Battalions from Pennsylvania, when a large detachment shall be immediately sent.

We have no field pieces, nor arms, even for the Troops of this Province. I am here occupied for a very few days in a very important busyness—when it is finished I shall set out for Halifax.

Wou'd it not be prudent (if it can be done) to seize the Wives & Children not only of the notoriously disaffected but of all those you suspect? When you have such hostages in your hands, they must be more hellishly disposed than the Devil himself should they stir.

Your proceedings spirit and virtue do you infinite honor in the opinion of all mankind, and in none more than of Sir

Your most ob^t Humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Suffolk, April y^e 24th 1776.

SIR,

As it is now beyond all doubt that it is the intention of the Enemy to attack these Provinces with a very considerable force, and as the extent of the assailable parts is so very great, it must appear that the Troops under my command are inadequate to the service, I must therefore entreat the Congress to detach as many Battalions as possible from Pennsylvania with a large addition of Powder. I wish a good Horse Officer could be found & sent to us; he is much wanted. You will excuse the shortness of my letter, as I am in great haste.

I am Sir, with the greatest Respect

Your most obedient humble Serv^t

CHARLES LEE.

The Hon^{ble} John Hancock

President of the Continental Congress.

P. S. We want medicines (bark in particular) most cruelly.

FROM BRIG^{RS} GEN^L ARMSTRONG AND MOORE, TO THE
PROVINCIAL CONGRESS.

Wilmington, April 24th, 1776.

SIR,

The defenceless situation of this part of the Country is in for want of Cannon, Ammunition, and Men, is truly alarming, for should any considerable body of the enemy arrive before the Militia of the different counties are collected, the consequence we apprehend might prove fatal to the whole province. We think Sir, that more cannon is absolutely necessary (field

pieces at least) and they might be procured from Virginia by writing to General Lee for that purpose, or be cast at Wilcocks's Mines in six weeks could he meet with proper encouragement and assistance from the Public. Within a few days five large ships have been seen off the Coast (one of which has since arrived with troops) which we apprehend to be a part of the Fleet so long expected. As Halifax and the neighbouring Counties abound in good horses and men, are of opinion that 3 or 400 men on horse back sent off immediately might arrive time enough to render this Country a very signal service.

We have thought it our duty to represent the above to that body where you have the honour to preside, and are with great respect

Sir

Your obt. humble Servants

JOHN ARMSTRONG

J. A. MOORE

To the President of the Congress.

North Carolina }
Halifax }

In Congress :
2d May, 1776.

The foregoing contains a true Copy of a Letter received from Gen^l Armstrong & Gen^l Moore.

JAMES GREENE

Jun. Secretary.

FROM JAMES McCLURG.

W^{ms}burg, April [24]th '76

SIR,

In obedience to your commands, by D^r Skinner, I have endeavoured to inform myself of the lowest price, at which reputable surgeons may be engaged in the services of the Army. It seems to be the general

opinion, not only of the faculty but of every person acquainted with our country, that the allowance of Congress to Surgeons is much too frugal, and, unless it can be increased, will leave the lives of our soldiers at the disposal of ignorant pretenders. What are the circumstances which make such a distinction necessary in this colony, those who are acquainted with the state of the different parts of this Continent will easily determine. From the total want of Medical schools, of Hospitals, of the means of prosecuting anatomical enquiries, the number of respectable surgeons in this Colony is extremely small; their education being conducted abroad very expensive: and their emoluments, from the stated fees of practice, and the general unhealthiness of the country proportionably great. I am assured by the Surgeons of Regiments, who are in Town, that unless the Convention makes an addition to their pay that will equal it to ye provision made for them by y^e Ordinance, they shall be under y^e necessity of resigning.

I am with the greatest respect, Sir,

Your most obed^t Servant,

JAS. M^cCLURG.

P.S. The Surgeons on the provincial establishment were allow'd, besides their pay, three rations p. day and forage for a Horse; their mates the same. The pay of y^e Surgeon was 10sh^s—that of the mates 5sh. p. diem. I doubt much if the Army can be supplied with capable men at a lower rate.

His Excellency General Lee, at Suffolk.

FROM EDMUND PENDLETON.

Williamsburg April 25th 1776.

SIR,

Your letter to Mr. Page of the 20th has been considered by the Committee of Safety who much approves

of the arms being used by the regulars rather than lie idle or be even in the hands of minute men, if they were a compleat company; we also on mature consideration have resolved to use the College for an Hospital; however as we wish to continue on terms of the most cordial Friendship with you, Sir, and that no occasions may be given for uneasiness or jealousy between the civil and military powers in this Colony, we feel it an indispensable duty to mention that your quartering Soldiers in the College & ordering it to be prepared for an Hospital without our previous consent which might have been easily obtained, was, in our opinion, an improper step. We presume this proceeded from inattention, and are satisfied you are too good a Citizen to repeat such acts of power which though not intended may produce destructive consequences as it will convey to the people an Idea of our being subjected to an absolute military Government whilst we are straining every nerve in defence of liberty. We would send you an account of the trials of M^r Wormeley & M^r Agnew, but you'll read them at large in the papers.

For & by order of the Committee of Safety,

I am Sir, Your most ob^t hum. Serv^t

EDM^d PENDLETON.

Endorsed: On the Public Service.

The Hon^{ble} Charles Lee, Esquire,

Major General in the Southern District.

FROM GEN. ANDREW LEWIS.

Williamsburg, April 26th 1776.

D^R GENERAL,

Nothing extraordinary has happened since your Departure. The works at James Town will be completed in two days. At Burwell's Ferry the work goes on expeditiously. We have procured three Flats for the Ferries, and sent to Warwick for the fourth. The

tools you ordered are sent off. The College shall be prepared for the reception of the sick. M^r William Lindsey is announced acting Purveyor to the Hospital, and will be making the necessary provision. The few troops at this place improve in Discipline. You will find by the enclosed (if you have leisure enough to read it) the despicable and pitiful condition of the Militia, at and near Hob's Hole. A rifle company from Pennsylvania join'd the 6th Regm^t yesterday, the men likely, the arms good, but badly clothed.

I am, with great Respect

Your most obed^t and very hum. Sert.

AND^w LEWIS,
Brigadier General.

Major General Lee.

P. S. I this moment received the enclosed Report of Cap^t Lilly. Your order on that head shall be strictly complied with. I am &c

A. LEWIS.

Endorsed: On the Service of the United Colonies To, The Honorable Charles Lee, Major General and Commander of the Continental Troops in the Southern District.

p. favor Col^o Jenifer.

PAPERS RELATING TO JOHN GOODRICH, SEN. & CAPT^x
GEORGE BLAIR LATELY TAKEN ON OCCACOCK BAR,
NORTH CAROLINA.

Extract of a Letter from Brigadier Gen^l Howe, to
Major Gen^l Lee, dated 28th April, 1776.

——— M^r Neale will bring to your Camp a most notorious Tory, Mr. Goodrich, taken in a Tender on Occacock Bar, by a brave set of Pilots in open boats: The particulars of his conduct, I presume the Conven-

tion have wrote you, if not, I shall relate to you when I have the honor of seeing you. If Virginia cannot find sufficient circumstances to manage for, I hope he may be remanded to this Colony; he was in Comp^a with Lieut. Wright of the Otter Sloop of War.

Copies of James Buckannon and James Andersons Affidavits.

James Buchannon being sworn on the Holy Evangelists of Almighty God, deposeth and Saith, that about Sunday week past, being on board his Vessel, the Schooner Polly then on ground on the Swatch, they saw a Boat, which he thought was a Pilot Boat, but was afterwards informed by one of the Pilots that it was Captⁿ Goodrich's Boat, and that they were Prisoners, for she was a King's Tender; that when Capt. John Goodrich came up, he ordered this deponent to deliver up his Papers, which he did to the said Goodrich, who told this deponent his Schooner was a lawful prize, and that his master Captain Wright was below, and would be in that night, who would be on board the said Schooner, or on Board whom the said Buchannon must go; that on the same night the Schooner was boarded by an armed boat, belonging to the said Captⁿ Wright, who put a prize master and some hands on board said Schooner, and plundered her of all her live stock, and took a gun & C from this Deponent. That a Sloop belonging to one Lestrangle run up the sound that night, which sloop the said Goodrich saw, and the men on Board said Goodrich were desirous of taking, which Goodrich oppos'd on account of her being an empty vessel, and harassed by the Committees (as the Pilots told him the said Sloop was not allowed to load on account of violating the association) that Captⁿ Wright next day blamed him much for not making a prize of her, supposing her to have Cash on board. That when the said Schooner Polly was on ground on the Swatch, Goodrich desired Captⁿ Wright to discharge Mr. Buchannon & his schooner, as she was old and could

not be got off without much delay, and her Cargo was of little value to them, which Wright positively refused, & swore she should proceed round to Norfolk. And this Deponent further says that Captⁿ John Goodrich hailed a certain Captain Adderly's Vessel, and ordered said Adderly to bring his Papers on board which he did, and delivered them to said John Goodrich, who told him he should deliver them to Captⁿ Wright, who would determine the matter in the morning; and that the said Captⁿ Wright carried the said Adderly over the Bar with him the Tuesday following.

JAMES BUCHANNON.

Sworn in the presence of the said John Goodrich, who acknowledged the same to be the Truth, the 26th April, 1776. Before James Hogan a Justice of the Peace for the County of Halifax in North Carolina.

James Anderson's Affidavit and the above copied one of Ja^s Buchannon with the extract of a Letter from Br^r Howe & further Reports by the Committee of Secrecy, were enclosed to the President of the Committee of Safety here, & for want of time were not copied.

FROM JOHN PAGE.

W^{ms}burg, April y^e 28th 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I received your Letter yesterday, and laid it before the Committee, who approved of the steps you have taken with respect to the arms of the Minute men, but we are pretty much divided in opinion about the propriety of converting the College into Barracks or a Hospital. It is true, it is a commodious building, and there seems to be no one house in town capable of answering that purpose, but as the College is the only

place in the Country where our youth can be tolerably educated it seems highly improper to debar ourselves from that invaluable advantage, and indeed as it is the freehold of the President & Professors, we fear it will look like a violation of private property, and induce an apprehension of military encroachments thereon, as the Building with the Library & Philosophical apparatus is so valuable that should any accident happen by fire, the expence to the Continent would be exceedingly great & might appear unnecessarily incurred. I would therefore recommend it to you Sir to have the sick soldiers lodged in the public Hospital or Madhouse which the Governors of it, have already agreed may be used when absolutely necessary—This building with some others which may be had will easily and commodiously contain all the sick that I hope will require a Hospital. These are my reasons and not the opinion of the Committee.

Mr. Wormeley and his Papers were examined: these were found to contain nothing in the least criminal; and it appearing to the Committee that, although it is evident from his intercepted letter that he was extremely inimical to the American Cause, yet he was not found to have committed any of the offences within the Ordinance establishing a mode of punishment for the enemies of America, and therefore he could not be consigned over to the Court of Commissioners of his County, as Cha^s Neilson was, who did fall within the Ordinance having been on board the Enemy's Fleet & being found returning to it in a vessel under protection of its Tenders, without any pass or permit, and having with him money and provisions. Mr. Wormeley therefore was discharged on giving Bond for his good behaviour, & to appear before the ensuing Convention if required to do so.

Such is the defect of the ordinance that the Committee are obliged under it to discharge Agnew also. Unless the Convention should make some new and stricter regulations with respect to such dangerous

persons, we must labour under infinite disadvantages. We have been so pestered with business that the Com: have not had time to answer your letter. I have scribbled this in a spare minute. You will therefore excuse its defects.

I am Dear Sir, with great Respect & Regard
Your most obedient hum^{ble} Serv^t

JOHN PAGE.

P. S. Col. Scott will deliver you this with a letter I received by the Return of our Express. The Congress resolved that Eden & his [Papers] should be immediately seized—We have not yet heard whether their order was executed or not. The Com: of Baltimore on receipt of our Letters instantly sent three of their body to Annapolis, and were of opinion that their Governour & his Papers ought to be immediately secured; but the Council of Safety thought it sufficient to leave him at large on his parole of honour. I must refer you to Col. Scott for any news which may be in this Town.

J. P.

April 25th Since writing the above the Committee have agreed to an answer to your Letter, in which they acknowledge the Necessity of taking the College for an Hospital. You will excuse my opinion on that head as it proceeded from my partiality to the place of my Education, and from a desire to give you a hint as a friend that the steps you had taken had alarmed many people—but I hope the concurrence of the Committee will remove their apprehensions.

FROM MAJOR JOSIAH PARKER.

SIR

As I discovered by Col^o. Muhlenburgs Orders that only Goodrich, Shedden, and Sprowles' houses of this

Town were to be destroyed, I am convinced you did not know that Jamieson had property in this Town, he has several stores which I think ought to be annihilated. Should you think so I am ready to execute your Orders. I yesterday morning went as near the lines of the entrenchment of the Enemy as I cou'd conveniently get ; in my march there I routed three officers who were looking out (as they were as busily engaged within in fortyfying themselves as they could be). When I first discovered them it was at the distance of four hundred yards across a plain field ; I ordered 4 rifle men to turn round the field to get between them and the breast work ; however, they were not so brisk as I could wish in turning out, and an over anxiety in me ordered the whole to follow me through the field ; a few of them did, but very few with that alacrity that I could have wished. They discovered me at about 200 yards distance, made their advances to the left end of the breast-work, something turn'd one of them back, and he got to the same place. I was not then more than 80 steps from him. I had no gun, but called to him, ordered him to surrender. By this time one man come up desired to know if he might then fire. I forbid him as they were both in full gallop. I ordered him to pursue, which he did, and Capt. Mason was then up with about 8 men. I ordered him to follow with those few. He did, while I pushed down with a few more where I expected the other two. They had got on the entrenchment, and mounted. Just as Capt. Mason got in the field by the breastwork, One of the men fired, and one of the enemy fell ; the few that saw him are convinced he was hit, as they were then not more than 150 yards from their lines, a heavy firing of their field pieces struck up and the Otter gave us a few shot ; tho' astonishing to me not one of us was hurt. I am sorry to tell you that when I meant to return 73 of the men was missing—In the afternoon I walk'd to the Town to take a view of the shipping, entrenchment &c &c While in a Garret I discovered a boat rowing between the ships

and the shore. I found she was within Gun shot, ran to the Centinels, and ordered them to fire, which they did. It caus'd an opposition from the Otter, the Breast-work, and a point where a few of their men turn'd out. Our shot prevailed, and the man leap'd over and swam to us. The Otter then began at our Centries, and the Guard who has come to our assistance fired several balls through the which we were by, but again they did no damage. We got the man, they got the boat which the wind & tide threw out of reach of our shot, and the Otter sent a boat for her. The man prov'd to be one Ballentine, a Tory of the place, who had apply'd to me for a pass to remove his things by water, which I had refused. We a few minutes before took up an old man, who come through the fleet in a Canoe, but we can gain nothing material from him. I discovered that they were very busily employed, in staking out rails at the fordable part of the breastwork, which convinced me that it would be impracticable to accomplish anything material without their getting in confusion, which I thought I could perfect by sending Captain [Par]ker of Brigade with about forty men, to embark [in] boats to set on fire the Vessels in the lower part [of] the fleet, which I found might be accomplished without a discovery. His orders were to begin at 4 o'clock, A. M. which was just before the appearance of day. At the same time I had 150 men at the Enemy's lines, and 150 in town, to begin the fire at $\frac{1}{2}$ past 4. I was much disappointed when I found none of the Vessels on fire. Capt. Parker made a miraculous escape, as the Dunmore in the night, with two Tenders had fallen below the whole, and he with his men and boats were between the Enemy at not 40 steps distance from either. By his oars being well muffled he escap'd, and I found prudence directed me to let their works alone. I shall not rest until I get that fleet in confusion which I think may yet be accomplished. There is much Turpentine at Suffolk. I wish some of it was at Brickell's and I cou'd have the dispo-

sal of it. You will excuse this hint. I shall pester them as much as possible, and shall answer for it, that no intelligence reaches Dunmore from this quarter. Pray excuse my writing thus fully.

I am Your Excellency's most ob^t h^{ble} Serv^t

J. PARKER.

Portsmouth, 28 April, 1776.

FROM LORD DUNMORE TO THE COMMANDING OFFICER AT
PORTSMOUTH.

Ship Dunmore, 1st May, 1776.

SIR,

As it is supposed Mr. Goodrich, Mr. Blair, and several other gentlemen employed in his Majesty's Service, have been so unfortunate as to fall into the hands of his Majestys Enemies in North Carolina, and as these gentlemen must be distressed for want of cloaths & other Necessaries, I have to request you will inform the Bearer where they are, and if their friends will be permitted to send them such necessaries as they may think they may want.

I am Sir, Your most ob^t humble Servt.

DUNMORE.

The Commanding Officer at Portsmouth.

FROM MAJOR PARKER TO LORD DUNMORE.

MY LORD,

I received yours p. Flag accompanied by Lieut. Wools and Mr. William Goodrich. It gives me pleasure to hear that M^r John Goodrich, M^r George Blair, and others are taken prisoners in North Carolina by our Friends, who never mean'd or intended anything hostile to his majesty of Britain or any of his Servants, until hurried into it by the equitable law of self pre-

servation. As to Mons^{rs} Goodrich & Blair they deserve not favor from the hands of American Sons ; they both chearfully subscribed to the Continental Association, by which means they have stained their names with the epithet of Traitors to the Country which fostered them. However as humanity is our all ruling principle, we are willing that they should be supplied with any cloathing which you may send this afternoon, where M^r Goodrich and M^r Blair are at present I do not know. Indeed if I did, should expect Lord Dunmore, cou'd not wish me to inform him.

I am your Lordships mo. ob^t Servant

J. PARKER.

Camp at Portsmouth, 1st May, 1776.

FROM THE VICE PRESIDENT OF THE NORTH CAROLINA
PROVINCIAL CONGRESS.

Halifax, 2^d May, 1776.

SIR,

The inclosed is a copy of a letter the contents of which are extremely interesting to the Continent.

I have it in command from the Congress to communicate them to you, that you may take such measures as may best conduce to the defence of this Colony. I cannot omit to mention to you that your presence in this Colony would be attended with the most beneficial purposes, and give spirit to our Military operations.

I am Sir,

Your obed^t humble Serv^t

ALLEN JONES,

Vice President.

Major General Lee,

Virginia.

p Brigadier Genl. Howe.

FROM COL. WILLIAM WOODFORD.

Kemp's Landing, 2^a May, 1776.

DEAR GEN^L

I wrote you by Col^o Lawson, since which nothing extraordinary has happen'd. Col^o Mulenburgs party arrived in the rain on Monday, the detachment from Major Parker yesterday, when I made the following disposition of the Troops, which I hope will meet with your approbation. At Ferry Point 37 men, between this and the head of Tanners Creek 70, from Tanners creek to Norfolk 135, from the head of Tanners Creek to the mouth on the other side 100, from the Pleasure House, on Bay side to the Sea Board 100, at North Landing 25, at Newtown 15—A letter just rec^d from Col^o Eppes (who commands the party at the Pleasure House) informs that many slaves had run off; but hope when these different partys come to be subdivided they will effectually put a stop to their escaping. We lost some time in furnishing the men with provisions, for which we were obliged to wait 'till Indian meal could be ground in the Mills, the Commissary being quite out of flour, I have sent a waggon to the Bridge for a load, and have ordered the different party's to endeavour to supply themselves in the Country. The distress of these unfortunate people is hardly to be described, its the most disagreeable service I have ever been engaged in, you were pleased to leave several things to my discretion. I have ventured to give numbers of them passes to remove into the interior parts of N. Carolina, and where they could be best accommodated. I hope in this I have not done wrong, the great number of people, and their inability to move with Expedition, will prolong this business beyond the time you expected it to be done in. I will use every means in my power to forward it, and hope it may be in time to answer the purpose, no more of Col^o Reddicks expected carts are arrived, nor any of the waggons from

Portsmouth, so that we have it not in our power to afford them any assistance in that way. Capt. Westcoat and some other officers in the naval service are come down to recruit seamen, as I have no orders respecting their taking them out of the different Corps, I have desired them to wait a few days 'till I am informed how to act. We get no papers here, nor any news but what is brought by very unintelligible people. M^r Morris or M^r Byrd would be very obliging if they would tell me what was going forward. I shall receive your further commands with pleasure, and am with much respect,

Your Excellency's most ob^t hble Servant,
W^m WOODFORD.

To His Exc^y Maj. Gen. Lee
at Williamsburg
Favored by Capt. Markham.

FROM EDMUND PENDLETON.

Williamsburg, May 2^d 1776.

SIR,

The Committee were not disappointed when they received your polite favour of the 30th as they entertained no doubt when they formerly mentioned the affair of the College, that the mode of your Proceeding, was adopted, on some mistake, and not from any inclination on you Sir, to establish any improper military Power, which the noble part you have taken in this important struggle, must acquit you from all possible suspicion of. We do not however repent of having mentioned the matter to you, as we have done our duty, and given you an opportunity of explaining the transaction so much to your honor and the satisfaction of

the public, if any enquiry should be made relating to it. For and by order of the Commēe of Safety.

I am with great respect Sir,

Your obedient Servant

Major General Lee.

EDM^d PENDLETON.

RESOLVES OF THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY.

In Committee of Safety at Williamsburg.
May 3rd 1776.

Upon a Petition and representation from the Committee of the County of Princess Anne, in behalf of themselves, and the Inhabitants of the said County, setting forth the distresses, and ruin, which must attend them, from the carrying into execution the resolution of this board of the tenth day of April last, for their removal, And praying that the same might be revised and rescinded, or in some measure relaxed. On hearing the Gentlemen appointed to present the said petition, and advised with Major General Lee, and maturely considering the subject, The Committee are of opinion that many inconveniences would arise from carrying the said resolution into Execution, in its fullest latitude, and therefore do resolve, that William Robinson, Thomas Reynolds Walker, Thomas Olds, John Thorowgood, James Henley, Erasmus Haynes, and William Wishart, Gen^{ts} or any four or more of them, do assemble themselves together, and having taken an oath before a magistrate or committee men to do equal and impartial justice, and to keep each other secrets, proceed to make strict enquiry into the temper and former conduct of the Inhabitants of the said County of Princess Anne, and certifie to The Hon: Major General Lee, or the Commanding officer at Suffolk, or its Neighbourhood, which of them have taken an active part on behalf of America, which have remained quiet at home,

without taking an active part on either side, and who have appeared inimical to America, on which Certificate the General or Commanding officer is desired to suffer all such as have been friends or neutrals, to remain at their habitations with their families, but to remove all their live stock, except such as the Commissioners above named shall judge necessary for their immediate subsistence, and that all the Enemies of America in the said County be compelled to remove with their family's and effects, according to the former resolutions. And the said Commissioners are desired to return their whole proceedings to this Committee to be laid before General Convention.

EDM^d PENDLETON. P^r

In Committee of Safety, at Williamsburg,
May 3rd 1776.

On considering a verbal proposition formerly made by Lord Dunmore to this Committee, delivered by Colonel Alexander Gordon for the exchange of prisoners,

Resolved, that that the following proposals for such exchange be sent his Lordship by the Commanding Officer in the neighbourhood of Norfolk, viz. :

Col. Alexander Gordon, and Col. Jacob Elligood, for Col. Anthony Lawson, and Col. Joseph Hutchings.

All other officers of like rank, to be exchanged on equal terms, privates for privates, and if there be not officers on either side, to give for such, on the other, in order to effect a full exchange as may be, that the following rule be observed in such case to give for a Colonel eight privates ; a Lieut. Colonel, seven ; a Major, six ; a Captain, five ; a Lieutenant, four ; an Ensign, three ; a Sergeant, two.

All other non-commissioned officers, to be considered as privates. The prisoners to be exchanged in the

order of their Captivity, without respect of persons. However it is to be understood that no prisoners on either side, be compelled to return, who shall voluntarily desire to remain with the party they are with at present.

EDM^d PENDLETON, P^r

COL. THOMAS ELLIOTT TO BRIG. GEN. LEWIS.

Petersburg, May 3rd 1776.

HON^d SIR,

I arrived in this Town the day before yesterday and received such of the Prisoners as had not made their Escape from the Officer who escorted them from Carolina, the same evening, five of the Prisoners had made their escape from him; a list of them you have enclos'd; as also a list of eight Prisoners that were not enumerated in the list you gave me. I was detained yesterday to get provision, and to give the Prisoners a little respite, as they seemed much fatigued, and am much perplexed in crossing the river to day, as the ferry Boat is very small, and its with difficulty we get a waggon over. I shall proceed with all expedition untill I meet the party from the Northward to receive the prisoners, on the delivery of which I shall make the best way I can to Wmsburg. I have been under the necessity of hiring a waggon to carry the Prisoners baggage as they have a considerable quantity of it. Ten or a dozen of our people have fallen sick since I left Town, which am oblig'd to leave on the way, but have made proper provision for them.

Your mo : obe^t Servant
THO^s ELLIOTT.

To ROBERT MORRIS.

Williamsburg May 3^d 1776.

MY DR MORRIS,

I have just received yours of y^e 23rd and think myself still more obliged to you for making so light of the Obligations you have heaped upon me but I shall trouble you I find by insisting on the topic. So let it go to sleep for the present—the Convention and Committee of Virginia are certainly a most respectable Body. I hope I shall not inadvertently run myself into any dispute with 'em—I am sure I shall not intentionally—but I sincerely thank you for your hints—the force here is really inadequate and I hope you can spare us some Battalions—I cannot see that it will add to the expense of the Continent. I am vexed for my three thousand pounds as I should have liked to cleared off the purchase money of my Berkley estate—when it is time to apply to the Congress to advance a sum sufficient for this purpose, you will advise me. I do not see at present any chance for reunion—delay will therefore only prolong the distresses and Calamities of war—for God's sake declare yourselves at once what you really are and must be—an independent state. I am so hurried that you must excuse the shortness and incoherence of this note.

Adieu Yours most sincerely

CHARLES LEE.

To EDMUND PENDLETON.

Williamsburg May 4th 1776.

SIR,

The Committee will I hope excuse my not having yesterday made a Report to 'em (as I think it my duty) of every transaction which is not merely military, but they were so much employ'd in the Business of the Princess Anne Petition, that I thought it better not to

enter on the subject. As I found that the Inhabitants of Portsmouth had universally taken the Oaths to Lord Dunmore, and as that Town was, I believe justly consider'd as the great channel through which his Lordship receiv'd the most exact and minute intelligence of all our motions and designs, I thought it incumbent on me, and agreeable to the spirit of your instructions to remove the People without exception, for even the Women & Children had learnt the art and practic'd with address the office of Spies—A considerable quantity of very valuable articles were found in the houses of Mess^{rs} Sprowle, Goodrich and Jammeson, such as Molasses, Salt & other things much wanted for the Public—A list of these articles will be made out by the Officer commanding the Party and laid before your Board. As the Town of Portsmouth will afford so convenient shelter and Quarters to refresh the Enemy on a supposition that they may make this part of the World their object, it perhaps be politick to destroy it totally, but the houses of some of the most notorious Traitors I thought absolutely necessary to demolish in hopes of intimidating the Neighbourhood, from trifling any longer, and flying in the face of your ordinances, for it is inconceivable, unless I have been grossly misinform'd, into what barefaced and open intercourse with the enemy they had been encouraged by no examples having been made. Sprowle's, Goodrich's, Jemmison's and Shedden's houses were on this principle destroyed, the last, Shedden, is now a Prisoner at Suffolk accused, and I believe convicted, of having been on board Lord Dunmore's Fleet, since his acquittal by the Committee of Norfolk. As we had undoubted intelligence that the fleet and army of Lord Dunmore were amply and regularly supplied with provisions and refreshments of every kind from that tract of country lying between the Southern and Eastern Branches, as well as from Tanners Creek, notwithstanding the positive ordinances level'd against this species of treason—and as from a habit of any sort of action, be it ever so heinous, he who

commits it infallibly in the end persuades himself there is no crime in it at all, so these Worthies not only every day openly & constantly carried on this dangerous commerce, but it is said justified it in their conversation; it therefore, Sir, in my opinion, as well as of the officers, & the Committee of Gentⁿ from Suffolk, became indispensably necessary to take some vigorous step on the spot which might intimidate the whole knot of these miscreants from their pernicious traffick—a Mr. Hopkins infamous for his Principles & conduct, & who has a son, now a Soldier in Dunmore's Army, was fortunately the first man detected: he was seized in his return from the Fleet. He prevaricated and perjured himself very handsomely on the occasion, but at length fact was proved, & he confess'd—the sentiments of the Committee and other officers concurring with my own—we determin'd after having seiz'd his furniture to set his house on fire in his Presence—this step was not quite consistent with the regular mode of proceeding, but there are occasions when the necessity will excuse deviations, and this I hope will appear to the Committee to be one of these occasions—I must here, Gentlemen, beg leave to repeat my assurances, that if ever in my military capacity, I should fall into any measure, which is more properly within the Province of the Civil, it will entirely proceed from mistake or inadvertency, never from design, and upon these occasions, so far from being offended by the admonition or even reprimand of your Committee, I shall think myself obliged to them. I am Sir, with the greatest respect, Your most obed^t humble Servant,

CHARLES LEE.

To Edmund Pendleton,
President of the Committee of Safety.

TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

Williamsburgh, May 4th 1776.

DEAR GENERAL:

I am just returned from Suffolk, and the posts below, and the post is just going out, so that this must

rather be considered as an apology for not writing than as a letter. In a few days I shall set out for Carolina, but before I set out shall send you a full description of our state and situation. We want arms, medicines, and blankets, most cruelly; indeed, we want some battalions. I wish, dear General, you would prevail on the Congress to increase the pay of our engineers—it is too wretched; no men qualified for the business will serve on the terms.—Enclosed is an uncouth return of our force. Adieu, dear General,

Yours respectfully and affectionately,
CHARLES LEE.

FROM EDMUND PENDLETON.

Williamsburg, May 5th 1776.

SIR,

I had the Honor of laying your obliging favor of the 4th before the Committee of Safety, who are perfectly satisfied of your intention not to incroach on the civil authority, but to confine your operations to the proper line of military duty of which you are so good a judge. On our parts we beg leave to assure you Sir, we shall always be ready, to give you every necessary assistance in our power for accomplishing the great purpose we all have in view.

When we reflect on the several reasons by you assigned for your proceedings at Portsmouth, we much approve of the whole of your conduct to those people. It being one of the inevitable consequences of this kind of war, that legal modes of enquiry must yield to necessity, and what the public safety seems to require, should be immediately done, even tho' some injury may arise to innocent individuals, to whom the Community may render compensation when tranquility is restored; on this last consideration, we request you will give directions to retain the Molasses, Salt and other articles for the use of the public, and that in the Inventory thereof

to be returned each Individual's property may be distinguished as far as possible, That if in any future period, they can satisfy the Legislature of their innocence (which however improbable is yet possible) the quantum of their loss may be ascertained.

We are pleased that you confined the conflagration at present to the houses of a few of the most notorious offenders; since the reasons you urge appear forcible for the destruction of the whole. It may give more general satisfaction, to have the subject first discussed by the Representatives of the people, to whom in their approaching Session we will communicate your favor and transmit you their Resolution thereupon.

We are much obliged by the intelligence sent us, respecting that Arch-Traitor, old Goodrich, who is so notorious an offender, that we suppose there will be no difficulty in his Conviction.

We shall always have pleasure in keeping up a free and friendly correspondence with you, and are with great respect, Sir, Your most obedient Servants,

(For the Committee)

EDM^d PENDLETON, Pr.

Major General Lee.

FROM JAMES HENDRICKS.

Hampton, 6th May, 1776.

Please your Excellency,

A few days ago the Liverpool Frigate with two merchant Brigs set sail (as I have since learn'd) for Delaware River in order to give the Roe-Buck their assistance in getting off some Flatts where she is grounded in nine feet of water, somewhere about the mouth of the Brandywine. This is told us by a Captⁿ Rysom who is now on shore on his Parole. I must confess I don't much like these people coming on their Parole so often, as I make no doubt but many of them are as fond of carrying Intelligence as bringing any,

three or four days ago the sloop Nautilus of Eighteen Guns came up, and now lays in the road in the Liverpool's station, a glorious opportunity for our fleet if they now were here. I have prepared Materials for seven or eight of the cannon at this place, and would be able to mount some of them Immediately, but think it not prudent untill they are Clean'd & tryed, and as we have not powder enough here for that purpose I presume you'll think it necessary to order a Sufficient quantity down with a proper person to make the trial—our men all healthy, rugged, & in good spirits.

I am y^r Excellency's most obt. hble. Serv^t.

JAMES HENDRICKS.

His Excellency Charles Lee, Esq.

Comānder of the Southern Dist. of North America,
W^{ms}Burg. p. Lieut Peyton.

TO DANIEL OF S^r THO^s JENIFER.

Williamsburg, May the 6th 1776.

DEAR SIR,

I find that I am extremely censur'd, not only by your Board, but by a multitude of others for my letter to Mr. Purviance, with respect to the seizure of Mr. Eden's Person and Papers, but I really think, when the circumstances are explained, that the censure will appear unjust, and that I was neither violent, assuming, nor precipitate. When the Secretary of State's Letter to your Governor was put into my hands, I naturally concluded that could we possess ourselves of all Mr. Eden's Papers, the whole machinations of the Ministry might be discovered; that this discovery might enable us to prevent their effects, and perhaps defeat the whole plan—the possession of these Papers cou'd not be hoped for, without previously securing his Person, and to accomplish the utmost secrecy & expedition were necessary. Now, Sir, as I imagined you had no Troops at Annapolis to execute the purpose (but in this I find I was mis-

taken) and as I knew there were Troops in readiness at Baltimore, and as there was no Continental General, or other Officer in Maryland, Mr. Purviance Chairman of the Committee on the spot, where I had conceived Troops alone to be stationed, occurred to me as the only person to whom I could with propriety and effect make application: had I known, Sir, that a Regiment or any Troops were stationed at Annapolis, I should undoubtedly, Sir, have address'd myself to you as President of the Council of Safety.

It is said, Sir, that Maryland was out of the district of my command, that consequently to intrude myself into the business, and concerns of that province, was assuming and arrogant: I really conceive, Sir, that when the safety, or very being of the whole community appears at stake, the part I have acted in this affair cannot with justice be esteem'd arrogance: I did not presume authoritatively to order, but as one servant of the Public earnestly to entreat, & conjure another servant who alone appear'd to me, to have the means in his hands to take a certain step of the last importance to the public cause; I must repeat, Sir, that my reason for addressing myself to Mr. Purviance at Baltimore, proceeded entirely from my ignorance of there being any Troops at Annapolis, and not (as I have been told has been thrown out) from any diffidence in your virtue and decision—I suppose the Committee of Safety here view'd it in the same light, for I read my letter to them & it was approved of.

In times like these, Sir, I conceive, that when we have received sufficient evidence of traitorous designs, and the immediate seizure of the traitor, may probably lead to the most momentous discovery; that the utmost secrecy is necessary to the securing his person; it is the duty of every good citizen, not to delay a single moment, if a single moment's delay may prevent the securing such traitor & his Papers when of the utmost consequence to the community. I thought it my duty to proceed in this manner lately, in the case of Mr.

Wormley—immediately I found he carried on a correspondence with the enemy. I gave orders for the seizure of his Person & Papers, & then referr'd him to the proper tribunal, the Committee of Safety: the measure so far from giving umbrage or disgust met with their unanims approbation, & I am much mistaken if in these cases it is proscribed, & Councils are previously to be held to the seizure of a Traitor, if every Traitor does not escape out of your hands. I must now, Sir, conclude with assuring you, & the Hon^{ble} Board over whom you preside, that if they think I harbour a wish to extend the military authority or of trespassing on the Civil, they do me the most cruel injustice. They cannot be more jealous than I am myself; altho' I was bred in the army, I thank God, the spirit of the citizen has been always predominant, and I solemnly declare that if I thought it possible that I should ever be intoxicated with military command, I wou'd now whilst I retain my senses, beg leave to divest myself of my present office and serve as a Volunteer in the glorious cause, in which I have embarked my person, fortune, & reputation. As to the mode I have pursued in this affair, I hope I have sufficiently explained that whatever appear'd to you irregular or offensive in it, must be attributed entirely to a mistake for which I am heartily concerned as it has prejudiced me in the opinions of men whose esteem I am most ambitious of obtaining. I am Sir,

Your most ob^t humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

Dan^l St^e Thomas Jenifer, Esq.

President of the Council of Safety of Maryland.

FROM WILLIAM PALFREY.

New York, 6th May, 1776.

MY DEAR GENERAL,

If apologies would make any atonement for my long neglect of you, I could fill this and another sheet with

a list of the many engagements which have hitherto prevented my paying you that respect which my duty as well as my inclination exacts from me. Ever since I left you have I been kept so tightly at it from morning 'till night that I have scarce had time to satisfy the cravings of Nature, which is rather hard upon one, who, you well know, is so often called upon by that insatiable Dame.

The Public papers have doubtless announc'd to you that I have retir'd from delivering of Messages & writing of orders, to thrumming of pounds, shillings and pence in the character of a Pay Master General; by this agreeable transition I touch a cool hundred dollars per Month, and put it out of the power of any one to say—

“for him the Washerwoman toils in vain,
for him in vain the Tailor sits cross legg'd.”

I arriv'd at Boston just time enough to be present at the operations carrying on for an assault of the Town; the Bombardment for two nights was very severe. The Enemy as you have heard, did not think proper to continue in the Town. I had the pleasure of being the first person from our Army who enter'd it.

During the little time I was at Cambridge I had no leisure to attend to your domestic matters, but with the advice of General Gates committed them to the care of Mr Frazer who sold the wine, and some other things and paid the small debts. Mrs Smith was gone—having found her husband (or rather he found her) after seven years absence. They now live together in the height of conjugal happiness at Newbury.

Ten Regiments have been sent from hence to Canada. General Thompson went with the first Brigade, General Sullivan with the last. General Ward has resigned, & the Congress have accepted his resignation—You are now the second in Command in America—General Gates tells me there will be upwards of thirteen

thousand men in Canada when these last Regiments arrive.

I am very sorry to inform you that before we left Cambridge your mare met with an accident by running a nail in her foot, by which she was so much hurt that for some time her life was despair'd of. M^r Bayler took the utmost care of her while he stay'd, & when he came away left her with M^r Hastings who has since wrote him word she is better.

Coll^o Read is expected in Town every Moment to resume his office of Secretary, his Salary is increas'd to 100 dollars ₤ month, and he is allow'd two assistants. The General's Aid de Camps now receive forty dollars ₤ month.

I was last week at Philadelphia to receive my Commission & qualify myself for office—Sorry that I am to find that a “damned Aristocracy” too much prevails there which augurs no good to the common cause. The Dependants, as they are now call'd, carried the Election for the City against all but George Clymer, who is plump for Independence.

The N. Yorkers seem determin'd the General shall not act here without their authority, for whenever he takes any step in which they are not consulted—they immediately ratify it by a resolve of their own—and strange to tell! they voted unanimously to stop all further supplies to the Asia and Dutchess of Gordon.

I beg my compliments to Byrd, and acknowledge the receipt of a Letter from him since we parted. His saddle, that I bought of Thompson, turn'd out a damn'd *hard* Bargain. Eustace deliver'd me his sheets which he must charge me what he thinks proper for. I beg your pardon for troubling you with such trifles, but I have not time to write M^r Byrd at present, but shall do it soon. In the meantime shall be glad to hear from him as often as his leisure will permit. I must also request the same favor from you and you may depend in future, I will be a more punctual Correspondent.

That success, Health and happiness may attend you
wherever you go is the sincere wish of

Your most obedient and affectionate Servant

W^m PALFREY.

Frazer is made a Major in Col. Asa Whitcombs
Regiment.

General Lee.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

Williamsburg, May 7th, 1776.

SIR,

I find the part I have acted in the business of Mr. Eden, has given great umbrage to the Council of Maryland. I take the liberty of enclosing to you a copy of my letter to that Board on the occasion, as I hope it will appear to the Congress a full explanation & justification of my conduct. I shall not trouble 'em any more on the subject.

Five Transports with Troops are arrived at Cape Fear. I shall therefore set out on Thursday for Wilmington by the way of Halifax. When we consider, Sir, the vast extent of the vulnerable parts of this country; the numerous navigable intersecting waters, the multitude of slaves, that we have not more than five thousand regulars fit for duty in the Province, that of these five thousand, not more than three are properly arm'd, that to arm them (defectively as they are) the province has been drove to the necessity of disarming the minute men: I say Sir, when these circumstances are consider'd, I shall appear, I hope reasonable in entreating the Congress to spare us (if possible) some Battalions, and of those Battalions which are best armed: if indeed our minute men were properly furnished with musquets and ammunition: if our Rivers were already secured in the manner I propose: I should think myself capable of baffling all their attempts with our present force; but situated as we are, my anxiety

for the common safety obliges me to solicit a reinforcement. A Letter from one of your members, informs me that five thousand blankets, and five thousand pairs of shoes are on the road for the use of this army; they were much wanted; the number is I believe sufficient. We are as I observed before, wretchedly in want of medicines, as well as of a Director to our Hospital. Dr McClurg is a very able man, & universally esteem'd, qualified for the Office: the pay of the Regimental Surgeons established by Congress is so low that it is in this part of y^e World, (where the common Country practice of Surgery is singularly lucrative) impossible to find capable men, who will accept, but I am in hopes that the Convention will make such additions out of the Provincial Purse as to enable us to fill the Commissions with proper & competent Persons; now I am on the subject of pay, Sir, I must beg leave to urge the necessity of considerably increasing that of the Engineers—it is impossible that men qualifi'd for this important office should be prevailed upon to serve on such miserable terms. You have no American Engineers. They must of course be Foreigners, and Foreigners expect in their language, *de quoi manger*, that is something which will enable them to eat and drink. Twenty Dollars p. month will not enable them to eat and drink, and wear linen or indeed any kind of Cloaths, besides it must be consider'd, that these Gentlemen are obliged by the nature of their duty to make more journeys than other officers, that Horses must be purchas'd & Fed, that the expenses of travelling are in these Southern Provinces very high—from these reasons, and many others, the pay of Engineers ought to be (as it is in all other services) greater than that of other Officers. Upon the whole, Sir, I really do not think that they ought or can do with less than forty Dollars p. month & rations at least for their horses—on more moderate terms I am perswaded you cannot procure men equal to the task: as the Corps is distinct, and not numerous, this necessary addition of pay will

be an expense beneath the consideration of the Congress. Col. R. Henry Lee informs me that it was not the intention of the Congress that Capⁿ Innes's company should be reduced to make way for Arundel's, but that they shou'd both be established. I think, Sir, it would be a useless expence. Capⁿ Innes who must I am sure be an excellent Officer in any other department, profess'd himself ignorant in this branch—his officers were equally ignorant, Arundel has got possession of the Company, and by his activity and knowledge, will I am perswaded make 'em fit for service—indeed to establish an Artillery company, Captain subalterns and non commissioned officers, being entirely composed of novices, can answer no end or purpose, it is my opinion therefore, Sir, that instead of these two companies proposed that the addition of thirty or forty men to Capⁿ Arundel's and two subaltern officers will not only be better but that it promises more advantage to the Service. Now I am on the subject of Capⁿ Arundel, I beg leave to remind the Congress of what I mentioned on the subject of his Expenses on the road, there is one circumstance of which, Sir, I could wish to be ascertain'd—is the expense of the defense of these Rivers, (that is the construction of Row Gallies, floating Batteries, &c) to be brought to the account of the Continent or of the Province? I wish to be ascertained on this head, because if it is at the expense of the latter I shall regularly propose to the Convention or Committee of Safety, every scheme which may be attended with expence before it is enter'd upon. If the Quarter Master General or his Deputy's when they dispatch any Teams from Philadelphia with Powder, or other necessaries were to purchase the horses through-out for the Continental use, instead of hiring them, the saving would be considerable; for in this country, the hire is intolerably dear, so great indeed, that I have ventur'd to order a number of teams to be purchas'd.

I have just received a vague return of the forces of North Carolina, of their Powder & Cannon; it does

not appear that they have of effective Regulars properly arm'd more than two thousand, of powder more than two ton and a half, and as to cannon they are almost totally destitute—As the Enemy's advanced Guard, if I may so express myself is actually arrived—I must, I cannot avoid detaching the strongest Battalion we have to their assistance; but I own, I tremble at the same time, at the thoughts of stripping this Province of any part of its inadequate force. I am puzzled how to direct my motions from the uncertainty of the Enemies Plan, but not dispirited, as I am confident that the Congress will afford me every relief in their power, and am not in the least diffident of the courage and zeal of the Men & Officers. I am Sir, with the greatest respect,

Your most ob^t humble Servant

CHARLES LEE.

I have as yet heard nothing of Mr Stabler the Engineer. I ought in fact to have at least half a dozen, for we have a variety of posts to throw up, and there is not a man or officer in the Army, that knows the difference betwixt a Chevaux de Frise, and a Cabbage Garden. I wish the Congress wou'd indulge me with Mr. Smith whom I know to be an able & active man. Massenburg is a treasure: a little hurt in my hand occasions me to write by the Pen of my Secretary.

To the Hon^{ble} John Hancock,
President of the Continental Congress.

PUBLICATION FUND.

NEW-YORK HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

FOUNDED 1804.

THE PUBLICATION FUND.

THE NEW-YORK HISTORICAL SOCIETY has established a fund for the regular publication of its transactions and Collections in American History. Publication is very justly regarded as one of the main instruments of usefulness in such institutions, and the amount and value of what they contribute to the general sum of human knowledge through this agency, as a just criterion of their success.

To effect its object, the Society proposed to issue One Thousand Scrip shares of TWENTY-FIVE DOLLARS each. . Each share is transferable on the books of the Fund, in the hands of the Treasurer, and entitled the holder, his heirs, administrators or assigns, to receive :

- I. INTEREST—Until the Fund was complete, or sufficient, in the opinion of the Trustees, to enable the publications to commence without impairing the principal thereof, interest on the par value of his share or shares at the rate of five per cent. per annum.
- II. PUBLICATIONS—One copy of each and every publication made at the expense of the Fund, amounting to not less than one Octavo Volume of five hundred pages per annum.

The number of copies of these publications is strictly limited to TWELVE HUNDRED and FIFTY—of which the Society receives for corresponding Societies and exchanges for the increase of the Library, TWO HUNDRED and FIFTY copies—but no copies are offered for sale or disposition in any other manner by the Society.

The conditions of subscription included a pledge on the part of the Society that the moneys received should be applied for these purposes, and no other, and be invested solely in stocks of the United States, the City and State of New-York, or on bond and mortgage, and be held forever by the President, Recording Secretary, and Treasurer of the Society, as Trustees (ex-officio) of the Publication Fund.

The first proposals for the establishment of this Fund were issued in 1858. Received with much less interest on the part of the members than was expected, its total amount up to 1865 was so small as to suggest the necessity of abandoning the scheme and returning the amount of subscriptions and interest to the subscribers. An earnest effort, however, in that year brought up the amount to a point which gave the assurance of ultimate and not distant success.

Admonished by the universal change of values, which has taken place within the past few years, and the necessity of increasing the amount of the Fund, the Society determined to terminate the issue of shares at the original price, and to double the price of the remaining shares. Other measures are in view which promise to enhance the value of the shares without failure in the full discharge of every obligation to the shareholders, who will receive all its benefits without any additional contribution to the increased Fund.

Under the authority and direction of the Executive Committee, the series of publications began with the volume for the year 1868.

Interest still due upon any shares to January 1, 1868, will be paid to shareholders on application to the Secretary to the Trustees at the Library of the Society, Second Avenue, corner of Eleventh Street, where the volume for the current year is also ready for distribution.

THOMAS DE WITT,
ANDREW WARNER,
BENJAMIN H. FIELD,
Trustees.

GEORGE H. MOORE,
Secretary to the Trustees.

* * Any person desiring to procure these publications, may purchase a share in the Publication Fund, by enclosing a check or draft for FIFTY DOLLARS, payable to the order of BENJAMIN H. FIELD, Treasurer of the New-York Historical Society, for which the certificate will be immediately transmitted, *with the volumes already published*, as the purchaser may direct.

 Address GEORGE H. MOORE, Librarian of the Historical Society, Second Avenue, corner of Eleventh St., New-York City.

NEW-YORK, *December, 1871*

ORIGINAL SUBSCRIBERS TO THE FUND.

SHARE

1.	JAMES LENOX,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
2.	SAME,	"
3.	SAME,	"
4.	SAME,	"
5.	SAME,	"
6.	SAME,	"
7.	SAME,	"
8.	SAME,	"
9.	SAME,	"
10.	SAME,	"
11.	JOHN B. MOREAU,	"
12.	HENRY T. DROWNE,	"
13.	BENJAMIN H. FIELD,	"
14.	THOMAS W. C. MOORE,	"
15.	GEORGE BANCROFT,	"
16.	WILLIAM CHAUNCEY,	"
17.	CHARLES H. WARD,	"
18.	WILLIAM MENZIES,	"
19.	J. WATTS DE PEYSTER,	"
20.	EDWIN CROSWELL,	"
21.	EDWARD EVERETT,	<i>Boston, Mass.</i>
22.	HOBACE BINNEY,	<i>Phila., Pa.</i>
23.	FREDERIC DE PEYSTER,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
24.	AUGUSTUS SCHELL,	"
25.	ANDREW WARNER,	"
26.	GOVERNEUR M. WILKINS,	"
27.	ERASTUS C. BENEDICT,	"
28.	JAMES SAVAGE,	<i>Boston, Mass.</i>
29.	S. ALOFSEN,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
30.	ALBERT A. MARTIN,	"
31.	WILLIAM B. CAMPBELL,	"
32.	JOHN ALSTYNE,	"
33.	JOHN ARMSTRONG,	"
34.	WM. L. CHAMBERLAIN,	"

SHARE

35.	WILLIAM B. CROSBY,	<i>N. Y. City</i>
36.	HORATIO S. BROWN,	"
37.	JOHN A. HARDENBERGH,	"
38.	WILLIAM P. POWERS,	"
39.	SAMUEL MARSH,	"
40.	WILLIAM H. H. MOORE,	"
41.	C. V. S. ROOSEVELT,	"
42.	ROBERT TOWNSEND,	<i>Albany.</i>
43.	DAVID THOMPSON,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
44.	JAMES STOKES,	"
45.	GEORGE C. PETERS,	"
46.	GEORGE T. TRIMBLE,	"
47.	WILLIAM CURTIS NOYES,	"
48.	THOMAS SUFFERN,	"
49.	RICHARD H. BOWNE,	"
50.	GEORGE H. PURSER,	"
51.	JOHN H. CHAMBERS,	"
52.	GEORGE W. PRATT,	"
53.	HENRY A. HURLBUT,	"
54.	AUGUST BELMONT,	"
55.	GEORGE R. JACKSON,	"
56.	CLEAYTON NEWBOLD,	"
57.	GEORGE BRUCE,	"
58.	F. A. PALMER,	"
59.	JOHN WARD,	"
60.	SAMUEL JAUDON,	"
61.	THOMAS T. STURGES,	"
62.	JOHN REID,	"
63.	GUSTAVUS SWAN,	"
64.	MATTHEW CLARKSON,	"
65.	WILLIAM A. WHITE, Jr.,	"
66.	WM. M. HALSTEAD,	"
67.	THOMAS DE WITT,	"
68.	CHARLES P. KIRKLAND,	"

SHARE

69. H. G. LAWRENCE, *N. Y. City.*
70. EDWARD F. DE LANCEY, "
71. CYRUS CURTISS, "
72. SHEPHERD KNAPP, "
73. EDWARD DEWITT, "
74. D. B. FATERWEATHER, "
75. MARK HOYT, "
76. CHARLES M. CONNOLLY, "
77. CORNELIUS DUBOIS, "
78. L. C. CLARK, "
79. THOMAS LAWRENCE, "
80. DAVID T. VALENTINE, "
81. H'Y RUSSELL DROWNE, "
82. JOHN FOWLER, Jr., "
83. WILLIAM BOWNE, "
84. HENRY T. DROWNE, "
85. NENEHIAH KNIGHT, *Brooklyn.*
86. WILLIAM S. THORNE, *N. Y. City.*
87. ALEX'R McL. AGNEW, "
88. ROBERT C. GOODHUE, "
89. GEORGE F. NESBITT, "
90. JOHN E. WOOL, *Troy.*
91. JOHN P. TREADWELL, *New Milford, Conn.*
92. ISAAC FRYER, *N. Y. City.*
93. CHARLES J. MARTIN, "
94. FRANKLIN F. RANDOLPH, "
95. SAMUEL COULTER, "
96. DAVID VAN NOSTRAND, "
97. ADDISON G. BICKFORD, "
98. JONAS G. DUDLEY, "
99. THEODORUS B. TAYLOR, "
100. WILLIAM SCOTT, "
101. DAVID SLOANE, "
102. JOSEPH G. HARRISON, "
103. SAME, "
104. SAME, "
105. SAME, "
106. EDWARD WALKER, "
107. JOHN C. HEWITT, "
108. CHARLES I. BUSHNELL, "
109. GILES F. BUSHNELL, "
110. JOHN C. CALHOUN, "
111. THOMAS J. LEE, *Boston, Mass.*

SHARE

112. S. WHITNEY PHENIX, *N. Y. City.*
113. SAME, "
114. SAME, "
115. SAME, "
116. SAME, "
117. SAME, "
118. SAME, "
119. SAME, "
120. SAME, "
121. SAME, "
122. SAME, "
123. SAME, "
124. J. B. BRIGHT, *Waltham, Mass.*
125. ROBERT L. STUART, *N. Y. City.*
126. SAME, "
127. ALEXANDER STUART, "
128. SAME, "
129. GEORGE T. JACKSON, "
130. JOHN A. ANDERSON, "
131. CHARLES P. DALY, "
132. EVERT A. DUYCKINCK, "
133. HENRY C. CARTER, "
134. ANDREW J. SMITH, "
135. MATHIAS BLOODGOOD, "
136. J. ROMEYN BRODHEAD, "
137. JNO. A. McALLISTER, *Phila., Pa.*
138. NATH. W. HUNT, *N. Y. City.*
139. THEO. S. PARKER, *Hoboken, N. J.*
140. WILLIAM M. BROWN, *N. Y. City.*
141. AND. BROWN, *Middletown, N. J.*
142. JOSEPH B. VARNUM, *N. Y. City.*
143. CHARLES B. COTTEN, "
144. ALVIN A. ALVORD, "
145. WM. HENRY ARNOUX, "
146. SAME, "
147. SAME, "
148. SAME, "
149. ALBERT SMITH, *New Rochelle.*
150. M. C. MORGAN, *N. Y. City.*
151. S. HOWLAND ROBBINS, "
152. FRANCOIS BACON, "
153. A. SPIERS BROWN, "
154. GEORGE C. COLBURN, "
155. JOHN CALVIN SMITH, *Manlius.*

SHARE

156. W. B. EAGER, JR., *N. Y. City.*
157. ISAAC J. GREENWOOD, "
158. FREDERIC R. FOWLER, "
159. ANTHONY DEY, JR., "
160. SEYMOUR J. STRONG, "
161. EBENEZER J. HYDE, "
162. WILLIAM B. TAYLOR, "
163. FERD. J. DREER, *Phila., Pa.*
164. AUG. TOETDEBERG, *Brooklyn.*
165. CHARLES C. MOREAU, *N. Y. City.*
166. CHARLES H. HART, *Phila., Pa.*
167. HENRY PHILLIPS, JR., "
168. FRANCIS B. HAYES, *Boston, Mass.*
169. T. STAFFORD DROWNE, *Brooklyn.*
170. CORTLANDT DE PEYSTER FIELD,
N. Y. City.
171. JOHN S. CRAIG, *N. Y. City.*
172. CHARLES H. ROGERS, "
173. MAURICE HILGER, "
174. E. A. BENEDIOT, "
175. WILLIAM EVERDELL, "
176. GEO. R. DROWNE, *Boston, Mass.*
177. J. WATTS DE PEYSTER, *N. Y.*
City.
178. JAMES B. ANDREWS, *N. Y. City.*
179. CONSTANT A. ANDREWS, "
180. LORING ANDREWS, JR., "
181. WALTER S. ANDREWS, "
182. CLARENCE ANDREWS, "
183. WILLIAM L. ANDREWS, "
184. SAME, "
185. JOHN ARMSTRONG, "
186. PAUL K. WEIZEL, *B'klyn, N. Y.*
187. JOHN F. MCCOY, *N. Y. City.*
188. JOSEPH B. HOYT, "
189. JAMES BENEDIOT, "
190. J. NELSON TAPPAN, "
191. FRANCIS WIGAND, "
192. C. H. ISHAM, "
193. D. B. FAYERWEATHER, "
194. JOHN A. HARDENBERGH, "
195. J. W. WEIDMEYER, "
196. EDWIN FAXON, *Boston, Mass.*
197. F. A. GALE, *N. Y. City.*

SHARE

198. JOHN CASWELL, *N. Y. City*
199. WILLIAM C. DORNIN, "
200. WILLIAM P. COOLEDGE, "
201. JOHN R. FORD, "
202. ISRAEL CORSE, "
203. DANIEL MORISON, "
204. JOHN BRIDGE, "
205. WILSON G. HUNT, "
206. CHARLES H. SMITH, "
207. JOHN P. CROSBY, "
208. ERASTUS CORNING, *Albany.*
209. SAME, "
210. JAMES B. COLGATE, *N. Y. City*
211. SAMUEL MARSH, "
212. EDWIN PARSONS, "
213. ROBERT J. HUBBARD, "
214. J. WATTS DE PEYSTER, "
215. JAMES A. RAYNOR, "
216. ROBERT J. LIVINGSTON, "
217. JOHN C. BARRON, "
218. HENRY K. BREWER, "
219. JOHN A. NEXSEN, "
220. MARSHALL O. ROBERTS, "
221. WILLIAM N. BLAKEMAN, "
222. HERMAN C. ADAMS, "
223. THOMAS B. GUNNING, "
224. ABRAHAM BOGARDUS, "
225. JOHN E. LAUER, "
226. E. M. CRAWFORD, "
227. JAMES C. HOLDEN, "
228. SAMUEL COLGATE, "
229. WILLIAM B. ROSS, "
230. WILLIAM K. HINMAN, "
231. JOHN W. QUINCY, "
232. JAMES M. BRUCE, "
233. MISS ANNIE MOREAU, "
234. LEWIS HALLOCK, "
235. THE LIBRARY OF THE CITY OF
AMSTERDAM, *Amsterdam,*
Netherlands.
236. MRS. ANNA BOYNTON, *N. Y.*
City.
237. RUFUS D. CASE, *N. Y. City*
238. CYRUS BUTLER, "

SHARE

239. RICHARD S. FIELD, *Princeton, N. J.*
 240. A. O. ZABRISKIE, *Jersey City, N. J.*
 241. MICHAEL LIENAU, *Jersey City, N. J.*
 242. WILLIAM A. WHITEHEAD, *Newark, N. J.*
 243. SIMEON DRAPER, *N. Y. City.*
 244. FREEMAN M. JOSSELYN, *Boston, Mass.*
 245. THEODORE W. RILEY, *N. Y. City.*
 246. JOHN BOYD, JR., "
 247. GEORGE K. SISTARE, "
 248. J. WARREN S. DEY, "
 249. WILLIAM H. BRIDGMAN, "
 250. ANSON PHELPS STOKES, "
 251. WILLIAM C. MARTIN, "
 252. A. ROBERTSON WALSH, "
 253. JOSEPH A. SPRAGUE, "
 254. CHARLES A. PEABODY, "
 255. WILLIAM H. MORRELL, "
 256. JOHN V. L. PRUYN, *Albany, N. Y.*
 257. FREDERICK JAMES DE PEYSTER, *N. Y. City.*
 258. WILLIAM H. MACY, *N. Y. City.*
 259. THOMAS PATON, "
 260. DAVID STEWART, "
 261. DAVID STEWART, JR., "
 262. JOHN E. WILLIAMS, "
 263. JOHN P. TOWNSEND, "
 264. WILLIAM H. MORRELL, "
 265. HOMER MORGAN, "
 266. JOHN ARMSTRONG, "
 267. SAME, "
 268. SAME, "
 269. SAME, "
 270. N. NORRIS HALSTEAD, *Harrison, Hudson Co., N. J.*
 271. WM. O. TALLMADGE, *N. Y. City.*
 272. HOWARD CROSBY, "
 273. MRS. MARY E. BROOKS, "
 274. EDWARD HODGES, "
 275. ROBERT W. RODMAN, "

SHARE

276. JOHN L. RIKER, *N. Y. City.*
 277. WALTER R. T. JONES, "
 278. CLAUDIUS L. MONELL, "
 279. BYAM K. STEVENS, JR., "
 280. FRANCIS MANY, "
 281. HENRY M. TABER, "
 282. T. M. PETERS, "
 283. JOHN B. CORNELL, "
 284. S. ALOFSEN, "
 285. SAME, "
 286. ROBERT B. MINTURN, JR., "
 287. GEORGE TUGNOT, "
 288. RUFUS S. BERGEN, *Green Point.*
 289. BENJ'N W. BONNEY, *N. Y. City.*
 290. BENJ'N W. BONNEY, JR., "
 291. JOHN S. H. FOGG, *Boston, Mass.*
 292. JOHN H. WRIGHT, "
 293. WILLIAM WOOD, *N. Y. City.*
 294. F. G. VAN WOERT, "
 295. ALEX'R T. STEWART, "
 296. JOHN B. CRONIN, "
 297. GEORGE D. MORGAN, "
 298. HOMER TILTON, "
 299. SAMUEL FROST, "
 300. SAME, "
 301. JAMES H. PINKNEY, "
 302. WILLIAM T. PINKNEY, "
 303. CHARLES H. PHILLIPS, "
 304. JAMES EAGER, "
 305. WILLIAM UNDERHILL, "
 306. JOHN D. CLUTE, "
 307. ABRAHAM B. EMBURY, "
 308. CHARLES L. RICHARDS, "
 309. WILLIAM BEARD, "
 310. JAMES H. WELLES, "
 311. JOHN GALLIER, "
 312. CHARLES LE BOUTILLIER, "
 313. THOMAS LE BOUTILLIER, "
 314. JOHN G. LAMBERSON, "
 315. RUSSELL C. ROOT, "
 316. CLARKSON CROLIUS, "
 317. WILLIAM MURPHY, *Chappaqua.*
 318. DANIEL T. WILLETS, *N. Y. City.*
 319. CHARLES GOULD, "

SHARE

320. JOHN B. BARTLETT, *N. Y. City.*
 321. MATHIAS CLARK, "
 322. ROBERT M. ROBERTS, "
 323. JAS. HASBROUCK SAHLER, "
 324. FREDERIC DE PEYSTER, "
 325. SAME, "
 326. SAME, "
 327. JOHN J. LATTING, "
 328. DAVID BUFFUM, "
 329. F. H. PARKER, "
 330. GEORGE W. THOMPSON, "
 331. THOMAS F. YOUNGS, "
 332. OLIVER G. BARTON, "
 333. ABRAM E. CUTTER, *Charlestown, Mass.*
 334. WILLIAM E. LEWIS, *N. Y. City.*
 335. JOHN H. JOHNSTON "
 336. WILLIAM B. CLERKE, "
 337. JOHN C. CONNOR, "
 338. HENRY T. MORGAN, "
 339. ABRAM A. LEGGETT, "
 340. JAMES DAVETT, "
 341. ERASTUS S. BROWN, "
 342. ASHER TAYLOR, "
 343. EDWARD BILL, "
 344. WILLIAM H. TUTHILL, *Tipton, Cedar Co., Iowa.*
 345. HENRY S. TERBELL, *N. Y. City.*
 346. GEORGE W. ABBE, "
 347. SIDNEY MASON, "
 348. CHARLES SHIELDS, "
 349. GEORGE B. DORR, "
 350. GARDINER PIKE, "
 351. JOHN C. BEATTY, "
 352. LORA B. BACON, "
 353. CHARLES H. LUDINGTON, "
 354. JAMES BROWN, "
 355. CHARLES O'CONOR, "
 356. CHARLES B. COLLINS, "
 357. JOHN H. WRIGHT, *Boston, Mass.*
 358. WM. S. CONSTANT, *N. Y. City.*
 359. GEO. W. WALES, *Boston, Mass.*
 360. JOHN L. DEEN, *N. Y. City.*
 361. T. MATLACK CHEESMAN, "

SHARE

362. MAXIMILIAN RADER, *N. Y. City*
 363. J. HOBART HERRICK, "
 364. LOUIS P. GRIFFITH, "
 365. BARROW BENRIMO, "
 366. EDWARD F. DELANCEY, "
 367. SAMUEL L. BREESE, "
 368. D. HENRY HAIGHT, "
 369. JOHN ADRIANCE, "
 370. SAME, "
 371. JOSEPH W. ALSOP, "
 372. HENRY CHAUNCEY, "
 373. FREDERICK CHAUNCEY, "
 374. WILLIAM HABIRSHAW, "
 375. HENRY A. HEISER, "
 376. WILLIAM H. JACKSON, "
 377. ELIJAH T. BROWN, "
 378. HENRY K. BOGERT, "
 379. ADDISON BROWN, "
 380. ERNEST FIEDLER, "
 381. J. WATTS DE PEYSTER, "
 382. WILLIAM REMSEN, "
 383. WALTER M. UNDERHILL, "
 384. SAMUEL W. FRANCOIS, "
 385. GEORGE LIVERMORE, *Cambridge, Mass.*
 386. SAME, "
 387. SAME, "
 388. SAME, "
 389. JOHN F. GRAY, *N. Y. City*
 390. HENRY G. GRIFFEN, "
 391. THOMAS S. BERRY, "
 392. CALVIN DURAND, "
 393. ROBERT B. MINTURN, "
 394. F. A. P. BARNARD, "
 395. WILLIAM BRYCE, "
 396. JAMES BRYCE, "
 397. AUGUSTUS BELKNAP, "
 398. ANDREW WILSON, "
 399. WILLIAM J. VAN DUSER, "
 400. JOHN C. HAVEMEYER, "
 401. JOHN T. AGNEW, "
 402. SAME, "
 403. CHARLES E. BEEBE, "
 404. NATHANIEL W. CHATER, "

SHARE

405. GEORGE O. COLLINS, *N. Y. City.*
 406. WILLIAM H. GOODWIN, "
 407. CHARLES G. HARMER, "
 408. WILLIAM HEGEMAN, "
 409. PETER V. KING, "
 410. GEORGE W. LANE, "
 411. LOUIS F. THERASSON, "
 412. HENRY F. SEWALL, "
 413. MISS ELIZABETH CLARKSON JAY,
 N. Y. City.
 414. WILLIAM E. DODGE, "
 415. WILLIAM E. DODGE, JR., "
 416. GEORGE W. ROBINS, "
 417. JOHN D. LOCKE, "
 418. JOHN MCKESSON, "
 419. RICHARD M. HOE, "
 420. ROBERT HOE, "
 421. PETER S. HOE, "
 422. AUGUSTUS W. PAYNE, "
 423. WILLIAM OOTHOUT, "
 424. EDWARD OOTHOUT, "
 425. EDWARD F. HOPKINS, "
 426. DAVID E. WHEELER, "
 427. JOHN H. SPRAGUE, "
 428. THEODORE VAN NORDEN, "
 429. GEORGE DE HEART GILLESPIE,
 N. Y. City.
 430. BENJAMIN G. ARNOLD, "
 431. CORIDON A. ALVORD, "
 432. SAME, "
 433. SAME, "
 434. SAME, "
 435. J. OTIS WARD, "
 436. JAMES LENOX, "
 437. SAME, "
 438. JABEZ E. MUNSELL, "
 439. ARNOLD O. HAWES, "
 440. JACOB W. FEETER, "
 441. DANIEL SPRING, "
 442. JOHN C. GREEN, "
 443. DAVID L. HOLDEN, "
 444. JOSEPH W. PATTERSON, "
 445. GORDON W. BURNHAM, "
 446. SAMUEL WILDE, JR., "

SHARE

447. WILLIAM B. TAYLOR, JR., *N. Y. City.*
 448. WILLIAM V. BRADY, "
 449. OLIVER HOYT, "
 450. CHARLES W. LECOUR, "
 451. JOHN H. SWIFT, "
 452. HUGH N. CAMP, "
 453. W. WOOLSEY WRIGHT, "
 454. JED FRYR, "
 455. HENRY OWEN, "
 456. WILLIAM A. YOUNG, *Albany,*
 457. JOHN BUCKLEY, JR., *N. Y. City.*
 458. D. RANDOLPH MARTIN, "
 459. SAMUEL L. M. BARLOW, "
 460. E. W. RYERSON, "
 461. SAMUEL SHETHAR, "
 462. GEO. BRINLEY, *Hartford, Conn.*
 463. AUGUSTUS F. SMITH, *N. Y. City.*
 464. WILLIAM H. HURLBUT, "
 465. HENRY A. HURLBUT, "
 466. MRS. SOPHIE H. SCOTT, "
 467. THE N. Y. SOCIETY LIBRARY,
 New York City.
 468. THOMAS K. MARCY, *N. Y. City.*
 469. JAS. Y. SMITH, *Providence, R. I.*
 470. WM. B. BOLLES, *Astoria, N. Y.*
 471. GOUV. MORRIS WILKINS, *New York City.*
 472. JAMES T. FIELDS, *Boston, Mass.*
 473. HORACE P. BIDDLE, *Logansport, Indiana.*
 474. A. L. ROACHE, *Indianapolis, Indiana.*
 475. MISS ELIZA S. QUINCY, *Quincy, Mass.*
 476. ALFRED BROOKES, *N. Y. City.*
 477. HENRY YOUNGS, JR., *Goshen.*
 478. JEREMIAH LODER, "
 479. THOMAS H. ARMSTRONG, "
 480. WILLIAM C. BRYANT, "
 481. MATTHEW P. READ, "
 482. MANNING M. KNAPP, *Hackensack, N. J.*
 483. LOCKWOOD L. DOTY, *Albany.*

SHARE

484. WALTER L. NEWBERRY, *Chicago, Illinois.*
 485. HAMILTON FISH, *New York City.*
 486. WM. B. TOWNE, *Boston, Mass.*
 487. SAME, "
 488. SAME, "
 489. SAME, "
 490. SIDNEY W. DIBBLE, *N. Y. City.*
 491. CHARLES J. SEYMOUR, *Binghamton, N. Y.*
 492. D. A. McKNIGHT, *Kansas City, Mo.*
 493. CHAS. H. HOUSMAN, *N. Y. City.*
 494. JAMES M. CHICHESTER, "
 495. WILLIAM W. GREENE, "
 496. FRANCOIS F. DORR, "
 497. CHARLES W. WHITNEY, "
 498. ROBERT D. HART, "
 499. GEORGE H. MATHEWS, "
 500. THOMAS ADDIS EMMET, "
 501. ANDREW J. SMITH, "
 502. WILLIAM D. MAXWELL, "
 503. CHARLES A. MACY, JR., "
 504. THOMAS W. FIELD, "
 505. CHARLES GORHAM BARNEY, *Richmond, Va.*
 506. BENJ. B. ATTERBURY, *N. Y. City.*
 507. RICHARD W. ROOHE, "
 508. THOMAS H. MORRELL, "
 509. SMITH BARKER, "
 510. EVERARDUS B. WARNER, "
 511. AUGUSTUS T. FRANCOIS, "
 512. WM. A. SLINGERLAND, "
 513. RILEY A. BRICK, "
 514. SAME, "
 515. WALTER M. SMITH, "
 516. HENRY ELSWORTH, "
 517. JOHN HECKER, "
 518. WARREN WARD, "
 519. CHARLES G. JUDSON, "
 520. J. MEREDITH READ, JR., *Albany.*
 521. JOHN H. VAN ANTWERP, "
 522. WM. M. VAN WAGENEN, "
 523. WM. T. RYERSON, *N. Y. City.*

SHARE

524. EDWIN HOYT, *N. Y. City*
 525. JOHN VAN NEST, "
 526. CLINTON GILBERT, "
 527. J. CARSON BREVOORT, *Brooklyn.*
 528. SAME, "
 529. ISAAC D. RUSSELL, *N. Y. City.*
 530. HENRY OOTHOUT, "
 531. ALEXANDER P. IRVIN, "
 532. BERAH PALMER, "
 533. ROBERT SCHELL, "
 534. ALFRED T. ACKERT, *Rhinebeck.*
 535. JOHN H. WATSON, *N. Y. City.*
 536. ABRAHAM BALDWIN, "
 537. EZRA A. HAYT, "
 538. WILLIAM L. LAMBERT, "
 539. CHARLES S. SMITH, "
 540. CHARLES A. MACY, "
 541. SAMUEL RAYNOR, "
 542. LUCIUS TUCKERMAN, "
 543. WILLIAM BETTS, "
 544. WILLIAM K. STRONG, "
 545. JOHN D. JONES, "
 546. SAME, "
 547. THOMAS C. DOREMUS, "
 548. RUDOLPH A. WITTHAUS, JR., *N. Y. City.*
 549. FRED'K W. MACY, *N. Y. City.*
 550. JOSEPH N. IRELAND, "
 551. WILLIAM MONTROSS, "
 552. SAMUEL R. MABBATT, "
 553. JACOB S. WETMORE, "
 554. MARVELLE W. COOPER, "
 555. ABRAHAM M. COZZENS, "
 556. JACOB VAN WAGENEN, "
 557. JOHN H. RIKER, "
 558. WM. ALEXANDER SMITH, "
 559. GEORGE DIXON, JR., "
 560. HAMILTON ODELL, "
 561. CHARLES B. RICHARDSON, "
 562. HORATIO NICHOLS, "
 563. GEORGE T. HALL, "
 564. HENRY A. BURR, "
 565. FRANKLIN H. DELANO, "
 566. JAMES M. DEUEL, "

SHARE

567. RICHARD IRVIN, Jr.,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
568. DUDLEY B. FULLER,	"
569. HENRY A. SMYTHE,	"
570. JOSIAH S. LEVERETT,	"
571. JOHN S. DAVENPORT,	"
572. BRONSON PECK,	"
573. WILLIAM A. ALLEN,	"
574. WILLIAM DOWD,	"
575. DAVID L. BAKER,	"
576. JOHN G. SHEA,	"
577. CLARKSON N. POTTER.	"
578. DAVID D. FIELD,	"
579. WILLIAM H. APPLETON,	"
580. SAMUEL J. TILDEN,	"
581. JAMES W. GERARD.	"
582. TIMOTHY G. CHURCHILL,	"
583. PARKER HANDY,	"
584. NATHANIEL HAYDEN,	"
585. JOHN G. HOLBROOKE,	"
586. ROBERT H. MCCURDY,	"
587. RUSH O. HAWKINS,	"
588. L. M. FERRIS, Jr.,	"
589. THEO. ROOSEVELT,	"
590. J. BUTLER WRIGHT,	"
591. GEORGE PALEN,	"
592. GEORGE GRISWOLD,	"
593. O. D. MUNN,	"
594. FRANK MOORE,	"
595. WILLIAM H. LEE,	"
596. H. P. CROZIER.	"
597. HENRY E. CLARK,	"
598. JACKSON S. SCHULTZ,	"
599. JOHN CARTER BROWN,	<i>Providence, R. I.</i>
600. JOHN CARTER BROWN, 2d,	<i>Providence, R. I.</i>
601. PELEG HALL,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
602. CHARLES L. ANTHONY,	"
603. GEORGE W. HALL,	"
604. J. T. LEAVITT,	"
605. JOSEPH HOWLAND,	<i>Mattewan.</i>
606. JOHN W. MUNRO,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
607. PARKER HANDY,	"
608. SAME,	"

SHARE

609. PARKER HANDY,	<i>N. Y. City</i>
610. GEORGE GRISWOLD,	"
611. WILLARD PARKER,	"
612. ALEX'R W. BRADFORD,	"
613. BENJAMIN L. BENSON,	"
614. EDWARD SCHELL,	"
615. A. B. KELLOGG,	"
616. JOSEPH O. BROWN,	"
617. E. B. OAKLEY,	"
618. NATHANIEL JARVIS, Jr.,	"
619. DAVID S. DUNCOMB,	"
620. AUGUSTUS K. GARDNER,	"
621. L. BAYARD SMITH,	"
622. LOUIS DE V. WILDER,	"
623. WILLIAM E. BIRD,	"
624. FRANKLIN B. HOUGH,	<i>Lowville.</i>
625. THOMAS P. ROWE,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
626. SAMUEL OSGOOD,	"
627. CHARLES A. MEIGS,	"
628. EDWARD H. PURDY,	"
629. JOSEPH F. JOY,	"
630. HEZEKIAH KING,	"
631. HORACE W. FULLER,	"
632. WILLIAM H. POST,	"
633. EDWARD D. BUTLER,	"
634. HENRY B. DAWSON,	<i>Morrisania.</i>
635. ALMON W. GRISWOLD,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
636. S. TOWNSEND CANNON,	"
637. THEODORE M. BARNES,	"
638. JOEL MUNSELL,	<i>Albany.</i>
639. SAME,	"
640. THOMAS A. BISHOP,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
641. SAME,	"
642. NICHOLAS F. PALMER,	"
643. J. L. LEONARD,	<i>Lowville.</i>
644. DAVID C. HALSTEAD,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
645. THOMAS MORTON,	"
646. J. F. SHEAFE,	"
647. HENRY A. BOSTWICK,	"
648. HIRAM D. DATER,	"
649. GEORGE H. WILLIAMS,	"
650. O. W. REYNOLDS,	"
651. SILVANUS J. MACY,	"
652. HENRY J. SOUDDER,	"

SHARE

653. N. W. STUYVESANT CATLIN, *N. Y. City.*
 654. H. TRACY ARNOLD, *N. Y. City.*
 655. BENJAMIN R. WINTHROP, "
 656. SAME, "
 657. BENJ. R. WINTHROP, JR., "
 658. EGERTON L. WINTHROP, *N. Y. City.*
 659. FRANKLIN EDSON, *Albany.*
 660. ROBERT C. MELVAIN, *N. Y. City.*
 661. ARCHIBALD RUSSELL, "
 662. WILLIAM I. PAULDING, *Cold Spring.*
 663. JOHN ROMEYN BRODHEAD, *N. Y. City.*
 664. JOHN L. KENNIN, *N. Y. City.*
 665. JAMES STOKES, JR., "
 666. JOHN A. RUSSELL, "
 667. E. M. WRIGHT, "
 668. EVERARDUS WARNER, "
 669. EVERARDUS B. WARNER, "
 670. JOHN C. HEWITT, "
 671. PETER STRYKER, *Phila., Pa.*
 672. WILSON M. POWELL, *N. Y. City.*
 673. SAMUEL H. BROWN, "
 674. ELLSWORTH ELIOT, "
 675. JOHN T. KLOTS, "
 676. CHARLES H. DUMMER, "
 677. HENRY D. BULKLEY, "
 678. J. K. HAMILTON WILLCOX, "
 679. APPLETON STURGIS, "
 680. WILLIAM T. SALTER, "
 681. WILLIAM ROCKWELL, "
 682. E. H. JANES, "
 683. THOMAS B. NEWBY, "
 684. LOUIS DE V. WILDER, "
 685. SAME, "
 686. SAMUEL COULTER, "
 687. RALPH CLARK, "
 688. THOMAS F. DE VOE, "
 689. JOHN GROSHON, "
 690. S. L. BOARDMAN, *Augusta, Me.*
 691. CHARLES J. FOLSOM, *N. Y. City.*
 692. GEORGE FOLSOM, "

SHARE

693. EVERARDUS WARNER, *N. Y. City.*
 694. GEORGE C. EYLAND, "
 695. C. F. HARDON, "
 696. F. WILEY, "
 697. ALEXANDER WILEY, "
 698. JOHN W. SCOTT, *Astoria.*
 699. EDWARD ANTHONY, *N. Y. City*
 700. CHAUNCEY P. SMITH, *Wolcott.*
 701. H'Y CAMERDEN, JR., *N. Y. City.*
 702. GEORGE BANCROFT, "
 703. ABRAHAM R. WARNER, "
 704. JAMES W. PURDY, *Suffern.*
 705. CHAS. CONGDON, *B'klyn, N. Y.*
 706. LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY, *Brooklyn, N. Y.*
 707. BROOKLYN MERCANTILE LIBRARY ASSOCIATION, *Brooklyn, N. Y.*
 708. NEW BEDFORD FREE LIBRARY, *New Bedford, Mass.*
 709. JOHN DAVID WOLFE, *N. Y. City.*
 710. MISS C. L. WOLFE, "
 711. GEORGE W. COOK, "
 712. JAMES L. WOODWARD, "
 713. WILLIAM FREDERICK POOLE, *Boston, Mass.*
 714. BENJAMIN H. FIELD, *N. Y. City.*
 715. CORTLANDT DE PEYSTER FIELD, *N. Y. City.*
 716. JOHN FITCH, *N. Y. City.*
 717. SAME, "
 718. F. AUGUSTUS WOOD, "
 719. JOHN H. DILLINGHAM, *Haverford College, Pa.*
 720. F. AUGUSTUS WOOD, *N. Y. City*
 721. CHARLES A. PEABODY, "
 722. EDWIN F. COREY, JR., "
 723. JOHN G. LAMBERSON, "
 724. SAME, "
 725. JOHN E. PARSONS, "
 726. GRATZ NATHAN, "
 727. B. F. DE COSTA, "
 728. HENRY C. POTTER, "
 729. HENRY NICOLL, "
 730. GEORGE E. MOORE, "

SHARE			SHARE		
731.	JOHN F. TROW,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>	743.	GEORGE H. MOORE,	<i>N. Y. City.</i>
732.	SAME,	"	744.	SAME,	"
733.	SAME,	"	745.	SAME,	"
734.	SAME,	"	746.	SAME,	"
735.	SAME,	"	747.	SAME,	"
736.	SAME,	"	748.	SAME,	"
737.	SAME,	"	749.	SAME,	"
738.	SAME,	"	750.	SAME,	"
739.	SAME,	"	751.	WILLIAM J. HOPPIN,	"
740.	SAME,	"	752.	JAMES W. BEEKMAN,	"
741.	GEORGE H. MOORE,	"	753.	JOSEPH F. LOUBAT,	"
742.	SAME,	"			

SHAREHOLDERS BY TRANSFERS TO DECEMBER, 1871.

SHARE		SHARE	
41.	JAMES A. ROOSEVELT, <i>N. Y. City.</i>	508.	JOSEPH SABIN, <i>N. Y. City.</i>
111.	J. K. WIGGIN, <i>Boston, Mass.</i>	532.	NATHAN B. WALKER, "
150.	GEORGE H. PEEKE, <i>Jersey City, N. J.</i>	643.	THE TRUSTEES OF THE LOW-VILLE ACADEMY.
167.	JOHN H. THOMPSON, <i>N. Y. City.</i>	670.	WM. P. PRENTICE, <i>N. Y. City.</i>
174.	LUCIE P. BENEDICT, "	684.	EDWARD C. WILDER, "
187.	J. K. WIGGIN, <i>Boston, Mass.</i>	685.	C. V. B. OSTRANDER, "
284.	SAMUEL C. BLACKWELL, <i>Somerville, N. J.</i>	714.	JOHN EVERITT, "
358.	ROBERT S. MILLER, <i>N. Y. City.</i>	716.	JAMES M. HUNT, "
426.	EVERETT P. WHEELER, "	719.	HAVERFORD COLLEGE LIBRARY, <i>Haverford College, Pa.</i>
450.	EUGENE H. LECOUR, "	727.	DAVID G. FRANCIS, <i>N. Y. City.</i>
470.	WILLIAM BOLLES HALSEY, "		

FOR INDEX—SEE SUBSEQUENT VOLUME.

Date Due

All library items are subject to recall at any time.

[illegible]

Brigham Young University

BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY



3 1197 23724 3677

